TRANSLATION OF THE Pali COMMENTARIES
in
CELEBRATION OF THE CENTENARY
of
THE Pali TEXT SOCIETY
1881-1981

Publication No. 2
ELUCIDATION OF THE INTRINSIC MEANING

SO NAMED

THE COMMENTARY ON THE

PETA-STORIES

(Paramatthadīpanī nāma
Petavatthu-aṭṭhakathā)

by

DHAMMAPĀLA

Translated by

UBA KYAW

Edited and Annotated by

PETER MASEFIELD

Published by

THE PALI TEXT SOCIETY, OXFORD

1980
INTRODUCTION

It had been hoped that it would have been possible to include in this work a short introduction discussing such topics as the Buddhist concept of the peta and the (so-called) doctrine of the transfer of merit. Unfortunately this has proved impossible in the time available and will, I hope, be included instead in the translation of the companion volume to the present work – Dhammapāla’s commentary on the Vimānavatthu, or Mansion Stories – now in progress. Here it may simply be noted that the reason why individuals arise as petas is by and large because they neglected to show charity to the almsworthy Sāvakasāṅgha, the new seat of the sacrifice and, in a sense, the new Agni. For just as pouring a sacrificial oblation into Agni, the sacrificial fire, resulted in that offering being transferred, through the medium of Agni, to the world of the devas, so similarly does the placing of food in the Sāvakasāṅgha result in the appearance of that food, or its divine counterpart, in the world beyond for one’s own use after death. Failure to give such alms – or giving alms to those unworthy of them and thus, unlike the Sāvakasāṅgha and Agni, not in communication with the divine plane – results in one arising on the divine plane after death but with no store laid up for one’s sustenance. This plight may however be rectified under certain circumstances by some relative or friend giving alms to the almsworthy and requesting, subsequently, that the divine counterpart produced thereby be assigned for the use of this or that peta. There is in these stories no suggestion of any transfer of merit as such and indeed Dhammapāla on occasion explicitly states that it is not merit that is transferred. On receipt of the assigned divine counterpart of the gift the peta is transformed into a devatā with no suggestion that such a change in status involves rebirth of any kind. Rather we may see the peta and the devatā (who usually possesses a vimāna or mansion) as two aspects of life on the divine plane in the life to come – miserable and happy existences respectively. They both belong to the same world and the assignment of the divine counterpart of a gift simply alleviates the state of suffering to which the peta had hitherto been subject, allowing him henceforth to enjoy the pleasures normally associated with that world.

It may be useful to add a few words introducing the general reader to Dhammapāla’s commentarial style. Each story may be said to fall into three distinct parts: (1) an arisen need, or introductory story, explaining the circumstances in which the verses that follow came to be spoken,
(2) those verses themselves; and (3) a commentary on those verses alone.
In his introduction (PvA 2) Dhammapāla attributes the first two of these
to the Buddha who, when explaining how it was that the verses came to be
spoken, himself repeated the verses concerned. Thus only the third part
forms the commentary proper. The task of the commentary, apart from
clarifying who said which verse, is mainly to explain the meanings of
words occurring in the verses rather than to expound upon the doctrine
supposedly lying behind those verses. It will thus be found that the com-
mentary abounds in what may appear, especially in translation, as a series
of somewhat uninteresting linguistic equivalents whilst remaining relatively
silent on issues of doctrinal importance.

Several features of Dhammapāla’s commentarial style deserve mention:
(1) Pali, unlike English, contains a remarkable variety of grammatically
equivalent and alternative verbal forms in a given tense and from the same
root and it is frequently Dhammapāla’s practice to supply another, and
usually more common, equivalent form. In such cases I have followed the
method adopted by Nāṇamoli in his Minor Readings and Illustrator, thus:
gave: dañja-dattā (alternative grammatical form) (PvA 139 on II 969); similarly you should say: vejjesī=veṇeyāsī (alternative grammatical form)
(PvA 203 on III 67). As an example in English of the first pair of alter-
natives we may compare he spelt=he spelled and of the second he lit=he
lighted.

(2) A similar variety may also be found amongst (a) forms of personal
pronouns and (b) case endings of nouns. Thus for example: I: me=maya
(PvA 15 on I 32) which might be compared with the English thy=your
whilst as an example of alternative case endings we may cite that lotus pond: pokkharāṇī=pokkharāṇīyā (PvA 157 on II 129).

(3) Another feature of Pali that is not altogether shared by English is its
ability to form compounds and it is frequently the task of Dhammapāla
to tell us to which class of compound a given instance belongs. This he
does by resolving it into its uncompounded form which results at the same
time in a demonstration of the internal relationship holding between its
parts. In such cases I have again followed Nāṇamoli, thus: and with fraud
and deceit: nikativāṇcanaṇāya ca=nikatiyāvaṇcanaṇāya ca (resolution of com-
 pound) (PvA 211 on III 95). It will be clear that in nearly every case a
compound required such resolution during its translation into English
since ‘with fraud-deceit’ and the like would make little sense. Sometimes
we even find compounds resolved in an alternative grammatical form:
food and drink: annapāṇamhi=anne ca pāne ca (resolution of compound
in alternative grammatical form) (PvA 25 on I 57).

(4) It is clear that on occasion Dhammapāla was confronted with variant
readings in his manuscripts and is thus obliged to draw our attention to this by stating the alternative in his commentary accompanied, if necessary, by its effect on the meaning of the verse — see e.g. P̄v̄A 103f. on II 717. At other times certain expressions were clearly ambiguous and at P̄v̄A 158 on II 129 Dhammapāla points out that subhe might mean ‘bright’ and thus be descriptive of the grass or alternatively it could be the king’s means of addressing the petf when it would mean ‘My bright one’.

(5) As with other commentators Dhammapāla sometimes offers edifying etymologies of various words such as that of the term arahant at P̄v̄A 7 on I 11 but with little or no linguistic justification as though we might say one were in a state of holiness since he was wholly freed from the nescience of an unbeliever. Where the word involved is of a more mundane nature it is possible on occasion to detect a pun and in such cases it is nearly always impossible to maintain the pun in translation. But we may illustrate the style employed in such places by saying that it is as if he were to say that a garment was a waistcoat because it was made from the waste material left after the coat had been made; or that it was a sarong because it was a sari that had been tied wrong; or indeed that the seat was called a sofa as one can only lean so far before one falls off the edge.

(6) These five features are, however, relatively rare in the commentary as a whole and the normal method followed is for Dhammapāla to quote from each verse lemmas of varying length followed by one or more synonyms, these synonyms themselves often being followed by a further phrase introduced by the word ‘meaning’, thus: sorrow (soko): mourning, torturing the heart, meaning burning inside (P̄v̄A 18 on I 43). If it be found that one or more verses are not commented upon this is usually because they have appeared in a preceding story and received comment there — this is what Dhammapāla means when he frequently ends his commentary with a note to the effect that the rest is just as already given above. At times the method followed is more complex in that having given the lemma to be commented upon Dhammapāla then repeats that same lemma interspersed with a variety of glosses on individual words to the extent that readability may be thought to suffer: those who . . . when a great (ceremony of) honouring the stūpa of the Arahant is in progress (ye ca kho thūpapūjaya vattante arahato mahe): he clarifies his own great loss allegorically saying, ‘You should separate, you should have separated, you should consider as outsiders, therefrom, from that meritorious deed, those persons who, like me, make known the disadvantages of, the faults with, honouring the stūpa when a great (ceremony of) honour with respect to the stūpa of the Arahant, the Perfect Buddha, is in progress’ (P̄v̄A 214 on III 102), the italicised portions being (approximately) the verse itself. It was thought
advisable to adhere as much as possible to the style of the Pali even though this often results in a sentence that might appear cumbersome to someone unfamiliar with the method employed; if, however, the reader bears in mind Dhammapāla’s method he may well, when reading such passages, get more from them than he might had they been recast into more readable English.

(7) Ideally it should be possible to substitute the lemma of the verse with its commentarial gloss and every effort has been made to ensure that this is possible in English if this were so in the case of the original Pali. Thus 11 reads:

And I sport and play and enjoy myself, having nothing to fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come to salute the compassionate sage for the world and the commentary at P V A 77 explains:

I: sāham=sa aham (resolution of compound). Sport (ramāmi): find delight. Play (kālāmi): gratify my senses. Enjoy myself (modāmi): am delighted at the excellence of my enjoyment. Having nothing to fear from any quarter (akutobhayā): I dwell at ease and as I like lacking fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come to salute (bhante vanditaṃ āgatā): I, sir, have come, that is, I have approached, to salute you who are the means of my acquiring this heavenly excellence.

If one then replaces the lemmas of the verse by their respective glosses one arrives at the following:

And I find delight and gratify my senses and am delighted at the excellence of my enjoyment — I dwell at ease and as I like lacking fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come, that is, I have approached, to salute the compassionate sage for the world, you who are the means of my acquiring this heavenly excellence.

In preparing this work the following editions of the text have been utilised:

(1) that in the Roman script edited by E. Hardy for the Pāli Text Society in 1894/1896 (referred to as ‘text’ in the notes);

(2) that in Sinhalese script edited by Sīrī Dhammārāma Tissa Nāyaka Thēra and Māpalagama Chandajōti Thēra and revised by Mahagoda Sīrī Nānissara Thēra and published in Colombo in 1917 as part of the Simon Hēwavitane Bequest (referred to as Se);

(3) that in Burmese script being the Chatthaṅgāyana edition published in Rangoon in 1958 (referred to as Be).

I have throughout modelled the translation on Hardy’s edition since it is this that is most likely to be available to the English reader. Moreover
INTRODUCTION  

Hardy's edition remains valuable, in spite of numerous typographical errors generally corrected in Se and Be, due to the wealth of variant readings that it, unlike the latter, preserves. I very much regret that at the time the new edition of the canonical verses of the text, correcting many of these errors, and prepared by Professor Jayawickrama for the PTS was not available to me.

Thanks are due to K. R. Norman and Professor Richard Gombrich for their able resolution of many troublesome passages, to Lance Cousins who first introduced me to the work, to Dr. L. P. N. Perera who helped me from time to time during his stay in Lancaster, and also to my wife for having patiently assisted me in checking the typescript in the closing stages. Last, but certainly not least, I must express my indebtedness to Miss Horner, whose continued interest was a source of constant encouragement.

Peter Masefield  
1978
# LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>Aṅguttara-Nikāya</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AA</td>
<td>Commentary on A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ap</td>
<td>Apadāna</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asl</td>
<td>Atthasālinī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AV</td>
<td>Atharva Veda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B of Disc</td>
<td>Book of the Discipline</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Be</td>
<td>Burmese edition of Pva</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BHSD</td>
<td>Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit Dictionary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buddhist Psych. Ethics</td>
<td>Buddhist Psychological Ethics</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BvA</td>
<td>Commentary on Buddhavaṣpa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Childers</td>
<td>A Dictionary of the Pali Language</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CPD</td>
<td>Critical Pali Dictionary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Compendium</td>
<td>Compendium of Philosophy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cty</td>
<td>Commentary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>Dīgha-Nikāya</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DA</td>
<td>Commentary on D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dhp</td>
<td>Dhammapada</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DhpA</td>
<td>Commentary on Dhp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DhsA</td>
<td>Commentary on Dhammasaṅgaṇī (Atthasālinī)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DhsB</td>
<td>Stories of the Buddha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DPPN</td>
<td>Dictionary of Pali Proper Names</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dpv</td>
<td>Dīpavaṇīsa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EV</td>
<td>Elders' Verses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Expos</td>
<td>The Expositor (DhsA trans)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gehman</td>
<td>Stories of the Departed (translator of)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GS</td>
<td>The Book of the Gradual Sayings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>It</td>
<td>Itivuttaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>Jātaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jāt</td>
<td>Jātaka (No)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jātaka Stories</td>
<td>Jātaka (trans)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JPTS</td>
<td>Journal of the Pali Text Society</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>KhpA</td>
<td>Khuddakapāṭha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KS</td>
<td>The Book of the Kindred Sayings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Majjhima-Nikāya</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mru</td>
<td>Majjhima-Nikāya (Sutta Nu)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Manu</td>
<td>Mānavaśīrmaśāstra</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M.R.</td>
<td>Mārkapadeya Purāṇa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MBh</td>
<td>Mahābhārata</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mv</td>
<td>Mahāvamsa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mīn</td>
<td>Milindapaṇīka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MLS</td>
<td>Middle Length Sayings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mvst</td>
<td>Mahāvastu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nd¹</td>
<td>Mahāniddesa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nd²</td>
<td>Cullaniddesa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nett</td>
<td>Neeti-pakaraṇa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PED</td>
<td>Pali-English Dictionary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pp</td>
<td>past participle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PTS</td>
<td>Pali Text Society</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pv</td>
<td>Petavattthu (with reference)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Petavattthu ed. Minayeff (without reference)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PvA</td>
<td>Commentary on Pv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RV</td>
<td>Rg Veda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>Saṁyutta-Nikāya</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SA</td>
<td>Commentary on S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SBE</td>
<td>Sacred Books of the East</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Se</td>
<td>Sinhalese edition of PvA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SED</td>
<td>Sanskrit-English Dictionary (Monier-Williams)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sing.</td>
<td>Singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skt</td>
<td>Sanskrit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sn</td>
<td>Suttanipāta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SnA</td>
<td>Commentary on Sn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td>PTS edition of PvA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thag or Th1</td>
<td>Theragāthā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thig or Th2</td>
<td>Therigāthā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trans.</td>
<td>translation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ud</td>
<td>Udāna</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VA</td>
<td>Commentary on Vin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vin</td>
<td>Vinaya-piṭaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vin Texts</td>
<td>Vinaya Texts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vism</td>
<td>Visuddhimagga</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vl(l)</td>
<td>variant reading(s)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vv</td>
<td>Vimānavatthu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VvA</td>
<td>Commentary on Vv</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## CONTENTS

Introduction vii
Abbreviations xii

### I  THE SNAKE CHAPTER  
(Uragavagga) 1

1. Inception of the Composition 3
2. Like a Field (Khettupaññā) 6
3. Boar-faced (Sūkara) 13
4. Putrid Mouth (Pūtimukha) 16
5. Biscuit Doll (Aṭṭhadhitālika) 20
6. Outside the Walls (Tirukkuṭṭa) 23
7. Devourer of Five Sons (Pañcaputtakhādaka) 36
8. Devourer of Seven Sons (Sattaputtakhādaka) 40
9. The Ox (Gōga) 42
10. Master Weaver (Mahāpesakāra) 46
11. Bald-headed (Khallāṇiyya) 50
12. The Elephant (Nāga) 57
13. The Snake (Uṣa) 65

### II  THE UBBARI CHAPTER  
(Ubbarivagga) 71

1. Saṃsāramocaka (Saṃsāramocaka) 73
2. The Elder Sāriputta's Mother (Sāriputtattheramātu) 84
3. Mattā Peti (Maṭṭāpeti) 89
4. Nandā (Nandi) 97
5. Mattakunḍāni (Mattakunḍali) 99
6. Kārha (Kanka) 100
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Dhanapāla (Dhanapāla)</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Cūḷasetṭhi (Cūḷasetṭhi)</td>
<td>113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Ankura (Ankura)</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Uttara’s Mother (Uttaramātū)</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>The Thread (Sutta)</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Kaṭṭhāmuhā (Kaṭṭhāmuhā)</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Ubbatī (Ubbatī)</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>SMALL CHAPTER</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(Cūḷavagga)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Without Parting (Abhijamāna)</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Sānuvaśin (Sānuvaśi)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Rathakāra (Rathakāra)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Chaff (Bhūsa)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>The Boy (Kumāra)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Serenti (Serenti)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Deer-hunter (Migaludda)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Second Hunter (Dutiyaludda)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>False Declaration (Kūṭavīnicchayikā)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Contempt for the Relics (Dhātuvināṇā)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>GREAT CHAPTER</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(Mahāvagga)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Ambasakkha (Ambasakkha)</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Serissaka (Serissaka)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Nandaka (Nandaka)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Revatti (Revatti)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Sugar-cane (Ucchu)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>The Boys (Kumāra)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>The King’s Son (Rājaputta)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Excrement Eating (Gūthakhādaka)</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contents</td>
<td>Page</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excrement Eating (Gūthakhāḍaka)</td>
<td>279</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Troop (Gaṇa)</td>
<td>280</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pāṭaliputta (Pāṭaliputta)</td>
<td>282</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Mango (Amba)</td>
<td>284</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tree-axle (Akkharukkha)</td>
<td>287</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accumulation of Wealth (Bhogasarnpharaṇa)</td>
<td>289</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Wealthy Merchant’s Sons (Seṭṭhiputta)</td>
<td>290</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sixty Thousand Hammers (Saṭṭhikūṭasahassa)</td>
<td>294</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Concluding Remarks</td>
<td>298</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**DEXIES**

| Words and Subjects                                                      | 300  |
| Names                                                                   | 310  |
| Some Pali Words discussed in the Notes                                  | 315  |
| List of Quotations and Allusions                                        | 316  |
| Words and Senses Not Listed by PED                                       | 317  |
| Amendments to PED Suggested in the Notes                                | 318  |
Chapter I

THE SNAKE CHAPTER

[Uragavagga]
ELUCIDATION OF THE INTRINSIC MEANING
THE SO-NAMED COMMENTARY ON THE PETA STORIES

Praise to the Lord, the Arahant, the Perfect Buddha.

[1] AN ACCOUNT OF THE INCEPTION OF THE COMPOSITION:

1. I salute the Saviour of Great Compassion who has gone beyond the ocean of things knowable and who has set forth in various ways things subtle and profound.

2. I salute the utmost Dhamma honoured by the Perfect Buddha by means of which those who are endowed with wisdom and conduct are led from this world.

3. I salute the Ariyasaṅgha, the unsurpassed merit-field of those who, endowed with the qualities of virtue and so on, stand fast in the fruits of the paths.

4. Through this salutation to the Three Jewels merit is thus produced; by means of its effulgence I have removed obstacles everywhere.

5. It is due to a difference in the fruition of this and that deed done by petas in their previous births that this and that existence as a peta has been brought about for them.

6. Clarifying this is that teaching of the Buddhas that demonstrates the fruition of deeds, that particularly gives rise to agitation.

7. And that is well-founded on a thorough understanding (of the subject), namely, the Peta Stories that were rehearsed by the Great Masters in the Khuddaka Nikāya.

8. Relying thoroughly thereon after the manner of their ancient commentary and at various places explaining the particular subject-matter,

9. Resolving, quite clearly and without confusion, the subtle meanings in accordance with the views of the present residents of the Mahāvihāra.

10. I will, as well as I am able, set forth an illuminating exposition of their meaning. Please pay attention to what I, with due reverence, have to say.

[2] Herein the Peta Stories (relate) of this and that being the deed that was the cause of their attaining existence as a peta, beginning with that of the son of a wealthy merchant. Here by the Peta Stories is meant the canonical text that begins with (the verse) ‘Like a field are the arahants’ (but) which proceeds, however, by way of its clarification. Now these
Peta Stories, by whom were they spoken, where were they spoken, when were they spoken and why were they spoken? These Peta Stories are said to proceed in two parts — by way of an arisen need and by way of questions and answers. Herein that which proceeds by way of an arisen need, this much was spoken by the Lord, whilst the other part was asked by the elder Nārada and so on and answered by this and that peta. Since, however, when this and that (set of) questions and answers was raised by the elder Nārada and so on, the Teacher would take this and that (set) as an arisen need and teach Dhamma to the company assembled there, the entire Peta Stories therefore came to be looked upon as having been spoken by the Teacher himself. When the Teacher had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was staying here and there, such as at Rājāgaha and so on, as a rule this and that teaching involving a Peta Story came about with the purpose of demonstrating the fruition of deeds of beings by way of the questions and answers (that had occasioned) this and that arisen need. This is, thus far, the answer in general to the questions as to by whom they were spoken and so on. It will appear in particular, however, in the exposition of the meaning of this and that story.

As to the three Piṭakas, namely the Vinaya Piṭaka, the Sutta Piṭaka and the Abhidhamma Piṭaka, these Peta Stories are included in the Sutta Piṭaka. As to the five Nikāyas, namely the Dīgha Nikāya, the Majjhima Nikāya, the Saṃyutta Nikāya, the Aṅguttara Nikāya and the Khuddaka Nikāya, they are included in the Khuddaka Nikāya. As to the nine limbs of the Teaching, namely—the discourses in prose, in prose and verse, the expositions, the verses, the uplifting verses, the as-it-was-said, the birth stories, the wonders and miscellanies, they are classified as verses. As to the eighty-four thousand units of the Dhamma acknowledged by the Treasurer of the Dhamma thus:

'Eighty-two thousand I received from the Buddha and two thousand from the monk.' These eighty-four thousand are the Dhammas (set) rolling.

they are classified as a few of these units of the Dhamma. By recitation sections there are as many as four recitation sections. By chapters they are classified into four chapters: the Snake Chapter, the Ubbari Chapter, the Small Chapter and the Great Chapter. As to these there are twelve stories in the first chapter, thirteen stories in the second [3] chapter, ten stories in the third chapter and sixteen stories in the fourth chapter: thus it is adorned with fifty-one stories (in all). Herein as to chapters the Snake Chapter is first, as to stories the Like a Field Peta Story is first, and of
this, moreover, the first verse (begins:) ‘Like a field are the arahants’. Now this is that story.

1 ganthārambhakathā, Be only.
2 See vv. 7–8 of the Concluding remarks, PvA 287.
3 Reading tesāṁ hi with Se Be for text’s sattehī.
4 The Mahāvihāra, situated at Anurādhapura in northern Ceylon, was in Dhamma-
pāla’s day the centre of Theravāda orthodoxy; see Walpola Rahula, History of Bud-
dhism in Ceylon, Colombo 1966, Appendix I, p. 303f.
5 atthuppatī; see Minor Readings and Illustrator p. 78, n. 1.
6 Reading Nārāda with Se Be for text’s Nārada.
7 bhāsitaṁ, literally spoken.
8 Reading tasmin āroclite with Se Be for text’s tasmīn.
9 Reading āroclite with Se Be for text’s āroclite.
10 dhammakkhāndha, defined at Aṣī 27 (Expos i 34); cp DA 24. The Treasurer of
the Dhamma was ānanda – see Thag 1048.
11 Sāriputta, Aṣī 27; cp Thag 1024 and note thereon at EV i 264 f.
I.1 EXPOSITION OF THE LIKE A FIELD PETA STORY
[Khetṭūpamāpetavatthuvaṇṇanā]

The Lord, who was staying at the Squirrels’ Feeding Ground in the Bamboo Grove at Rājagaha told1 this concerning a certain peta who had been the son of a wealthy merchant.

It is said that in Rājagaha there was a certain prosperous wealthy merchant owning great wealth, great possessions, abundant material resources and countless koṭis2 of accumulated wealth. It was through his being endowed with such great wealth that he was known simply as the Mahādhana-seṭṭhi.3 He had an only son who was much loved and adored. When he reached puberty his parents thought, ‘If our son should spend a thousand (pieces) every day for a hundred years even this accumulated wealth would not come to exhaustion. Let him enjoy these possessions as he wishes with a body and mind unwearyed by the fatigue of learning a craft.’ They did not have him trained in a craft and when he came of age they fetched him a bride of good family who was endowed with youth, beauty and charm, but who was voluptuous and neglected things spiritual. As he enjoyed the pleasures of love with her he did not give even so much as one thought to the Dhamma and became disrespectful to recluses and brahmins and venerable persons and, surrounded by wicked people, he took delight in, and was attached to, the pleasures of the five senses, blindly hankering after them in his delusion. And so he passed his time.

When his parents died, he squandered his wealth, giving to dancers and singers and so on to his heart’s content. It was not long before (his wealth) was lost but he managed to live after securing a loan. When he could get no further loan and was being pressed by his creditors, he gave them his arable land and house and so on and dwelt at the hall for the destitute in that same city, eating (what he had got) after wandering about begging with bowl in hand.

Now one day some robbers who had assembled said to him, ‘Look here, man, why this hard life of yours? You are young [4] and are endowed with strength, agility and power. Why behave as though deprived of hand and foot? Come! By stealing with us you can get the property of others and live your life in comfort.’ ‘I do not know how to steal,’ he replied. ‘We will train you. You just do everything we say,’ said the robbers. ‘Very well,’ he agreed and went with them. The robbers then placed a large club in his hand, broke into the house and, as they entered, they stationed him at the mouth of the breach, saying, ‘If anyone else comes here, strike him dead with a single blow from this club.’ Blinded by folly and not knowing what was either good or bad for him, he stood there, looking about for the
approach of others, whilst the robbers entered the house, took whatever they could lay their hands on, and ran off in all directions as soon as (their presence) became known to the occupants of the house. The occupants of the house arose and, running very quickly and looking about them in all directions, saw the man standing at the door where they had broken in.

'There he is, the wicked robber!' they said and seized him and beat him with the club and so on on his hands and feet. They presented him before the king saying, 'Your majesty, this is the robber who was seized at the mouth of the breach.' 'Have his head cut off!' the king ordered the city-guard. 'Very well, your majesty,' the city-guard said and had him seized and his arms tied tightly behind his back. With a wreath of red kānavīra flowers tied around his neck and with his head smeared with brick-powder, he was flogged as he was led towards the place of execution along the path described by the beating of the execution drum, going from road to road and from crossroads to crossroads, as the cry went up, 'This is the plundering robber who was seized in this city!'

Now in that city on that occasion, the city courtesan, named Sulasi, was standing in the palace, looking out through a lattice window, and saw him being led about in that manner. Through having made his acquaintance in the past, compassion for him arose within her as she thought, 'This man who used to enjoy great prosperity in this same city has now come to such misfortune, to such plight and distress.' She sent out four sweetmeats and some water and had it announced to the city-guard, 'May your worthiness pause until this man has eaten these sweetmeats and drunk this water.' Now during this interlude, the venerable Mahāmoggallāna saw his plight as he surveyed (the world) with his heavenly eye; his heart was stirred with compassion and he thought, 'This man has done no meritorious deeds, he has (only) done wicked deeds. For this reason he will arise in hell. But if I go (there) and he gives me the sweetmeats and the water, he will arise amongst the terrestrial devas. It would be a good thing if I were to help him', and he appeared before the man as the sweetmeats and the water were being brought to him. When he saw the elder he thought, with devotion in his heart, 'What is the use of eating these sweetmeats to me who am about to be put to death? But they could be provisions for one going to the other world', and had the sweetmeats and the water given to the elder. With the aim of increasing his devotion, the elder sat down at a spot such that he was just within his vision and ate the sweetmeats and drank the water and then rose from his seat and left. The man was led by his executioners to the place of execution and beheaded. Although he deserved to arise in the superior devaloka on account of the meritorious deed he had performed with respect to the elder Moggallāna, the unsurpassed
merit-field, since he thought, 'It is thanks to Sulasa that I obtained this merit-offering', his thoughts at the time of dying were soiled by feelings of affection directed towards Sulasa and he therefore arose at an inferior level, arising as a tree-devata in a huge banyan tree, amidst a densely shaded mountain thicket.

It is said that if, in his youth, he had worked hard and carried on the family line, he would have been foremost amongst wealthy merchants in that same city, whereas if when middle-aged, of middling (status), and if in his old age, of the lowest (status). However if, in his youth, he had gone forth, he would have become an arahant, whereas if when middle-aged he would have become a non-returner or a once-returner, and if in his old age, he would have become a sotapanna. But they say that through his association with evil friends he became disrespectful and given to bad conduct and to debauchery with women and drink and that in due course he wasted away all his prosperity and arrived at that great plight.

[6] Then later on he saw Sulasa who had gone to the park. Full of lust and desire, he inflicted her with blindness, took her to his own realm and lived intimately with her for seven days and then revealed his identity to her. Her mother, being unable to see her, roamed about in all directions weeping. When the people saw her, they said, 'The worthy Mahamoggallana, who is of great psychic power and majesty, should know her whereabouts — you should go and ask him.' 'Very well, good people,' she said and approached the elder and asked him about the matter. The elder said, 'You will see her at the edge of the company when the Lord is teaching Dhamma at the Mahavihara in the Bamboo Grove in seven days from now.' Sulasa then said to the devatatta, 'It is not proper for me to dwell in your realm; today is the seventh day and my mother, being unable to see me, will be full of anxiety and grief. Please take me back there, deva.' He took her when the Lord was teaching Dhamma in the Bamboo Grove and set her at the edge of the company and stood invisibly (beside her), whereupon the people, seeing Sulasa, said, 'Sulasa, my dear, where have you been for so many days? Your mother, being unable to see you, has been full of anxiety and grief like one driven to distraction.' She told the people of the incident and when the people asked, 'How did that man, who had pursued wicked deeds in that way and who had done no skilled deed, come to arise as a deva?' Sulasa replied, 'He gave to the worthy elder Mahamoggallana the sweetmeats and water that I had had given to him; it was by means of this meritorious deed that he came to arise as a deva.' When the people heard this, their hearts were filled with wonder and surprise and they felt the highest joy and satisfaction at the thought, 'The arahants are indeed the world's unsurpassed merit-field — even the
slightest service done for them brings it about that beings arise as devas.

The monks raised the matter with the Lord whereupon the Lord spoke these verses on account of that arisen need:

1. Like a field are the arahants, like cultivators those who give; like seed the merit-offering: from these the fruit is produced.

2. This seed, field and cultivation (are desirable) for the petas and for the one who gives; the petas make use of this, whilst the donor through that merit grows.

3. Having done right here what is skilled and honoured the petas, having done that auspicious deed, he goes to the heavenly place.

1. Herein like a field (khettipamā): a field is that which nourishes the seed scattered and sown in it and protects it by turning it into great fruit;18 it is a place for growing paddy seeds and so on – they are19 like this, like a field, meaning they are similar to a field prepared for ploughing. The arahants (arahanto): those in whom the āsavas are destroyed. They are called ‘arahants’ because the enemies (arīnnagī) of the defilements20 and the spokes (arānagī) of the wheel of saṃsāra21 have been destroyed (hatattā) by them; because of their keeping aloof (ārakatīa) therefrom,22 because they are worthy of (arahattā) the requisites and so on; and because they do no wicked deed, not even in secret (arahabhāvā).23 For in this connection, just as a field that is well prepared,24 that is undamaged by weeds and so on, when sown with seed yields great fruit for its cultivator, provided it is watered at the right time and other necessary conditions are fulfilled, even so does he in whose heart the āsavas are destroyed, he who is well prepared24 and who is without the corruptions of greed and so on, when sown with seed (in the form of) merit-offerings, yield great fruit for the one who gives, provided it is the right time and other necessary conditions are present. For this reason the Lord said, ‘Like a field are the arahants.’ This is an explanation by way of ‘maximum definition’;25 for there is no exclusion26 of learners and so on also being that field.

Those who give (dāyakā): the givers of, those who give away, the requisites such as robes and so on. By their27 generosity those who give away are those who cut out greed and so on from their own hearts, meaning alternatively that they are those who cleanse and who guard their hearts therefrom. Like cultivators (kassakūpamā):28 similar to cultivators; just as the cultivator obtains excellent and abundant fruit from his crops if he ploughs his paddy-fields and so on29 and is zealous as to the cyclical supply and drainage of water and the laying down and protection (of his crops) and so on,30 even so does the one who gives also obtain excellent and abundant fruit from his gift if he is zealous in his service to, and in his
generosity as regards his merit-offerings for the arahants. For this reason, it was said, ‘Like cultivators those who give’. Like seed the merit-offering (bhūpamāṁ deyyadhammanāṁ): is given with a distortion of gender, meaning similar to seed the merit-offering, for this is a name for the ten sorts of things that are to be given, such as food and drink and so on. From these the fruit is produced (etto nibbattate phalaṁ) means that from these, from (the conjunction of) the one who gives, the recipient and the giving away of the merit-offering [8] the fruit of the gift is produced, arises and continues to exist by way of their being conjoined for quite a long time. In this connection, since the nature of things such as food and drink and so on is none other than to be prepared, with the intention of giving them away, therefore ‘like seed the merit-offering’ is how the merit-offering is taken to be. By means of this designation of the merit-offering, by just this intention of giving away with the thing that is the merit-offering as its object, is its seed-like nature to be seen. It is indeed this (intention), and not the merit-offering as such, that produces the fruit (that consists in) various sorts of rebirth and so on and the various sorts of factors supporting this.

This seed, field and cultivation (etan bhūm kastkhettanā) means the aforesaid seed, the aforesaid field and the cultivation, the so-called means of sowing that seed in that field. For whom are these three desirable? He said, ‘For the petas and for the one who gives.’ If the one who gives gives a gift on behalf of the petas, this seed, this cultivation and this field are of benefit to both those petas and the one who gives, whilst if he gives a gift that is not on behalf of the petas, then they are of benefit to the one who gives alone – this is the meaning. Then to demonstrate this benefit ‘the petas make use of this’ whilst the donor through that merit grows was said. Herein the petas make use of this (tan petā paribhuṇjanti): when a gift is given on behalf of the petas by the one who gives, the petas make use of the fruit of that gift which is of benefit to the petas due to successful attainment of the aforementioned field, cultivation and seed and to the appreciation (shown by the petas). Whilst the donor through that merit grows (daṁ puṁśena vaddhati): whilst the donor, however, on account of his meritorious deed consisting in giving, through the fruit of that meritorious deed increases in his excellence of enjoyment and so on amongst devas and men. For the fruit of a meritorious deed may also be called ‘merit’ (alone), viz., ‘It is by the acquisition of skilled states, monks, that this merit increases”* and so on.

Having done right here what is skilled (idh’ eva kusalam karvā): having heaped up right here, in this very existence, merit which consists

*Dh ii 58; also quoted at PvA 120 below.
in giving by way of (giving) on behalf of the petas and which is skilled in the sense that it results in unsullied well-being.\(^3\) And honoured the petas (\textit{pete ca patipūjayant}: venerated\(^4\) by means of a gift on behalf of the petas and released those petas from the misery they were undergoing, for a gift that is being given on behalf of the petas\(^5\) is called ‘honouring them’. For this reason, ‘For honour has been paid to us’ and ‘And the highest honour has been paid to the petas’ is said.\(^6\) And (honoured) the petas (\textit{pete ca})\(^7\): [9] by the word ‘and’ are included the advantages of giving (experienced) in this very life, such as: one is much loved and adored, one is to be approached and trusted, one is to be honoured and respected, and one is praised and commended by the wise; and so on. \textit{Having done that auspicious deed, he goes to the heavenly place (saggat ca kamati thānam kammad katvāna bhuddakam): having done that auspicious, that lovely, skilled deed, he goes to, he approaches\(^8\) by way of arising in, the devaloka, the place of arising for those who have performed meritorious deeds that has acquired the name ‘heavenly’ (\textit{saggat}) since it is supreme (\textit{suttīhu-aggattā})\(^9\) in ten attributes such as heavenly life-span and so on.\(^10\) Now here, after having said ‘Having done what is skilled’ he repeats the words ‘Having done that auspicious deed’ — this should be regarded as being meant to indicate that as with the (actual)-giving away of the merit-offering,\(^11\) so also is the (subsequent) giving away of any thought of (entitlement to) that gift by way of the assignment of the gift itself a skilled deed consisting in giving. Some, however, say that here ‘the petas’ means ‘the arahants’ but this is mere fancy on their part because of there being simply no possibility of return for those who have destroyed the āsavas, because of the inappropriateness to them, as to both the state of the seed and so on and the one who gives, of the term ‘peta’ and because of the inappropriateness (of this) to those of the peta-womb (alone).

At the end of this teaching, insight into the Dhamma\(^12\) arose to eighty-four thousand beings, beginning with that devaputta and Sulasā.

By this Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning, by this Exposition of this Peta Story, the Exposition of the Like A Field Peta Story is concluded.

---

1 Reading kathesi with Se Be for text’s kāthesi.
2 The Indian crore, usually reckoned as 10,000,000.
3 Literally, the wealthy merchant of great wealth.
4 Reading olokonā with Se Be for text’s olokenā.
5 All texts read rattavanavirama-ā here but see PED sv virala where it is suggested that the vi ratakanaviramā be adopted. This latter also garlands the condemned at J iii 59, iv 191, vi 406. Little is known of the flower other than that it was a bush (geetcha) J iii 61, v 420, and that it is contrasted with the tree and creeper Vism 183. Its flowers are cited as characteristic of the colour crimson (mañjettha)
PETA-STORIES

VvA 177, DhsA 317, cp J ii 62, rather than red which is characterized by the bandhujivaka flower D ii 111 = M ii 14, Vism 174, DhsA 317. A note at Jātaka Stories iv 119 n. 1 suggests the kanavīra ‘was the vajhamaḷa put on the head or neck of a criminal condemned to death’. Compare also SīD sīvādhya. A red flower known as the vadamala, or shoe flower, is found in Ceylon and is so called due to its use in garlands for the condemned during the days of the Sinhalese kings. It is considered inauspicious and is never used in offerings to the Buddha, on shrines, or for personal adornment. The Bhikkhu Khantipālo, a botanist before ordination, has written questioning the PED identification of the kanavīra with the oleander, Nerium odorum, since most oleanders are either pink or white, rather than red. He feels, moreover, that since the oleander flowers only seasonally, it would prove an unsuitable execution flower which had, like the vadamala, to be available the whole year round. Might perhaps the kanavīra have been this vadamala, the single red Hibiscus (Rosa-sinensis)?

^Cp D iii 67 = S ii 128; S iv 340ff.; A ii 240ff. For further references to such practices regarding the condemned.

^vajhapaṭṭabheridesatamaggaṁ, all texts. PED sī pahāṭa, however, suggests amending to read pahāṭa.

^diğiḷa cakkhunā.

^bhummadevesu.

^Reading tassa passantass’ eva with Se Be for text’s tassa . . . passantass’ eva.

^uḷāre devaloke, but with vi uḷāreṇa qualifying the meritorious deed, thus ‘although he deserved to arise in the devaloka on account of the superior meritorious deed he performed with respect to the elder Moggallāṇa’. Such an interpretation would not be impossible for Moggallāṇa is a merit-field (cp. the hierarchy of the merit-worthy at Mi i 255) but it is probable that the superior devaloka here is set in opposition to the inferior level, hīnākāyaṁ, of the sequel: It does not explain, however, Moggallāṇa’s earlier prophecy that he would arise as a terrestrial deva, that is, at this lower level.

^sinchena, presumably amounting to more than mere gratitude as the sequel suggests. It is possible that the superior devaloka above refers to the Brahmaloka, or rūpāvaca, and that his failure to attain this is due to his continued attachment to the sense desires of the kāmāvaca. Arising at a low level on account of affection for the opposite sex is a theme that recurs in some later stories.

^Ficus indica, or the Indian fig-tree.

^This term is usually rendered ‘streamwinner’ but is more likely to be derived from sotavāca, than sotā, stream, and would then mean ‘one who had gained the ear’, that is, one who had received an oral teaching of the Dhamma and thereby attained insight into the Dhamma as for instance at the end of this story. I therefore leave both this term and the similar expression sotāpatti- untranslated. See my forthcoming doctoral dissertation (University of Lancaster) on this and related issues.

^andhakāraṁ māpetvā; compare the similar expression andhakāraṁ akāsi Māra (Mi i 159, 174; cp A iv 434). When darkness is said to be put around Māra, or that Māra is made blind, by one attaining jhāna. The consciousness of one attaining jhāna transcends the kāmāvaca, the limit of Māra’s realm with the result that the individual becomes invisible to Māra though Māra no doubt continues to see beings in his own realm. The world of the terrestrial devas is not spatially distinct from the world of men and is merely a different dimension of that world. But since it is a different dimension men generally fail to see devatas. InSutasā with blindness the devata in all probability does nothing more than render her invisible to the world of men, notably her mother, rather than actually deprive her of her sight.

^This should not be confused with the Mahāvihāra at Anurādhapura mentioned above.

^Reading paṭināvesedī with Be for text’s Se paṭināvedi.
18 Reading mahapphalabhāvakāraṇena with Se Be for text’s mahapphañam bhāvakāraṇena.
19 Reading etesan ti with Se Be for text’s ete santi.
20 Reading kilesānaṃ with Be for text’s Se kilesanām.
21 Reading samsāracakkasas with Be for text’s Se -vajjassas.
22 Cp A iv 145 where seven such things are listed.
23 For a similar etymology of ‘arahant’ see DA 146; VvA 105f.
24 Be suggests that it is the seed and the merit-offering that are well prepared.
25 Reading ukkaṭṭhanideso with Se Be for text’s ukkaṭṭhanideso; in other words the arahant, the most exalted member of the field, is here pars pro toto.
26 Text’s Se khattassā vā pañjikkehapeño should be amended to read khattassā eva pañjikkehapeño; cp Be khattabhāvāpañjikkehapeño. The learners are the sotāpanna, once-returner and non-returner.
27 Reading tesam with Se Be for text’s tena.
28 Text mis-spells kassūpamā.
29 Reading -khettāditi kasiyā with Se Be for text’s -khettādīnāṃ is kassitvā.
30 Vattīdakānaññānañānañādānañākhanādāni.
31 Reading arahantesu deyya- with Se Be for text’s arahante sudeyya-.
32 Text mis-spells dāyaka; it should read dāyakā as in the verse.
33 A list of fourteen such items appears at Nd2523, Nd373.
34 Reading deyyadhammapavatthuvālayāya pariccāgacatāna veyya with Se Be for text’s deyyadhammapavatthuvālayāya pariccāgato nāyaya; merit-offerings, like seed, have to be given away, planted, if they are to bear fruit at a later date.
35 tam, so Se Be and verse; text omits.
36 Reading devamunussēsu bhoga- with Se Be for text’s devamunusse subhoga-.
37 Anavajjikākhāvīpaṇa; cp D I 70 = M I 180 = 269 = 346 = A ii 210 = v 206.
38 Reading saimāṇe-vā with Se Be for text’s saimāṇetvā; not in PED.
39 Reading pete with Se Be for text’s te.
40 Pv I 5f and I 512 respectively. The text’s punctuation should be corrected to read with Se Be: Tenāha: amhākañ ca katā pūjā ti petanām pūjā ca katā uļārā ti ca.
41 Pete cā ti ca-saddena. . .
42 Reading upagacchatī with Be for text’s Se upajjati.
43 Cp PvA 89 below for a similar explanation.
44 Enumerated at Pv II 939-50 below.
45 Reading deyyadhammapariccāgo with Se Be for text’s deyyadhammanama pariccāgo.
46 Dhammahīsamaya, that is, gaining the Dhammacakkhu Sii 134, the vision of the Dhamma in which the Four Truths are directly perceived, e.g. M i 380; cp Asl. 242f. (Expos. 323ff.) as a result of which one becomes a sotāpanna. It is not therefore ‘quasi’ conversion as suggested by PED sv abhisamaya.

1.2 EXPOSITION OF THE BOAR-(FACED) PETA STORY
[Sūkarapetavatthuvānomā]

‘Your body is all golden.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at the Squirrels’ Feeding Ground in the Bamboo Grove near Rājagaha concerning a certain peta with the face of a boar.
It is said that long ago, during the dispensation of the Lord Kassapa, there was a monk who was [10] restrained in body but unrestrained in speech and who would insult and abuse the monks. When he died he arose in hell where he roasted for one Buddha-interval. During this Buddha-period he fell from there and arose, as a residual effect of that same deed, as a peta overcome by hunger and thirst at the foot of the Vulture Peak near Rājagaha. His body was the colour of gold but his face was like that of a boar. Now at that time the venerable Nārada was staying on the Vulture Peak. Having attended at dawn to his bodily ablutions, he took his robe and bowl and as he was going to Rājagaha in search of alms saw on his way that peta and uttered this verse enquiring about the deed he had done:

1 'Your body is all golden, it spreads light in all directions; yet your face is that of a boar — what deed did you do in the past?'

Herein your body is all golden (kāyo te sabbasovamā): your body, your person, is all over the colour of gold, resembling the glow of molten gold. It spreads light in all directions (sabbā obhūsate disā): it shines forth, it radiates, throughout all directions with its radiance; or alternatively the expression 'it spreads light' (obhūsate) can imply a causative sense though this is not expressed by its grammatical form, meaning: 'your body is all golden; it lights up (obhūseti), it shines forth in, all directions' — this is how it should be regarded. Yet your face is that of a boar (mukhan te sīkara' eva): but your face is like that of a boar, meaning your face is similar to a boar's face. What deed did you do in the past? (kim kammam akart' pāre): he asks what kind of deed he did formerly in a past birth.

That peta, questioned thus by the elder about the deed he had done, answered by uttering this verse:\

2 'I was restrained in body; in speech I was unrestrained. For this reason my appearance, Nārada, is such as you see.'

Herein I was restrained in body (kāyena saṁñāto āsīmī): I was restrained with bodily restraint, I was controlled with control in matters concerning the doors of the physical senses. [11] In speech I was unrestrained (vācāyāsīm asaṁñāto): in matters concerning speech I possessed no control. For this reason (tena): by reason of both this restraint and lack of restraint. My: me=mayhay (alternative grammatical form). Appearance is such as (tādino vāmā): such as you, Nārada, can see for yourself; I am of such a form that my body is human-shaped and the colour of gold but in face I am similar to a boar — this is how it should be construed.
The word 'appearance' (vapiṇo) is to be regarded here as a reference to his skin and his shape.\(^{10}\)

When the peta had thus answered the point upon which he had been questioned by the elder, making this his reason, he uttered this verse, exhorting the elder:

3 Therefore I say to you, Nārada, you yourself have seen this; commit no wicked deed by mouth, do not end up with the face of a boar!'\(^{11}\)

3 Herein therefore: taṁ=taṁā (alternative grammatical form). I (say) to you: tāhaṁ=te ahaṁ (resolution of compound). Nārada (Nārada): he is addressing the elder. Say (brūmi): tell. Yourself (sāman): just by yourself. This (idam): he speaks concerning his own body. This is the meaning here: 'Since you, Nārada sir, have seen for yourself how this body of mine is human-shaped from the neck down and boar-shaped (from the neck) up, therefore I speak exhorting you.' What was it the peta?\(^{12}\) said? – ‘Commit no wicked deed by mouth, do not end up with the face of a boar!’ Herein no (mā) is a particle of prohibition. By mouth: nukhasā=nukhena (alternative grammatical form). Kho (untranslated) is used for emphasis. Do not commit, do not perform, any wicked deed in speech. Do not end up with the face of a boar (mā kho sūkaramukho abu).\(^{13}\) Simply do not end up with the face of a boar as I have done. But if you are scurrilous and should commit wicked deeds in speech then you would certainly end up with the face of a boar. Therefore he warns him, saying, ‘Commit no wicked deed by mouth’, in order to prevent the face which is their fruit.

The venerable Nārada then proceeded to Rājagaha in search of alms. After his meal he returned from his almsround and raised the matter with the Teacher who was seated in the midst of the four assemblies. The Teacher said, [12] ‘I (also), Nārada, saw that being in the past’, and then taught Dhamma explaining in countless different ways the disadvantages connected with bad conduct in speech and the advantages associated with good conduct in speech. That teaching was of benefit to the company assembled there.

\(^{1}\) The Buddha immediately prior to Gotama.

\(^{2}\) niraya; some render this 'purgatory' but all births are a purgatory given the law of kamma.

\(^{3}\) Reading vipākāvasesaṃ with Se Be for text’s vipākāvasesaṃ.

\(^{4}\) Reading ḫuppipāsī abhāhuto peto with Se Be for text’s ḫuppipāsīhi gunāpeto; cp PED sv guna.

\(^{5}\) samutāpaṭṭhāggaṇanaṃ, not in PED.

\(^{6}\) Reading pīṇḍāya with Se Be for text’s pīṇḍacāravāya.

\(^{7}\) anto-gadha-hetu-attham, cp CPD sv.
1.3 EXPOSITION OF THE PUTRID MOUTH PETA-STORY

[Pūtimukhapetavatthupaññanā]

‘You possess a beautiful, heavenly complexion.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at the Squirrels’ Feeding Ground in the Bamboo Grove concerning a certain peta with a putrid mouth.

It is said that long ago, at the time of the Lord Kassapa, two young men of good family went forth under his dispensation and were full of virtuous conduct, living a life of austerity and dwelling together in harmony in a certain village settlement. Then a certain monk who was given to wicked deeds and who delighted in slander arrived at their dwelling place. The elders extended him a friendly welcome and provided him with accommodation. On the following day they entered the village with him in search of alms. When they saw this the people showed the three elders the highest reverence in the extreme and served them with a meal of rice-gruel and so on. When he had entered the vihāra he thought, ‘This village is an attractive source of food for its people are full of faith and give the choicest almsfood. And this vihāra is shaded and well watered. I could happily live here; but as long as these monks continue to live here this vihāra will afford me no comfort — I will be living like a residential pupil. Well then, I must estrange them from one another and act in such a way that they will not live here again.’

So one day, when the senior elder had instructed the other two, the slanderous monk entered his own dwelling place, spent a little time there and then approached that senior elder, who asked him, ‘Why have you come at an improper time, my brother?’ ‘There is something I ought to mention, sir,’ (he replied) and when the elder had given him permission
(to speak), he said, 'Sir, this companion elder of yours parades himself like a friend to your face but tells tales about you behind your back as might a rival.' When asked what (it was that) he said, he replied, 'Listen, sir, he speaks to your discredit, saying, 'This senior elder is crafty, deceitful and a fraud; he makes his living by wrong means.' 'Do not speak in this way, my brother. This monk would not tell tales about me. He has known my character since the time we were laymen — I have always been of an amiable and lovely nature.' 'If you think in this way due to your purity of heart then that is up to you. But I have no ill-feelings towards him so why should I tell you he had said it if he did not say it? Very well, sir, but you will find out about it yourself after a while,' he said. But that elder, on account of being a puthuijana,3 waivered, wondering, 'Could it be as he says?', and suspicion arose in his heart, his trust a little shaken. Having estranged the first senior elder, that fool also set that other elder at variance in the aforesaid manner. On the following day, neither elder addressed the other when taking robe and bowl and going to that village in search of alms. When they brought back their almsfood, each ate it in his own dwelling place and, without extending even the slightest courtesy, spent the day right there, whilst at daybreak each went wherever he found convenient without informing the other. When they saw the slanderous monk who had entered that village that could fulfill all his wishes in search of alms, the people asked, 'Where have the elders gone, sir?' 'They quarrelled with one another the whole night. I told them not to quarrel but to live in harmony and that quarrelling leads to misfortune, brings about misery in the future and conduces to unskilled deeds; furthermore much that is of benefit that has already been done is undone by a quarrel — and so on, but they went away without heeding my words.' At this the people begged, 'Let those elders go if they so wish. But you must please dwell here out of pity for us — you will not have any regrets!' 'Very well,' he agreed.4 When he had stayed there a few days, he thought, 'I have set at variance monks who were virtuous and of lovely character through my greed for a dwelling. I have surely done a very wicked deed!' [14] Overcome by an extremely uneasy conscience he became sick through the weight of his grief and, dying not long afterwards, arose in Avīci.5

As the other two companion elders wandered about that country they met in a certain dwelling and exchanged friendly greetings with one another. They informed one another of the words of dissension the monk had spoken and when they realised that there was no truth in it became harmonious (again) and returned in due course to that same dwelling. When the people saw the two elders they were overjoyed and, full of happiness, served them with the four requisites. The elders stayed there
being supplied with suitable food and developed insight through the concentration of mind and not long afterwards attained arahantship.

The slanderous monk roasted in hell for one Buddha-interval and arose during this Buddha-period not far from Rājagaha as a peta with a putrid mouth. His body was the colour of gold but worms would come out of his mouth and devour his face here and there. He emitted a foul smell that pervaded far into the atmosphere. Now as the venerable Nārada came down from the Vulture Peak he saw him and asked about the deed he had done with this verse:

1. "You possess a beautiful, heavenly complexion but as you stand in the air, in the sky, worms devour your putrid smelling mouth. What deed did you do in the past?"⁶

1. Herein heavenly (dibbāṁ) (usually means): of a divine nature, having attained the state of devahood; here, however, 'heavenly' (means) 'heaven-like'.⁷ Beautiful (subhaṁ): shining or in an excellent condition. Complexion (vāṇyadhānāṁ): colour of the skin. You possess (dhopesi): you bear. As you stand in the air, in the sky (vēhāyanam titṭhasi antalikkhe): you stand in the air, in the sky so to speak. Some say, however, that the reading is vēhāyanam titṭhasi antalikkhe and say this is the meaning as the rest of the words are: 'you stand in the air lighting up the sky'. [15] Putrid smelling (pūṭigandhaṁ): having the smell of a rotting corpse, meaning foul smelling. What deed did you do in the past? (khiṁ kanuḥ maṁ akāsi pubbe): he asks, 'Worms devour your putrid smelling mouth yet your body is the colour of gold. What sort of deed did you do in the past that could be the cause of such an appearance?'

When questioned by the elder about the deed he had done that peta uttered this verse explaining the matter:

2. 'I was a wicked and foul mouthed recluse; (though) in the guise of an ascetic, I was unrestrained in mouth. Through my austerity I received this complexion and by my slander this putrid mouth.'

2. Herein I was a wicked recluse (samaṇo aham pāpo): I was a despicable recluse, a wicked monk. Foul mouthed (dusṭhaṁco): of foul speech; I transgressed against others, I went too far with my mouth, meaning I was one to speak denouncing the virtues of others. An alternative reading is extremely foul mouthed (atidusṭhaṁco): extremely harsh spoken, fond of bad conduct in speech such as telling lies and slander and so on. In the guise of an ascetic (tapasstripa): disguised as a recluse. In mouth: mukhaṣā= mukhena (alternative grammatical form). Received (laddhā): obtained; the word 'and' (ca) has the meaning of a conjunction.⁹ I. me=maya

When that peta had reported the deed that he had done, he then uttered the concluding verse exhorting the elder:

3  ‘You yourself have seen this, Nārada. Those who possess pity and who are skilled would say, “Neither slander nor tell lies – then you will become a yakkha with all your desires gratified”.’

3  [16] Herein this (tayidam): this appearance of mine. Those who possess pity and who are skilled would say (anukampakā ye kusalā radeyyumī): those who are of a pitying nature and who possess compassion, who are skilled and clever i.e. acting for the benefit of others, such as the Buddha and so on, would say just what I am saying – this is the meaning. Showing this exhortation he then said, ‘Neither slander nor tell lies – then you will become a yakkha with all your desires gratified.’ This is the meaning: neither (utter) slanderous talk nor tell, nor speak, lies: if you renounce telling lies and malicious speech and become restrained in speech, then you will become a yakkha or a deva or one of a deva’s retinue. Having obtained the finest heavenly excellence and whatever desire that can be desired, you will be able to go here and there (at pleasure) and be of a nature to amuse yourself by gratifying the senses at will.

When he had heard this, the elder thereupon proceeded to Rājagaha in search of alms. Returning from his alms, sound after his meal, he raised the issue with the Teacher. The Teacher took it as an arisen need and taught Dhamma. That teaching was of benefit to the company assembled there.
1.4 EXPOSITION OF THE BISCUIT DOLL PETA STORY

[Piṭṭhadhīti kalikapetavatthuvaṇṇanaṁ]

"With reference to whomsoever." The Teacher, who was staying in the Jetavana Grove at Sāvatthi told this concerning an almsgiving of the householder Anāthapiṇḍika.

It is said that the householder Anāthapiṇḍika’s grand-daughter, who was still a young girl, was given a biscuit doll by her nurse, who said, 'Take this to play with.' She came to regard it as her own daughter. Then one day whilst playing with it she carelessly let it fall and it broke. At this the girl burst out crying, saying, 'My daughter is dead!', but none of the servants could console her tears.

Now at that same time the Teacher was seated on the appointed seat in the house of the householder Anāthapiṇḍika and that extremely wealthy merchant [17] was seated near the Lord. The nurse went with the girl into the wealthy merchant’s presence. When he saw her he said, ‘Why is this girl weeping?’ The nurse reported the incident to the wealthy merchant and the latter sat the girl on his lap and consoled her, saying, ‘I will give alms on behalf of your daughter’, and then addressed the Teacher, saying, ‘I wish to give alms on behalf of my great grand-daughter, this biscuit doll. Please accept my invitation to you, Lord, and to five hundred monks for the following day’s meal.’ And the Lord consented with his silence. Then on the next day the Lord went, together with five hundred monks, to the house of that wealthy merchant and, when he had finished his meal, spoke these verses expressing his appreciation:

1. 'With reference to whomsoever the unselfish should give alms, whether with respect to former petas or, moreover, to the household devās,

2. And the Four Great Kings, renowned guardians of the world, namely Kuvera, Dhataraṭṭha, Virūpakkha and Virūhaka, — when these are honoured the givers are not without fruit.

3. No amount of weeping, sorrow or any other lamentation benefits the peta though their relatives persist in them.
4  But this donation that has been made and firmly planted in the Saṅgha will serve, with immediate effect, their long term benefit.

1  Herein with reference to whomsoever (yaṁ kiṅcārammaṇaṁ katvā): with respect to, on behalf of, whomsoever else one (participates) in auspicious rites and so on. Should give: dājā-dādeyya (alternative grammatical form). The unselfish (amacchari): the unselfish are so due to an absence of selfishness which is characterised by the inability (to share) their own good fortune⁴ in common with others; being of a generous nature, they should give after they have set at a distance stains of the heart such as selfishness and greed and so on – this is the meaning. Whether with respect to former petas (pubbe pette ca ārabbha): whether on behalf of any former ancestors.⁵ Household devatās (vaṭṭhudevata): with respect to the devatās that inhabit the house and its grounds and so on – this is how it should be construed. Or, moreover (atha vā) indicates that they should give alms in this way with respect also to any other deva or man and so on whomsoever.

2  Herein, after stating 'and the Four Great Kings', indicating to this extent some well-known devas amongst the devas, he again [18] says 'Kuvera' and so on referring to them by name. Herein Kuvera (Kuveraṁ): Vessavana, Dhatarattha (Dhataratthhaṁ) and so on are the names of the three remaining guardians of the world. When these are honoured (te c'eva pūjitā honti): when these Great Kings, former petas and household devatās are revered by acts on their behalf. The givers are not without fruit (dāyakā ca anipphalā): the givers, those who give alms on behalf of others, are not entirely without fruit; they similarly partake of the fruit of their own alms. Then to show that those who weep, mourn and lament at the death of their relatives do them no good and merely torment themselves, he uttered the verse (beginning:) 'No amount of weeping'.

3  Herein weeping: ṛṇṇam=ruditaṁ (alternative grammatical form), the shedding of tears. The rest of the words state that this is not to be done. Sorrow (soko): mourning, torturing the heart, meaning burning is. Any other lamentation (yā c'annā paridevaṁ): means any lamentation other than weeping and sorrow, such as mumbling 'Where is my only son?' and so on, are not to be done either. The word 'or' (vā) under all circumstances denotes an alternative. No (amount of weeping) benefits the peta (na tam petassa atthāya): since none of these, neither weeping nor sorrow nor lamentation either helps or benefits the dead peta, they are therefore not to be done, even though their foolish⁶ relatives persist in them – this is the meaning. Having thus shown the futility of weeping and so on, he then uttered the verse (beginning:) 'But this donation' showing the usefulness of a donation made to the Saṅgha by a donor with respect to former petas and so on.
4 Herein *this* (ayam): he speaks pointing to the alms before him that were given by that donor. *But (ca)* is a word (denoting) something additional. He clarifies the distinction by going on to say that just because weeping and so on do not benefit either the peta or anyone else this is not so, however, as regards this donation which will be to their long term benefit. *Kho* (untranslated) is used for emphasis. *Donation (dakkhiṇa):* almsgiving. **Firmly planted in the Saṅgha (saṅghamhi suppatiṭṭhitā):** [19] firmly planted in the Saṅgha, the unsurpassed merit-field. Their *long term benefit (dīgharatthā hitiyā assa):* the good, the benefit, of that peta for a long time. **Will serve with immediate effect (ṭhānasō upakappati):** it takes effect straight away, meaning with no time intervening. This is indeed the rule here: if petas express their appreciation when a gift is given on their behalf, they are at once relieved (of their sufferings) by means of its fruit.

When the Lord had thus taught Dhamma and had made those people take delight in giving on behalf of petas, he rose from his seat and departed. On the following day the wife of that wealthy merchant and the rest of his relatives followed his example and inaugurated a great almsgiving lasting as long as a month. Then Pasenadi, king of Kosala, approached the Lord and asked, “Why is it, Lord, that the monks have not come to my house for as long as a month now?” When the Teacher told him the reason the king too, following that wealthy merchant’s example, inaugurated a great almsgiving for the order of monks with the Buddha at its head. And when they saw this his citizens, following the king’s example, inaugurated a great almsgiving lasting as long as a month. Thus they inaugurated a great almsgiving that lasted two months, all on account of that biscuit doll.

---

1 Reading pitṭhadhitikām with Se Bē for text’s pinda-, though the meaning remains unaltered.
2 sampattiya.
3 pitaro.
4 Reading aviddasuno with Se Bē for text’s avindasuno.
5 Text mis-spells suppatīṭṭhi.
6 Text erroneously inserts tāma after ṭhānasō.
7 Reading ayam hitattha dhammatha with Se Bē for text’s ayam hitatθhadhammatā.
8 Reading tāvādeva tassa with Se Bē for text’s tāvādevassā.
9 Text reads bhunjanti with vi paribhinjanti suggesting that they enjoy or make use of the food that has just appeared in their vicinity. Se Bē, however, both read parinuuccanti here, meaning that they are released or set free (from their former sufferings), which I follow. But since, as these stories make abundantly clear, the suffering from which petas are usually freed is that of hunger, the difference between these vii is narrower than might at first sight appear.
10 So text and Se which both read te māsamattam; Bē reads temāsamattam which would mean that it lasted three months.
1.5 EXPOSITION OF THE OUTSIDE THE WALLS PETA STORY
[Tirokuddapetawavathwanguana]

'They stand outside the walls.' The Teacher who was staying at Rajagaha told this concerning a large number of petas. Here is that story in detail.

Ninety-two aeons ago there was a city named Kāśīpurī where a king named Jayasena reigned. His queen was named Sīrimā and in her womb was conceived the Bodhisatta Phussa who in due course attained (the) perfect enlightenment (of a Buddha). King Jayasena became possessive, thinking, 'My son it is who performed the Great Renunciation and has become a Buddha. Mine alone is the Buddha, mine the Dhamma, mine the Saṅgha,' and all the time waited upon them himself, giving no one else an opportunity. The Lord’s three brothers, younger brothers by a different mother, thought, [20] 'Buddhas indeed arise for the benefit of the whole world, not just for the sake of one person, yet our father does not give anyone else an opportunity. Now how might we get to wait upon the Saṅgha?' And then the thought occurred to them, 'Come on, let's devise some means!' So they made it appear as though there were a disturbance on the border. When the king heard of this 'disturbance on the border' he sent these three sons to pacify the border. They went and pacified things and when they returned the king was pleased and granted them a boon, saying, 'Take whatever you wish.' 'We wish to wait upon the Lord,' they said. 'You may take anything apart from him,' replied the king. 'We do not care for anything else,' they said. 'In that case set a time limit and take him.' They begged for seven years but the king would not give this. They begged successively for six, five, four, three, two years, one year; for seven months, six, five, four months, for three months at which the king said, 'Take him!' They approached the Lord and said, 'Lord, we wish to wait upon the Lord for three months.' Lord, may the Lord accept us for this three months' residence of the rainy season.' The Lord consented by his silence. Those three then sent a letter³ to their agent in that district (where the Lord would be staying), stating, 'The Lord is to be waited upon by us during these three months. First of all build a vihāra and then procure everything that will be needed for waiting upon the Lord.' He sent (word) back when he had procured everything. They dressed in yellow clothes and, together with two thousand five hundred male helpers, conducted the Lord and the order of monks to that district, waiting upon them respectfully, and handed over the vihāra to them and had them pass the rainy season there. Their treasurer, a householder's son and married, had faith and devotion. With due care he gave the items for almsgiving for the order of monks with the Buddha at its head. The agent in that district received these and along
with as many as eleven thousand men from that district organised the almsgiving with due care. Now some people there were of corrupt mind. They obstructed the alms, ate the merit-offerings themselves and set fire to the refectory. When they had celebrated the Pavāraṇā ceremony the sons of the king worshipped the Lord [21] and then went back, with the Lord going before them, into their father’s presence. After the Lord had gone there he attained Parinibbāna.

In due course the king’s sons, their agent in that district and their treasurer died and arose in heaven together with that company (of helpers) whilst those people of corrupt mind arose in the hells. Ninety-two aeons passed thus whilst both (groups of) people arose in heaven after heaven and in hell after hell respectively. Then during this auspicious aeon, ⁷ at the time of the Lord Kassapa, those people of corrupt mind arose amongst the petas. At that time when people gave alms for the sake of their peta-relatives they dedicated them, saying, ‘Let this be for our relatives!’ (at which) they attained excellence. Now when those petas saw this they approached Kassapa and asked, ‘How, Lord, might we (also) attain such excellence?’ The Lord said, ‘You will not attain it now. However, in the future there will be a Perfectly Enlightened One named Gotama. At the time of this Lord there will be a king named Bimbisāra who was your relative ninety-two aeons ago. He will give alms to that Buddha and dedicate them to you. Then you will attain (such excellence).’ It is said that when he said this it seemed to those petas as though he had said they would attain it on the following day.

Then when one Buddha-interval had passed and our Lord had arisen in the world those three sons of the king, together with a thousand men, also fell from the devaloka and arose in a brahmin clan in the kingdom of Magadha. In due course they went forth into the homeless life of the ascetic and became the three matted-hair ascetics of Gayāśīsa.¹¹ Their agent in that district became king Bimbisāra and their treasurer, the householder’s son, became the wealthy merchant Visākha whose wife, named Dhammadinnā, was the daughter of a wealthy merchant whilst the remainder of that company arose as the king’s entourage.

When our Lord had arisen in the world and had spent the seven weeks (following his enlightenment) he came in due course to Benares where he set rolling the Wheel of the Dhamma and instructed first the Group of Five and then the three matted-hair ascetics with their one thousand followers and then went to Rājagaha. [22] He there established in the sotāpatti-fruit king Bimbisāra who had come to visit him that very day, along with eleven myriads of brahmin householders who were inhabitants of Aṅga-Magadha.¹⁴ He accepted the king’s invitation to a meal on
the following day and the next day entered Rājagaha with Sakka, Lord of Devas, who had assumed the form of a brahmin youth, walking in front of him praising him with the verses that begin:

'The tamed with the tamed, the freed with the freed; the Lord, bright as a golden jewel, entered Rājagaha with the former matted-hair ascetics.'

And in the king's residence he accepted a great almsgiving. Now the petas stood surrounding the house, thinking, 'Now the king will dedicate the alms to us', but when he gave the alms the king thought only about a site for the Lord's vihāra, wondering, 'Now where should the Lord stay?', and did not dedicate the alms to anyone. Not getting the alms in this way, those petas lost hope and that night wailed in utter and dreadful distress about the king's residence. The king became agitated and was filled with fear and trembling. At daybreak he told the Lord, 'I heard such a noise (during the night)! Whatever is going to happen to me, Lord?' The Lord said, 'Have no fear, great king, no evil will befall you — you will be all right. The fact is that former relatives of yours who have arisen amongst the petas have been going around for one whole Buddha-interval with the expectation that you would give alms to a Buddha and dedicate them to them. But when you gave alms yesterday you did not do what they had hoped and wailed in such dreadful distress.' 'Would they receive them, Lord, if (alms) were given now?' (asked the king). 'Yes, great king.' 'Then let the Lord accept my (invitation) for today and I will dedicate the alms to them.' The Lord consented by his silence. The king went to his residence and had a great almsgiving prepared and had the time announced to the Lord. The Lord went to the king's royal court together with the order of monks and sat down on the appointed seat. The petas thought, 'Today we may get something', and went and stood outside the walls and so on. The Lord brought it about that they all became visible to the king. As he gave the water donation the king dedicated it, saying, 'Let this be for my relatives!' At that moment lotus ponds came into being for the petas covered with lotuses and blue water lillies. They bathed and drank in them and with their distress, weariness and thirst allayed they became the colour of gold. The king gave rice-gruel and hard and soft foods and dedicated these and at that very instant heavenly rice-gruel and hard and soft foods came into being. When they ate these their faculties were refreshed. The king gave clothing and lodging and dedicated these and heavenly clothing and palaces variously furnished with couches and covers and so on came into being for them. All this excellence of theirs was made manifest to the king just as the Lord had resolved it should be
and when the king saw it he was thoroughly delighted. Then when the Lord had finished his meal and eaten his fill he told king Bimbisāra the
Outside the Walls Peta Story in order to show his appreciation:

1. "They stand outside the walls and at junctions and road-forks; they
go to their own house and stand at the door-posts.

2. Though abundant food and drink, foods hard and soft, are served,
no one remembers those creatures on account of their deeds.

3. So they who possess pity give for their relatives the purest, choiciest,
timely and fitting food and drink (saying), "Let this be for our rela-
tives! May our relatives be happy!"

4. And those peta-relatives who have gathered and assembled there
respectfully show their appreciation for that abundant food and
drink (saying),

5. "A long life to our relatives by means of whom we have gained (all
this) for honour has been paid to us and those who give are not with-
out fruit!"

6. For there is no cultivation there, nor is there here27 any cattle-
rearing known; nor are there such things as trading and buying and
selling with gold — the petas, those who have passed on,28 are there
sustained by what is given from here.29

7. As water rained on the uplands flows down to the lowlands [24]
even so does what is given from here benefit the petas.

8. Just as swollen streams swell the ocean, even so does what is given
from here benefit the petas.

9. "He gave to me, he worked for me, he was a relative, friend and
companion to me" — (thus), recalling what they used to do one
should give donations for the petas.

10. No amount of weeping, sorrow or any other lamentation benefits
the peta though their relatives persist in them.

11. But this donation that has been made and firmly planted in the
Saṅgha will serve, with immediate effect, their long term benefit.

12. Now this, the duty to one's relatives, has been pointed out and the
highest honour has been paid to the petas; strength has been furnished
to the monks and not trifling the meritorious deed pursued by you.

1. Herein outside the walls (tiro kudžesu): on the further side of the
walls. They stand (tiṭṭhanti): this expression asserts their standing in con-
trast to (other postures) such as sitting and so on;30 meaning they stand
thus outside, beyond, the fences that surround houses. And at junctions
and road-forks: sandhisinghātakesu ca=sandhisu ca sinhātakesu ca (reso-
lation of compound); places where four roads meet, house-junctions, wall-
junctures and light-junctures\textsuperscript{31} are called `junctures' whilst `road-forks' are places where three roads meet.\textsuperscript{32} Stand at the door-posts (dvārabāhāsu titṭhanti): stand leaning against the posts of the city gates and of the doors of houses. They go to their own house (āgantvāna sakaṇ gharāṇ): 'their own house' can be the house of a former relative as well as their own house in which they dwell as owners. Since they come regarding both these as their own he therefore said, 'They go to their own house.' The Lord said the verse (beginning:) 'They stand outside the walls' showing the king the many petas, who were extremely ugly, deformed and terrible to behold, undergoing\textsuperscript{33} the fruit of envy and selfishness and who were stood outside the walls and so on having come to Bimbisāra's residence regarding it as their own house since it was the house of a former relative though they themselves had not formerly dwelt there in the past.\textsuperscript{34} He then uttered the second verse (beginning:) 'Though abundant food and drink' showing the dreadful nature of the deed done by them.

2 Herein abundant (pahūte): plentiful, much, meaning as much as is needed. [25] It is permissible to substitute the syllable pa for the syllable ba [thus transforming bahu into text's pahu] as in such passages as 'Though possessing plenty he does not support ...' (pahu santo na bharati).\textsuperscript{*} Some however read `abundant' (bahuke) but this is a careless reading.\textsuperscript{35} Food and drink: annāpānāmhi=anne ca pāne ca (resolution of compound in alternative grammatical form). Foods hard and soft: khaļja bhojje=khajje ca bhojje ca (resolution of compound); by means of these (four) he indicated the four sorts of food: that which is eaten, drunk, chewed and savoured. Are served (upasthithe): are begun (upagamma) to be set out (shite), meaning are given out, are got ready. No one remembers those creatures (na tesam koci sarati sattānaṇ): no one, neither their mother nor father nor son nor grandson remembers those creatures who have arisen on the peta-plane. For what reason? On account of their deeds. By reason of\textsuperscript{36} that miserly deed that they themselves did consisting in the failure to give and the prevention of that almsgiving and so on – it is this\textsuperscript{37} deed of theirs that does not allow their relatives to remember them. When he had shown how, in spite of the existence of plentiful food\textsuperscript{38} and drink and so on, due to that wicked deed there was not even the slightest recollection on the part of those relatives of the petas waiting in expectation of (a gift from) their relatives, the Lord then uttered the third verse (beginning:) 'So they who possess pity' give for their relatives' praising alms given\textsuperscript{39} on behalf of relatives who have arisen on the peta-plane.

3 Herein so (evam) is a term of comparison. It can be construed in two ways: though they do not remember those creatures on account of

\textsuperscript{*} Sn 98.
5 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you devour the flesh of your sons?'

5 Herein evil deed (dukkatā): evil conduct. As a result of which deed? (kissa kammavipākena): as a result of what sort of deed, meaning did you destroy a living being or was it some other (deed) such as taking what had not been given and so on? Some read 'as a result of which deed?' (kena kammavipākena).

[34] Then that pett, relating to the elder the deed she had done, said:

6 'My co-wife became pregnant and I devised a wicked deed against her: depraved in mind I caused her to miscarry.

7 Her two month old embryo flowed out just like blood; then her mother became angry with me and collected her relatives together; she made me make an oath and (them) abuse me.

8 I told a terrible lie when I made that oath that if this were done by me I might devour the flesh of my sons.

9 It is both as a result of that deed and due to the fact that I lied that I devour the flesh of my sons and am smeared with blood and matter.'

6 Herein co-wife (sapatt) is said of a woman with the same husband. And I devised a wicked deed against her (tassā pūpaṇacetaiyī): and I planned a wicked and gruesome deed against her, against that co-wife. Depraved in mind (paduttohamanasā): with depraved intent or with a depraved mind.

7 Two month old (dvemāsiko): having been established (in the womb) for two months it was two months old. Flowed out just like blood (lohitāni āva pagghaṭi): as it perished it became just like blood and streamed out. Then her mother became angry with me and collected her relatives together (tad assā mātā kupitā mayham nāṭī samānayi): then my co-wife's mother became angry with me and summoned her relatives together. An alternative reading is tat assā which divides into the two words tato assā (thereupon her). Oath (sappathām): oath. And (made them) abuse (paribhāsāpayi ca): and (made them) threaten and frighten.

8 I told a lie when I made that oath (sappathāṃ musāvāḍaṃ abhāsissam): I told a lie when I made that oath, that is, there was no truth in my pointing out that I had not done what I had in fact done, saying. 'If this were done by me I might be such and such.' If this were done by me I might devour the flesh of my sons (puttamaṃśāni khādāmi sac etāṃ pakataṃ mayā): [35] this then shows the nature of oath made, meaning that if this wicked deed, this miscarriage, were done by me. I might devour
forsaking their respect and with no derangement of mind [27] they rejoice, they show their appreciation and become full of joy and happiness at the thought, ‘May these alms be for our happiness and well-being!’

A long life! (ciram jivantu): may they have a long life, may they be long lived! To our relatives (no Ṃāt): to our relations. By means of whom (yesam hetu): by reason of whom, dependent upon whom. We have gained (labhāmāse): we have gained such excellence. This shows the manner of the praise for their relatives (shown) by the petas who are experiencing the excellence gained by means of their dedication. A donation produces its fruit immediately when three factors are present: the successful attainment of those worthy of donations, the dedication by the one who gives and the appreciation of the petas. Of these the one who gives is the particular means; for this reason they said, ‘By means of whom we have gained (all this).’ For honour has been paid to us (amhākan ca katā pūjā): for honour has been paid to us by those who give dedicating (those alms) thus: ‘Let this be for our relatives!’ And those who give are not without fruit (dāyakā ca anipphalā): since that deed (consisting in giving away) gives its fruit there and then for them in whose hearts it was conceived. Here it may be asked, ‘How is it, do only those who have arisen on the peta-plane gain this excellence by means of their relatives or do others also (gain it)?’ Nothing need be said here by us since this has been explained as follows by the Lord himself:

‘“Master Gotama, we brahmans give alms and perform the śrāddha rites saying, ‘May these alms be of benefit to the petas who were our relatives and blood-relations! May our peta-relatives and blood-relations enjoy these alms!’ Master Gotama, are those alms really of benefit to those petas who were our relatives and blood-relations? Do those peta-relatives and blood-relations really enjoy those alms?”

“If they are in the (appropriate) place, brahmin, they are of benefit (to them); if they are in a place that is not (appropriate) they are not.”

“But what is the (appropriate) place, master Gotama, and what the place that is not (appropriate)?”

“Here, brahmin, a certain person destroys living beings (takes what has not been given), is of wrong conduct as to sensual desires, speaks falsely, is of slanderous speech, is harsh-spoken, talks frivolously, is covetous, malevolent in mind and) of wrong view. At the breaking up of the body after dying he arises in hell. He sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever is the food of the creatures of hell. This, brahmin, is a place that is not (appropriate); those alms are of no benefit to one who remains there.

*A 269-271.
“Here, brahmin, a certain person destroys living beings... is of wrong view. At the breaking up of the body after dying [28] he arises in the animal womb. He sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever is the food of the creatures of the animal womb. This, brahmin, is a place that is not (appropriate); those alms are of no benefit to one who remains there.

“Here, brahmin, a certain person refrains from destroying living beings (refrains from taking what has not been given, refrains from wrong conduct as to sensual desires, refrains from speaking falsely, refrains from slanderous speech, refrains from being harsh-spoken, refrains from talking frivolously, is not covetous, nor malevolent in mind and) is of right view. At the breaking up of the body after dying he arises in the company of human beings. (He sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever is the food of human beings. This, brahmin, is a place that is not (appropriate); those alms are of no benefit to one who remains there.

“Here, brahmin, a certain person refrains from destroying living beings... is of right view. At the breaking up of the body after dying he arises in the company of the devas. He sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever is the food of the devas. This, brahmin, is a place that is not (appropriate); those alms are of no benefit to one who remains there.

“Here, brahmin, a certain person destroys living beings... is of wrong view. At the breaking up of the body after dying he arises on the peta-plane. He sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever is the food of the creatures of the peta-plane. Or he sustains himself there, he maintains himself there, on whatever his friends, companions or relatives and blood-relations offer up from here. This, brahmin, is the (appropriate) place; those alms are of benefit to one who remains there.”

“But if, master Gotama, that peta who was our relative and blood-relation has not arisen in that place, who is it that enjoys the alms?”

“Other petas, brahmin, who were your relatives and blood-relations who have arisen in that place – these enjoy the alms.”

“But if, master Gotama, that peta who was our relative and blood-relation has not arisen in that place and other petas who were our relatives and blood-relations have also not arisen in that place – who is it that enjoys the alms?”

“But this is impossible, brahmin, this cannot be, that that place should be empty for so long a time of those petas who were your relatives and blood-relations. And anyway, brahmin, those who give are not without fruit.”
Then to show that those who have arisen on the peta-plane are sustained by what is given from here in the absence of any other (source) such as cultivation and cattle-rearing and so on that might be a reason of their obtaining excellence (the verse) beginning: ‘For (there is) no’ was said.

6 Herein for there is no cultivation there (na hi tattha kasāṭ attī): for there is no cultivation on that peta-plane dependent upon which the petas might live in comfort. Nor is there here any cattle-rearing known (gorakkha ettha na wījjatt): here, on this peta-plane, not only is there no cultivation, there is, moreover, also no cattle-rearing known [29] dependent upon which they might live in comfort. Nor are there such things as trading (vaṭṭijjā tādist n’ attī): nor are there even such things as trading which might be a cause of their obtaining excellence. And buying and selling with gold (hiraṇṇena kayakkayan): nor are there even such things as buying and selling with gold which might be a cause of their obtaining excellence. The petas, those who have passed on, are there sustained by what is given from here (sītu dinnena yāpenti petā kālagatā tahīn): they are sustained, they continue their existence, entirely by what is given from here by their relatives or by their friends and companions. The petas (petā): those creatures who have arisen on the peta-plane. Those who have passed on (kālagatā): those who have passed on on account of its being the time of their death. An alternative reading is those who have died (kālakatā): those who have done their (kammic) time, those who have done their dying, those who have reached their death. There (tahīn): on that peta-plane. He then uttered the two verses (beginning:) ‘As water rained on the uplands’ to illustrate by way of a simile the meaning of what had just been said.

7-8 This is the meaning: just as water poured down by clouds on the uplands, on elevated ground, on high ground, flows down to the lowlands, goes to the hollows, to that portion of the ground that is low-lying, so in that same way do the alms given from here benefit the petas, accrue to them on the appearance of their fruit. The world of the petas where the alms are of benefit is like the low-lying place to which the water flows down. He said accordingly, ‘This, brahmin, is the (appropriate) place; those alms are of benefit to one who remains there.’ And just as streams, mighty rivers, that become swollen with water falling from mountain clefts and crevices, from gullies and ravines, from pools and great lakes, swell the ocean, even so do alms given from here benefit the petas in the aforesaid manner. Since the petas who go to the house of their relatives desperately hoping that they may get something from there are not able to beg, ‘Please give us this!’, he therefore uttered the verse (beginning:’
'He gave to me' showing that the son of the family should make a donation recollecting memorable occasions concerning them.

9 This is the meaning: he gave to me those riches or that grain; he worked for me himself completely fulfilling what had to be done; since so and so was connected on my mother's or my father's side he was a relative, 65 [30] since he was capable of being my refuge 66 on account of his affection he was a friend; whilst since so and so was my playmate in making mud pies he was a companion. Recalling all this one should give donations for the petas, one should consign the alms (to them). An alternative reading is a donation is to be given (dakkhīna dalā): recalling, by recalling, 67 what they used to do in this manner, with this 'He gave to me' and so on, a donation is to be given for the petas — this is what is said. This is the accusative case (recalling, anussaram) with the scope of the instrumental (by recalling, anussaratā). 68

10-11 He uttered the verse (beginning:) 'No amount of weeping' showing that whilst beings persist in continual weeping and sorrow and so on 69 at the death of relatives they give nothing for their benefit and that this weeping and sorrow and so on are merely and entirely to their own self-torture 70 which provides nothing of benefit to the petas. He then uttered a further verse (beginning:) 'But this' to demonstrate the useful nature of the donation given by the king of Magadha. The meaning of these is just the same as that given above. 70

12 The Lord then uttered the concluding verse (beginning:) 'Now (this), the duty to one's relatives' praising the king on account of these genuine qualities, that is, since by the king giving that donation, by his doing what should be done by one relative for another, 71 the duty to one's relatives has been pointed out, it has been made known 72 to the many people, pointing out and making it known that they too should fulfil their duty to their relatives in this same way; and by causing the petas to come into possession of heavenly excellence the highest honour has been paid to the petas; by his satisfying with food and drink and so on the order of monks with the Buddha at its head strength has been furnished to the monks; and by giving rise to a generous intent accompanied by the quality of pity and so on not trifling the meritorious deed pursued. Herein the duty to one's relatives (nātidhammo): the performance of what should be done by one relative for another. Highest (sulārā): beneficial, magnificent. Strength (balam): physical strength. Pursued (pasutam): accumulated. Now here, by means of (the statement) 'Now this, the duty to one's relatives, has been pointed out' the Lord instructed 73 the king with a talk on Dhamma for his indicating 74 the duty to one's relatives is here an instruction. 75 By means of (the statement) 'And the highest honour has been paid to the
petas' he roused him for his praising as 'highest a is here a rousing as to his paying that honour again and again. By means of (the statement) 'Strength has been furnished to the monks' he whetted him for the furnishing of strength to the monks is here a whetting by increasing his effort in furnishing strength in that particular manner. By means of (the statement) 'And not trifling the meritorious deed pursued by you' he made him bristle with joy for the commendation of pursuing meritorious deeds is here making him bristle with joy on account of the nature of his description of his genuine qualities. This is how it should be construed here, this is the way in which it is to be understood.

At the end of this teaching insight into the Dhamma arose to eighty-four thousand beings through properly striving, their hearts having been agitated by this description of the distressing circumstances of arising on the peta-plane. On the day(s) that followed too he taught this same Outside the Walls teaching to devas and men such that for seven days there arose this very same insight into the Dhamma.

1 The story is also found, with minor differences, at KhpA 201-216, translated at Minor Readings and Illustrator pp. 223-241.
2 Reading 'etam ṭhapetvā añānā ...' with Se Be for text's etam ṭhapetvā 'añānā ...
3 Reading likham with Be KhpA for text's likhapanā (Se likhitapanā); cp PFD s likhā.
4 Reading dānam pavattāpesi with Be KhpA for text's Se dānavatthum pesesi.
5 Reading pavāritā with Be (KhpA pavārīte) for text's Se saparivārā te hi; the Pavārāṇa ceremony marks the end of the residence of the rainy season.
6 Reading paccāgaminpu with Se Be for text's āgamimpu.
7 This present acon is considered auspicious in that it will see no less than five Buddhas, viz. Kassapandha, Konāgamaṇa, Kasapa, our own Gotama and Metteyya, the Buddha who is yet to come; see for instance Dīla 61 ff. for the list of Buddhas in which Kassapandha is said to have been preceded by a further three Buddhas, beginning with Vipassī ninety-one acons ago. This list is further expanded in texts such as the Buddhavamsa and Thūpavamsa in which Phussa is said to have appeared in the acon prior to that in which Vipassī arose, or, as our text states, ninety-two acons ago, and that Phussa was himself preceded by some seventeen earlier Buddhas.
8 Buddha-intervals, unlike acons, are not specific periods since though this auspicious acon will see five Buddhas, a full sixty acons elapsed between Vipassī and his successor Sākha.
9 Reading brahmānukule with Se Be KhpA for text's kulesu.
10 Jiññā, see Viṁa 24 for a detailed account of these three.
11 Identified by Malalasekera as the hill somewhat to the southwest of Gayā now known as Brahmāyoni and an important place of pilgrimage for Hindus (DPPN i 753). There is a spring (yoni) near the summit which is thought to be connected with the warm water baths of the Brahmakund at Rajgir (Rajagaha) some distance away. It seems likely that the present Brahmakund may be situated upon the same site where the Tāpadā Park once stood — cp KS i 14 n. 5 and DPPN 1992.
12 vinicī.
nabuta.

Agga and Magadha were originally two separate states that seem to have become united by the time of the text.

These verses may be found in full at V.

Reading  api ca kho with Se Be KhpA for text's  saha kho.

Reading pacca"imsatā with Se Be for text's pacca"imsatā.

hiyo, not listed by PED.

Reading ajidatāya with Se Be KhpA for text's svatanāya, the following day.

See A v 81-82 for the ten risks run by the monk who goes there for alms.

kalam, Nelumbium.

kuva"aya.

Reading patippassaddhādaratha- with Se Be for text's patippassaddhā daratha-

Reading bhujāni with Se Be for text's bhujāni.

Reading pinnindriyā with Se KhpA for text's pinniyā (Be pinnindriya); cp PL Dav nindiyā.

Reading dibbavatthāsādapa"cattaranāyā""ga""kārava"khayo with Se Be for text's dibbavatthā dibbapāsādā sāyā"pacattaranānākārava"khayo.

Reading ettā with Se Be and cty below for text's ettā.

Reading kālagā with Be KhpA for text's kākātā; cp cty-below.

Reading text's 7 ab as 6 as required by the cty below.

At A ii 244 the posture of petas is said to be lying flat on their backs.

Reading gharassandhi"bhittisandhi"lokasa"ndhiyo with Se Be KhpA for text's gharassandhi bhittisandhi lokasa"ndhiyo; by 'house-junctions' are meant crevices and joints in houses, by 'wall-junctions' either joints or holes in walls whilst by 'light-junctions' slits for looking through.

Reading singhāpatha with Be KhpA (Se singhātakani) for text's singhāpatha with ko"parachā.

See discussion at Minor Readings and Illustrator p. 228 n. 4.

Reading anahāvatupubbā with Se Be KhpA for text's anahāvutthe pubbā.

KhpA 207 claims, on the contrary, that pa"hāne (the reading of our text) is a careless reading for pawhe though our text Se Be are unanimous here.

Reading kara"habhāvato with Se Be for text's karabhāvato.

Reading tam hi with Se Be KhpA for text's tabha.

Reading anappake pi with Se Be for text's anappakei.

Se Be add rāhā, by the king, here.

Reading "parbhogayogakālena with Se Be for text's yogyā-

Reading tadupadesena with Be for text's tadapadesa (Se tadapadesa).

Reading dātabbākārandassanam with Se Be KhpA for text's kārandassanam.

That is, with no, our, in place of the pre"ekte vo.

Reading na a"nassa phala"ṭa" hotī with Se Be for text's a"nassas phala hoti dinama hotī.

Reading tam vatthu ašipetā"nam with Se Be for text's vuttapetā"nam.

It is curious that apart from the hint at Pāt 69 below that some petas might be capable of making a tiny amount of merit no mention is made elsewhere throughout the whole of this commentary of what would seem to be a very significant point of doctrine. More often one is led to believe that petas, like all in the lower three gatis, are incapable of either making merit or of the Brahma-faring. It may be that Dhammapāla is here importing an idea from KhpA.

Se Be omit.

Reading avij̄hantā with Se Be KhpA for text's avij̄hamānā.

Reading no with Se Be KhpA for text's vo.

Se Be KhpA add paricegama"yam here.

Reading phala"ṭanato with Se Be KhpA for text's phala"ṭanato.
Reading etthāma with Be KhpA for text's etthā hi; Se reads tattha hi.
Reading eva with Se Be KhpA for text's evam.
Reading eva with Se Be KhpA for text's evam.
Saddhāni — so A v 269, KhpA and our text's vi whereas text, Se Be all substitute puññāni which is less preferable given the context of Brāhmaṇic ritual.
Omitted, apparently in error, at GS v 181.
So A v 269; text Se Be KhpA all abbreviate both here and below.
So A v 270; text abbreviates and should be amended to read with Se Be KhpA manussānam sahavyaṁ upppajjati — pe — devaṁ ha sahavyaṁ upppajjati.
Reading idam piko with Se Be KhpA for text's idam kho.
Pettivisayam; so also A v 270 Se Be. KhpA reads pittivisayam as do the vii of our text and A v 270. See next.

It is clear from the majority of these stories that the food of the creatures of the peta-plane is either repulsive matter such as excrement and urine, pus and blood or, perhaps more frequently, the lack of any food at all. Moreover when alms are assigned to this and that peta we find that it is not so much a case of them being sustained, as petas, by such offerings but rather that, by means of such offerings, they are transformed into yakkaḥs or vimāna-owning devatas. This would in turn explain the different readings of the previous note since the peta sustained by offerings from relatives and so on approximates more closely to the Brāhmaṇic pit (or intermediary preta) rather than the Buddhists (suffering) peta. In this Aṅguttara passage 'petas' may mean nothing more than 'departed'.
Reading etam with Se Be KhpA for text's etam.
Here ends the Aṅguttara quote.
Reading Petā ti pettivisayuppapanā sattā. Kālakātā ti attano maranākālena gataṁ. Kālakātā ti vā pāpho, kathakāla... with Be KhpA for text's peta pettivisayuppapanā kālakātalittano maranākālena gataṁ. Kālakātā ti vā pāpho, kathakāla... Se resembles our text but with superior punctuation.
Reading idam kho with A v 270 Be KhpA for text's Se idam.
Reading nāthi sinehavasena with Se Be for text's nāṭisinehavasena.
Reading tāhasammatthatāya with Se Be KhpA for text's ṭhānaṁ.
Reading anussaratā with Se Be KhpA for text's anussaraṇā.
Reading runnasokādipā with Se Be KhpA for text's maṇnasokādi varṇa.
Reading attapanandattam with Se Be for text's attapanitāpanam.
PvA 18-19.
Reading nātiṇam nāthihi with Se Be KhpA for text's nāṭhihi; see also cty below.
Reading pākojato kato with Be for text's pākojato.
Sandassāsi, not listed by P.LD. This and the three following verbs — roused, whetted, made him bristle with joy — are found elsewhere in similar passages describing the process by which a person is led towards insight; see for instance D ii 42 and cp M ii 48, D i 126 etc. At S v 162 the ability is ascribed to Sāriputta.
Reading nātiḍhammassassanam with Be for text's Se nāṭidhammassassanam; KhpA reads nāṭdassanam, pointing out, which agrees with the verse and would therefore be preferable.
Reading h'cettha sandassanam with Be KhpA for text's Se hetusandassanam.
Reading punapunanurājan samādapanam with Se Be KhpA for text's punappupaṇurājan samādapanam.
Reading evam viḍhānam batunoppadāne with Se Be for text's eva va viḍhānāthabilunoppadāne ti.
Reading sampahampanam with Be for text's sampahampanam.
Reading sampahampanabhāvena with Se Be KhpA for text's sampahampanabhiya.
Reading pettivisayuppattatiṁ duṇāsasyaṁvayaṁpanena with Be KhpA (= Se) for text's pettivisayuppattitiṁ duṇām ṣaṁvayaṁpanena.
'Naked and of hideous appearance are you.' This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning a petī who devoured her five sons.

It is said that in a village not far from Sāvatthī the wife of a certain man of property was barren. His relatives said, 'Your chief-wife is barren; we must fetch you another bride', but he was unwilling on account of his affection for his wife. Now when his wife heard the news, she said to her husband, 'I am barren, my lord; another bride must be fetched — do not let the family line be severed', and, being urged by her, he took another bride who in due course became pregnant. The barren woman thought, 'When she has had her son she will become mistress of this house', and, overcome by envy, seeking some means of causing her to miscarry, she satisfied with food and drink and so on a certain female who had gone forth and had her make her miscarry. When she miscarried (the second wife) informed her mother and her mother summoned together her relatives and made them aware of the matter. They accused the barren woman of being responsible for her miscarriage but she denied it, saying, 'I am not responsible.' They replied, 'If you are not responsible for the miscarriage then make an oath!' [32] She made her oath, lying, 'If I am responsible for this miscarriage then may I be destined to a state of misery in which, overcome by hunger and thirst, I might give birth each morning and evening to five sons and then devour them, yet find no satisfaction; moreover, may I always be foul smelling and surrounded by flies!' [33] She died not long afterwards and arose as a petī of hideous appearance not far from that same village. At that time eight elders who had spent the residence of the rainy season in that district and were on their way to Sāvatthī to see the Teacher went for rest to a shaded and well watered spot in the forest not far from that village. The petī then revealed herself to those elders and the senior elder amongst them questioned that petī with this verse:

1 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you; you emit a foul, putrid smell. You are surrounded by flies — now who are you, you who are stood here?'

1 Herein naked (naggā): unclothed. Of hideous appearance are you (dubbāṇṇarūpāsi): extremely deformed are you, endowed with an appearance that is a quite disgusting sight. A foul smell (duggandhā): a disagreeable smell. You emit a putrid smell (pūti vāyasi): you emit the smell of a
junctions and light-junctons are called ‘junctons’ whilst ‘road-forks’ are places where three roads meet. Stand at the door-posts (dvārabāḥāsu titṭhanti): stand leaning against the posts of the city gates and of the doors of houses. They go to their own house (āgantvāna sakam gharam): ‘their own house’ can be the house of a former relative as well as their own house in which they dwelt as owners. Since they come regarding both these as their own he therefore said, ‘They go to their own house.’ The Lord said the verse (beginning:) ‘They stand outside the walls’ showing the king the many petas, who were extremely ugly, deformed and terrible to behold, undergoing the fruit of envy and selfishness and who were stood outside the walls and so on having come to Bimbisāra’s residence regarding it as their own house since it was the house of a former relative though they themselves had not formerly dwelt there in the past. He then uttered the second verse (beginning:) ‘Though abundant food and drink’ showing the dreadful nature of the deed done by them.

2 Herein abundant (pahūte): plentiful, much, meaning as much as is needed. [25] It is permissible to substitute the syllable pa for the syllable ba [thus transforming bahu into text’s pahu] as in such passages as ‘Though possessing plenty he does not support...’ (pahu santo na bharati). Some however read ‘abundant’ (bahuke) but this is a careless reading. Food and drink: annapānami=anne ca pāne ca (resolution of compound in alternative grammatical form). Foods hard and soft: khajjabhojje=khajje ca bhojje ca (resolution of compound); by means of these (four) he indicated the four sorts of food: that which is eaten, drunk, chewed and savoured. Are served (upaṭṭhite): are begun (upagamma) to be set out (thite), meaning are given out, are got ready. No one remembers those creatures (na tesaṁ koci sarati satānaṁ): no one, neither their mother nor father nor son nor grandson remembers those creatures who have arisen on the peta-plane. For what reason? On account of their deeds. By reason of that miserly deed that they themselves did consisting in the failure to give and the prevention of that almsgiving and so on — it is this deed of theirs that does not allow their relatives to remember them. When he had shown how, in spite of the existence of plentiful food and drink and so on, due to that wicked deed there was not even the slightest recollection on the part of those relatives of the petas waiting in expectation of (a gift from) their relatives, the Lord then uttered the third verse (beginning:) ‘(So they who possess pity) give for their relatives’ praising alms given on behalf of relatives who have arisen on the peta-plane.

3 Herein so (evaṁ) is a term of comparison. It can be construed in two ways: though they do not remember those creatures on account of

*Sī 98.
‘Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you devour the flesh of your sons?’

Herein evil deed (dukkatā): evil conduct. As a result of which deed? (kissa kammāvākēna): as a result of what sort of deed, meaning did you destroy a living being or was it some other (deed) such as taking what had not been given and so on? Some read ‘as a result of which deed?’ (kena kammāvākēna).

[34] Then that pittî, relating to the elder the deed she had done, said:

‘My co-wife became pregnant and I devised a wicked deed against her: depraved in mind I caused her to miscarry.

Her two month old embryo flowed out just like blood; then her mother became angry with me and collected her relatives together; she made me make an oath and (them) abuse me.

I told a terrible lie when I made that oath that if this were done by me I might devour the flesh of my sons.

It is both as a result of that deed and due to the fact that I lied that I devour the flesh of my sons and am smeared with blood and matter.’

Herein co-wife (sapatī) is said of a woman with the same husband. And I devised a wicked deed against her (tassā pāpaṁ acatayīṁ): and I planned a wicked and gruesome deed against her, against that co-wife. Depraved in mind (paduttihāmanasā): with depraved intent or with a depraved mind.

Two month old (dvemāsiko): having been established (in the womb) for two months it was two months old. Flowed out just like blood (lohiṁ niya pagghari): as it perished it became just like blood and streamed out. Then her mother became angry with me and collected her relatives together (tad assā matā kupitā mayham nāti samānayi): then my co-wife’s mother became angry with me and summoned her relatives together. An alternative reading is tat’ assā which divides into the two words tato assā (thereupon her). Oath (sapatam): oath. And (made them) abuse (paribhāsāpayī ca): and (made them) threaten and frighten.

I told a lie when I made that oath (sapatam musāvādam abhāssam): I told a lie when I made that oath, that is, there was no truth in my pointing out that I had not done what I had in fact done, saying, ‘If this were done by me I might be such and such.’ If this were done by me I might devour the flesh of my sons (puttamaṁsaṁ khādāmi sac’ etam pakatam mayā): [35] this then shows the nature of oath made, meaning that if this wicked deed, this miscarriage, were done by me, I might devour
nothing but the flesh of my sons in my future renewed becoming and rebirth.

9 Of that (tassa): of that deed of destroying a living being committed by way of that miscarriage. And due to the fact that I lied (musāvādassaccā): and due to that act of lying. It is both (ubhayam): it is on account of the results of both deeds; this accusative case has the force of the instrumental. I am smeared with blood and matter (pubbalohitamakkhita): I devour the flesh of my sons after I have become smeared with blood and matter through giving birth and tearing (the sons) apart — this is how it should be construed.

When the pettip had thus declared the results of her deeds she spoke once more to the elder (saying), 'Venerable sir, I used to be the wife of the man of property so and so in this very village but I was overcome by envy and did a wicked deed and have thus arisen in the peta-womb. Venerable sir, would you please go to the home of that man of property. He will present you with alms — have him dedicate that donation to me for in this way my release from here, from this world of the petas, will come about.' When the elders heard this they (went), pitying her and full of mercy, and entered the home of that man of property in search of alms. When that man of property saw the elders he went out, full of devotion, to meet them, took their bowls, had them be seated and began to-feed them with the choicest food. The elders reported the incident to the man of property and had him dedicate the almsgiving to the peti. At that very moment that peti was rid of that misery and, having obtained supreme excellence, she revealed herself that night to the man of property. The elders went in due course to Sāvatthi and raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

\footnote{pajāpati, here clearly not in the sense of 'one who has offspring' or 'having (or rich in) progeny' as suggested by PED sv.}
\footnote{Reading paribbajikaṁ with Se Be for text's paribbañjakaṁ.}
\footnote{Reading nivedesi with Be for text's vedesi; Se reads pavedesi.}
\footnote{Reading makkhikāpanikīṇṇā with Se Be and \textit{v. 1} below for text's -panikkhīṇṇā.}
\footnote{At p. 12, line 10, Gehman probably intended us to read 'fate' rather than 'date'.}
\footnote{Masculine accusative plural with neuter inflexion.}
\footnote{udaraggaṇā, literally with the fire of the belly or stomach.}
\footnote{Reading pubbalohitamakkhitā with Se Be for text's -makkhikā both here and in the cty below. In \textit{v. 1} she was said to be surrounded by flies (makkhikā), no mention being made there of her being smeared (makkhitā) with blood and matter, which she now seems to feel requires explanation rather than the flies. It seems likely that the similarity of the two terms has led to their confusion at some point. Gehman is surely not correct in taking pubba as 'of the past' here.}
1.7 EXPOSITION OF THE DEVOURER OF SEVEN SONS
PETA STORY
[Sattaputtakhādakapetavatthu vaṇṇana]

[36] ‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning a petī who devoured her seven sons.

It is said that in a certain village not far from Sāvatthī there was a lay-follower with two sons who were in the prime of life, handsome and endowed with virtue and good conduct. Their mother despised her husband because of her power of sons, thinking, ‘I am possessed of sons,’ and he having had enough of her despite, took another bride who not long afterwards became pregnant. The first wife was overcome by envy and persuaded a certain physician, in return for a fee, to cause the miscarriage of her three month old embryo. Now when questioned by her husband and relatives as to whether she was responsible for her miscarriage she lied and denied it saying, ‘I am not responsible.’ As they did not believe her they said, ‘Then make an oath!’ She made her oath, saying, ‘May I give birth each morning and evening to seven sons and may I devour the flesh of those sons; moreover, may I always be foul smelling and surrounded by flies!’ She died in due course and arose in the peta-womb through fruition of her (causing that) miscarriage and of her telling that lie and wandered about not far from that same village eating the flesh of her sons in the aforesaid manner. Now at that time many elders who had spent the residence of the rainy season by staying up that village and were on their way to Sāvatthī to see the Lord were resting for the night at a place not far from that village. The petī then revealed herself to those elders and the senior elder questioned her with this verse:

1 ‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you; you emit a foul, putrid smell. You are surrounded by flies – now who are you, you who are stood here?’

When questioned by the elder she answered him with three verses:
'I, sir, am a peti, gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama; having done a wicked deed, I have gone from here to the world of the petas.

At daybreak I give birth to seven sons and in the evening again a further seven — though I devour them all, even these are not enough for me.

[37] My heart smoulders and is scorched with hunger and I can get no refreshment — I am tormented as though burnt by fire.'

Herein refreshment (nibbutim): relief from the misery of hunger and thirst. I can get no (nādhigacchāmi): I can obtain no. I am tormented as though burnt by fire (aggidaṭṭhā va āṭape): I am tormented with extreme heat as though I were being burnt by fire (since) I can get no refreshment — this is how it should be construed.

When he heard this the elder uttered this verse questioning her about the deed she had done:

'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you devour the flesh of your sons?'

That peti then spoke these verses relating how she had arisen in the world of the petas and the reason for her devouring her sons:

'I had two sons who had both reached adolescence; I neglected my husband,

Whereupon my husband became angry and took another as co-wife; and when she became pregnant I devised a wicked deed against her:

Depraved in mind I caused her to miscarry and her three month old embryo fell as putrid blood.

Then her mother became angry at this and collected her relatives together; she made me make an oath and (them) abuse me.

I told a terrible lie when I made that oath that if this were done by me I might devour the flesh of my sons.

It is both as a result of that deed and due to the fact that I lied that I devour the flesh of my sons and am smeared with blood and matter.'

Herein endowed with the power of sons: puttabaluspetā=puttabalena upetā (resolution of compound); the power derived by way of her sons.

I despised (atimaññissanā): I spoke against, I disparaged.

Fell as putrid blood (pūtilohitsato pati): the embryo fell after becoming a bloody corpse.

All the rest is just the same as that immediately preceding with the sole
difference that there were eight elders whilst here there are many
and that there were five sons whilst here there are seven.

1 Reading puttavatī ahaṁ ti puttabaliṣṇa with Be (Se reads puttavasena in place of
puttabaliṣṇa) for text's puttavasena alone. See n. 6 below.
2 Reading dassei with Se Be for text's dāsasi.
3 Reading dhūmayati khudāya with Se Be and 1 64 above for text's dhūmayati
kudāya.
4 Reading ati-unha-ātāpe aggiṁ ēyhamānā with Be (Se -unhe) for text's ati-
unha-ātāpe aggijāyhamānā; cp PV 174.
5 Reading sampattayobbanā with Se Be for text's -yobhanā.
6 pudgalupetiḥ, one of the five powers of men, the others being beauty, wealth,
kin and virtue, possessed of which a woman cannot be taken by the neck and thrown
out of the family — see S iv 246-248 and KS iv 167 n. 1; it cannot be the strength of
the sons as Gehman suggests.

1.8 EXPOSITION OF THE OX PETĀ STORY
[Gopāpetavatthuvamāṇanā]

[38] ‘Why do you, like a madman.’ The Teacher who was staying in the
Jeta Grove told this concerning a certain man of property whose father
had died.

It is said that in Sāvatthi the father of a certain man of property had
died. His heart was stricken with grief at the death of his father and he
would wonder about like a madman with a lamenting heart asking whomev-
ever he saw, ‘You’ve seen my father, haven’t you?’ But no one could dispel
his grief. His potential, however, for realising the sotāpatti-fruit shone in
his heart like a lamp in a jar. The Teacher, who was surveying the world
towards dawn, saw his potential for realising the sotāpatti-fruit and thought,
‘When I have recounted his past actions and relieved his grief it would be
proper to give1 him the sotāpatti-fruit.’ On the following day whilst
returning from his almsround after his meal he took his attendant2 and
went to the door of his house. When he heard that the Teacher had come
he went out to meet him and had him enter his house. When the Teacher
was seated on the appointed seat, he himself saluted the Lord and, seated
on one side, asked, ‘Lord, do you know the place to which my father has
gone?’ The Teacher then replied, ‘Are you asking about your father in
this present life, layfollower, or (those) in the long past?’ When he heard
these words he thought, ‘I have had many fathers’, at which his grief
subsided and he gained a little equanimity. The Teacher then gave him a
talk on Dhamma to dispel his grief and, when he knew that his grief had
derparted and that his heart was ready, then by means of that Teaching on
Dhamma which (the Buddhas) have themselves discovered (— ill, uprising,
stripping, the way —) he established him in the sotāpatti-fruit and then
went to his vihāra. The monks then began to talk amongst themselves in
the Dhamma-hall, saying, ‘Behold, friends, the great power of the Buddha
in that a lay-follower who was overcome by the greatest grief has been
guided by the Lord into the sotāpatti-fruit in just an instant.’ [39] The
Teacher went there and seated himself on the seat of honour prepared for
the Buddha and asked, ‘For the purpose of what discussion, monks, are
you now seated together here?’ The monks reported the topic (of their
conversation) to the Lord. When the Teacher said, ‘It is not just on this
occasion, monks, that I have dispelled his grief; I similarly dispelled it
on a former occasion too’, they begged him to recount (that incident) of
long ago.

Long ago in Benares the father of a certain householder died. He was
overcome by grief and lamentation at the death of his father and with a
tearful face he wailed and beat his breast as he circumambulated his
funeral pile by the right. His son, named Sujāta, was an intelligent and
clever young man and full of wisdom and, whilst thinking about some
means of removing his father’s grief, he saw one day a dead ox outside the
city. He brought some grass and water and placed them in front of it and,
giving it a mouthful, stood there ordering it as though it were alive, saying,
‘Eat, eat; drink, drink!’ When the passers-by saw him they said, ‘Sujāta,
my dear, have you gone quite mad in that you should offer grass and water
to a dead ox?’, but he said nothing in reply. The people went to his father
and said, ‘Your son has gone mad and is giving grass and water to a dead
ox.’ When he heard this that man of property’s grief for his father de-
parted. Agitated at the thought, ‘They say my son has gone mad’, he sped
there and reprimanded him, saying, ‘Sujāta, are you not wise and clever
and full of intelligence? Why are you giving grass and water to a dead ox?’,
and uttered these two verses:

1  ‘Why do you, like a madman, cut green grass and mutter, “Eat, eat!”
to an old ox whose life is gone?

2  For it is not by food or drink that this dead ox would rise; you are
a fool, an oaf, and an idiot just like anyone else.’

Herein why (kin nu) is a word of interrogation. Like a madman
(ummattarūpo va): like one who is by nature mad, like one mentally
deranged: [40] Cat: lāyitvā=lāvītvā (alternative grammatical form). Green
grass (haritaṃ tināṃ): fresh grass. Mutter (lapasi): talk idly. Whose life is
gone (gatasattan): devoid of life. Old ox (jaraggavāṃ): a frail ox, an ox
that has been used for ploughing.

2 By food or drink (annena pānena): by either this green grass or the
water you have given. This dead ox would rise (mato goṇo samutt(hahe):
even if this ox that has died were to regain life it would not rise. You are a
fool, an oaf (tvām 'si bālo ca dummedho): you are a fool since you are
attached to foolishness, an oaf since you lack that insight known as wis-
dom. And an idiot just like anyone else (yathā t'añña' eva dumnati) means
that you thus lament to no purpose just like anyone else lacking insight
might. Yathā taṃ (untranslated) is a mere particle. Just like anyone else
(añña' eva) means that though you possess insight you have become as
idiotic as any other idiotic person and talk in a confused manner.8

When he heard this Sujāta uttered these two verses to make his inten-
tion known to his father:

3 These legs, this head, this body with its tail and the eyes remain just
as they were: this ox might rise.

4 But grandfather’s hands, legs, body and head are not to be seen — is
it not rather you that is the idiot, weeping at his earthen mound?9

3 This is the meaning: these four legs, this drum-like head together
with the tail of this ox still exist, this body with its tail and these eyes re-
main just as they were before death and lack any sign of having perished.10
This ox might rise (avyām goṇo samutt(hahe): due to this reason the thought
might occur to me that this ox might rise, might get up. Some read I think
the ox might rise (maṅge goṇo samutt(hahe): for this reason I might think
that this ox might suddenly raise his body; such a notion might present
itself to me — this is the meaning.

4 [41] Then he taught his father Dhamma saying, ‘But grandfather’s,
but my grandsire’s, hands, legs, body and head are not to be seen. It is not
rather you alone, father, that is, however, the idiot, the one lacking in-
sight, a hundred, a thousand times over, as you weep at a mound made of
earth after enclosing his bones therein? Conditioned things are by nature
perishable and perish; you know this11 so why the lamentation?’ When he
heard this the father of the Bodhisatta thought, ‘My son is wise — he per-
formed this deed to teach me’ (and said), ‘My dear Sujāta, it is well known
that all living beings are subject to death. Henceforth I will mourn no
more: so it should be for those such as are able to dispel their grief’, and
then he spoke four verses in praise of his son:

5 ‘I was truly ablaze, being like a fire fed with ghee; but now all my
sorrow has been extinguished as if I had been sprinkled with water.
Truly the dart, the grief, that had pierced my heart has been drawn out. You have dispelled that grief, the grief for my father which had overwhelmed me.

With dart withdrawn I am become tranquil and cool; since hearing you, young man, I no longer grieve nor weep.¹²

Just as Sujāta distracted¹³ his father from his grief—so act the wise who possess¹⁴ pity.

Herein I was a blaze (ādittam): I had been set alight and was burning with the fire of sorrow. Being: santam=samānaṃ (alternative grammatical form). Fire (pāvakam): fire. As if I had been sprinkled with water (vārinā viya oṣiḥcaṃ): as if I were being sprinkled¹⁵ with water. But now all my sorrow has been extinguished (sabbaṃ nibbāpaye daram): but now all the distress in my heart has been extinguished.

Truly has been drawn out (abbuḷha vata): truly has been driven out.

The dart (sallam): the dart of grief. That had pierced my heart (hadayani-sitam): the dart that had become lodged in my heart. That grief which had overwhelmed (sokaparaṭassa): that grief which had overcome. The grief for my father (pitusokam): the grief that had arisen with respect to my father. You have dispelled (āpiṇudī): you have removed.

Since hearing you, young man (tava sutvāna mānava): however, since hearing your words, my boy, I now no longer grieve nor weep.

Just as Sujāta (distracted) his father (Sujāto pitaraṃ yathā): just as this Sujāta distracted his father from his grief, so also do those other wise people who possess pity, [42] who are by nature helpful, act in the same way, meaning they act to the benefit of their fathers and others.

When he had heard the words of the young man, the father lost his sorrow. He bathed his head, ate (again) and conducted his business and when he died he was one bound for heaven.

When the Teacher had recounted this teaching on Dhamma, he explained the (Four Noble) Truths to those monks, at the end of which many were established in the sotāpatti-fruit.

It was our Saviour of the World¹⁶ who at that time was Sujāta.

¹dātum; the implication both here and elsewhere in this work is that such potential for realising the sotāpatti-fruit would have remained unrealised had it not been for the gracious intervention of the Buddha.

²pacchāsamanāṃ, the junior monk that walks behind an elder on his almsround, the Buddha always being so accompanied by Ānanda: see Vin i 46, iii 10; PvA 93. Be reads anādāya, did not take, this attendant.

³This should be understood as an extremely condensed version of the stock passage describing the means by which certain individuals were converted by the Buddha:
it can be found in full at, for instance, M i 379f. Cp PvA 195f. Gehman’s ‘uttering a brief address’ misses the point entirely.

4 Reading sokapareto paramasoko with Se for text’s sokamparamosoko; Be reads sokaparidevasamapanno.

5 Reading nisimo with Se Be for text’s nisimo.

6 Reading kandanto with Se Be for text’s karonto; Be however has rattakkho, with red eyes, in place of ‘beat his breast’.

7 Reading tassa with Se for text’s tato; Be omits entirely.

8 Be omits the entire sentence.

9 mattikathupasmim; thūpa (Skt stūpa) in its non-technical Buddhist sense.

10 Reading abhinassanānānī with Se Be for text’s abhinavaa.

11 The text is wrongly punctuated here – the comma following tattha should instead precede it.

13 vv 5–7 recur at Vv 83a–10.

13 Reading vinivattayā as at II 619 below for text’s vinivattantī; cp PED or vinivaljiyi.

14 Reading konti with Se Be for text’s konti.

15 Reading avāsaicanto with Be for text’s Se āsāicanto.

16 Lokānātho, an epithet of the Buddha. Gehman wrongly identifies the Sujāta of this story with the (former) Buddha Sujāta. Rather it is a case of our own (Gotama) Buddha recalling an incident in which he, in a former birth as Sujāta and whilst still the Bodhisatta, helped dispel the grief of the very same man to whom he has just given the sotāpatti-fruit; indeed the cty to v 4 calls Sujāta the Bodhisatta. The story appears in a similar form as the Sujāta Jātaka (No. 352) some of whose details Dhammapāta seems here to assume, such as the fact that his father had stopped eating.

I.9 EXPOSITION OF THE MASTER WEAVER PETA STORY
[Mahāpesakārapetavattthuvanjanā]

‘Excrement and urine, blood and pus.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthi concerning a certain petī who had been a weaver.

It is said that as many as twelve monks had been given a meditation subject1 in the Teacher’s presence and, whilst in search of a dwelling place at the approach of the rainy season, saw a delightful, shaded and well watered spot in the forest with a village for the supply of alms that was neither too far nor too near. They spent the night there and on the following day entered the village in search of alms. Eleven weavers dwelt there. When they saw the monks they became full of joy and led them to their respective2 homes. When they had waited on them with food and drink they asked, ‘Where are you going, sirs?’ ‘We are going to wherever will prove comfortable for us,’ they replied. ‘If this be so, sirs, then you should stay right here,’ they said, and begged them to enter upon the residence of the rainy season (with them), which the monks accepted. The layfollowers
had huts built for them at that place in the forest and presented them to the monks who entered upon the residence of the rainy season there. The chief weaver there waited with due care upon two monks with the four requisites and the others each waited upon one monk. The wife of that chief weaver had neither faith nor devotion but was mean and of wrong view and did not wait with due care upon the monks. When he discovered this (that weaver) fetched her younger sister and put her in charge as mistress of his home. She [43] had faith and devotion and looked after the monks with due care. All of those weavers each gave one cloak to those monks who had spent the rainy season, upon which the mean wife of the senior weaver, being of depraved mind, cursed her husband (saying), 'Whatever food and drink you have given as alms to those recluses who are sons of the Sakya, may it in the next world turn into excrement and urine, blood and pus for you and may those cloaks become red-hot iron plates!' Then in due course that senior weaver died and arose as a tree-devatā in the Viñjha forest endowed with great majesty. But when his miserly wife died she arose as a pett not far from that same dwelling place. She was naked and of hideous appearance and, overcome by hunger and thirst, she approached that terrestrial deva and said, 'My lord, I am unclothed and I wander about overcome by extreme hunger and thirst; please give me some clothes and some food and drink.' He gave her the choicest heavenly food and drink but when she as much as touched them they turned into excrement and urine, blood and pus, and as she put on the cloak it became a red-hot iron plate. Suffering great misery she threw them away and wandered (off) wailing.

Now at that time a certain monk who had spent the rainy season was on his way to salute the Teacher and had entered the Viñjha forest in the company of a large caravan. The caravan proceeded on its journey by night and saw, by day, a densely shaded and well watered spot and unharnessed the oxen and rested for a short while. The monk, however, desired seclusion and went on a little. He laid his upper robe at the foot of a tree, an impenetrable tangle giving dense shade and, exhausted by the night's journey, laid down his tired body and fell asleep. The caravan, having rested, got once more underway but the monk did not awake. He got up in the evening and, unable to see the caravan, [44] set off in the wrong direction and in due course came across the dwelling place of that devatā. When the devaputta saw him he approached in human form and extended a friendly greeting; having him enter his mansion, and gave him some ointment for his feet and so on and sat down in attendance. At this time the pett came, saying, 'My lord, please give me food and drink and a cloak.' He gave these to her but when she as much as touched them they just
became excrement and urine, blood and pus, and red-hot iron plates. When he saw this the monk, full of agitation, questioned that devaputta with these two verses:

1. "She eats excrement and urine, blood and pus -- of what is this the result? Now what deed did this woman do that she always feeds on blood and pus?

2. New clothes, beautiful and soft, clean and like down, when given to her become like (metal) sheets; now what deed did this woman do?"

Herein of what is this the result? (kissa ayaṇaṇ vipāko): of what sort of deed is this the result that she now undergoes? Now what deed did this woman do? (ayaṇaṇ nu kīṃ kammamāḥ akāsi nāti): now what deed did this woman do in the past? That she always feeds on blood and pus (ya ca sabbadā lohitapubbabhakkhā): that she all the time feeds on, eats, only blood and pus.

New (navaṇī): recent, having appeared that very minute. Beautiful (subhāni): lovely and fair to behold. Soft (nudīni): pleasant to touch. Clean (sudhāni): of very pure appearance. Like down (lomasāni): with a pile that is pleasant to touch, meaning lovely. When given to her become like (metal) sheets (dinnān' imissā kitakā va bhavati): become similar to (metal) sheets with spikes, similar to copper plates. An alternative reading is 'become worms' (kitakā bhavanti), meaning they come to resemble insects that bite.

[45] When thus questioned by the monk the devaputta spoke two verses explaining the deed she had done in her previous life:

3. "She was my wife, sir, uncharitable, mean and miserly; when I gave to recluse and brahmins, she insulted me and abused me, saying,

4. "Excrement and urine, blood and pus -- may you eat what is impure for all time! Let this be your (lot) in the next world and may your clothes be like (metal) sheets!" Having been of such bad conduct she has come here having to eat (impurities) for a long while."

Herein uncharitable (adāyikā): she gave nothing to anyone, she lacked the virtue of generosity. Mean and miserly (maccharīti kādirīyā): at first she was mean due to her character (being married by) the stain of selfishness; through her pursuit of selfishness she became extremely mean, (and in the end) she was miserly -- this is how it should be construed. He then said 'When I gave (to recluse and brahmins) she (insulted) me on showing (the extent of) her miserliness. Herein such (etādisaṃ): having been of bad conduct in speech and so on of the aforesaid kind. She has come here (iūhāgatā): she has come to
this world of the petas, she has come into existence as a pett. *Having to eat (impurities) for a long while (cirarattāya khādati):* having to eat only excrement and so on for a long time. For whatever the manner17 of her insult,18 in that same manner19 is its resulting fruit also. An insult20 falls back on oneself, not on him towards whom it was directed, like the fall of a thunderbolt on a peak, the so-called ender of motion on earth.21

When he had thus related the deed she had done in the past, the devaputta then spoke22 once more to the monk (saying), 'Is there, sir, any means by which she might be freed from this world of the petas?' When he said that there was, he said, 'Please tell it, sir.'[46] 'If alms be given to a monk or to but one member of the Lord’s Ariyasaṅgha and then dedicated to her and she shows her appreciation there will thus be freedom for her from this misery here.' When he heard this the devaputta gave to the monk the finest food and drink and assigned that donation to the pett and the pett immediately refreshed and satiated her faculties and, became contented with heavenly food. Then he again gave into the hand of that same monk a pair of heavenly cloaks specifically for the Lord and assigned that donation to the pett, who immediately became dressed in heavenly clothes23 and decorated with heavenly ornaments and, richly endowed with all she desired, she resembled a devāṇympī.24 And that monk reached Sāvatthī that very day by the psychic powers of the devaputta. He went into the Jeta Grove, entered the presence of the Lord, saluted him and then gave him the pair of cloaks. He then raised that issue (with the Lord). The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching on Dhamma was of benefit to those people.

1 kammattāṇāṇaṃ: generally forty are specified: the 10 kasinas, the 10 loathsome objects, the 10 recollections, the 4 Brahmavihāras, the 4 arūpa-jhānas, the perception of the loathsome food and the analysis of the elements. See Path of Purification, Cha. III-XI.
2 Reading attano attano with Se Be for text’s attano.
3 Sakyaputtāṇāṇaṃ: see B of Disc ii pp. xlv–xlvi for a discussion of this term. Here it would seem to serve merely to identify the sect without any racial connotation.
4 rukkhadewatā: at PfA 5 above such arising was considered inferior to that which might have been attained.
5 See PfA 244 below.
6 vimāṇaṃ.
7 Reading pajalita- with Se Be and as earlier for text’s jālita-.
8 Reading dinnāṃ śīmā for text’s dinnāni missā.
9 Text reads kiṭakā, Se Be kitakā; the word is uncertain and seems not to appear elsewhere.
10 Reading bhakkhati with Se Be for text’s bhakkā ti.
11 Reading tāva-d-eva pāṭubhūtāni with Se Be for text’s tāva devapāṭubhūtāni.
11 Reading kitakakṣaktasaddānī with So Be for text’s kitakakṣadiśīnī.
12 So So Be for text’s kitakā.
14 pāṇaka; this sense is not listed by PED but Chidhara suggests worm, insect, flea etc.
15 Reading āśvānātīya with So Be for text’s āśvānāya.
16 Reading thaddhamaccharini with So Be for text’s thadda-
17 Reading yen’ śākāna with So Be for text’s yenā pi kārena.
18 Reading akkuttham with Be for text’s akṣathā; So reads akṣam.
19 Reading ten’ ev’ śākāna with So Be for text’s tena va kārena.
20 Reading akkuttham with Be for text’s akṣathā; So reads akṣam.
21 All texts differ widely here and all seem corrupt. So reads pāṭhaviyā matthaka-
sāṅkhāte matthake asanipāta; Be reads pāṭhaviyam kamantarakaśāṅkhāte matthake asanipāto; whilst text pāṭhaviyam matthakaśāṅkhāte matthake asanipāto though also mentioning two viś of matthakaśāṅkhātena matthake and matthakaśāṅkhātena matthake. Matthake asanipāto seems all right — cp asanipāto matthake nipati at Ap 123 = 421 — but the rest is quite obscure. The two words preceding matthake were probably intended as a gloss or pun on matthake but it is not at all clear what their original form might have been nor whether matthake here means on a mountain peak or on a human head. I read kamantarakaśāṅkhāte with Be which I take to be from kram + antaka- but since none of the readings we have at present is likely to be that intended by Dhammapāla, this interpretation is at best uncertain.
22 Reading bhikkhum āha with So Be for text’s bhikkhum ārabbha ... āha.
23 Reading dibbavathānaraṃthā with So Be for text’s dibbavathānī vathā.
24 devaṭṭha, the Vedic apsaras.

1.10 EXPOSITION OF THE BALD-HEADED PETA STORY
[Khallāṭiyapetavatthuvānanaṭā]¹

‘Now who are you (remaining) inside your mansion?’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthi concerning a certain bald-headed¹ peti.

It is said that long ago in Benares there was a certain harlot who was extremely beautiful and lovely to behold, charming and endowed with the highest beauty of complexion and who had tresses of extremely captivating hair. Her long black hair was soft, fine and sleek and was curled at the ends; it was set in two bunches and when loosened the tresses would hang down as far as her girdle. When they saw her beautiful hair nearly all the young men there fell in love with her. Unable to bear her beautiful hair, some women, overcome with envy, took counsel together² and then bribed her maid-servant to give her a potion that would make her hair fall out. It is said that her servant prepared that potion with her bath-powder and gave it to her at a time when she was bathing in the river Ganges. She moistened her hair well down to the roots and immersed it in the water.
[47] No sooner than she immersed it her hair fell out at the roots and her head resembled a bitter gourd. Then, entirely shorn of hair and looking unsightly like a pigeon with its head plucked, she was, through shame, unable to enter the city. She wrapped a cloth around her head and made her abode at a certain spot outside the city. After a lapse of a few days her shame left her and she pressed some sesamum seed and earned her living by trading in oil and spirituous liquor. One day when two or three drunken men had fallen into a deep sleep she stole their clothes that were hanging loose. Then one day she saw an elder who had destroyed the āsavas going about in search of alms and, with devotion in her heart, led him to her house, had him be seated on the appointed seat and then gave him an oil-cake made from ground sesamum and soaked in oil which he, out of pity for her, accepted and ate whilst she stood with devotion in her heart holding a sunshade above him. The elder showed his appreciation which delighted her heart and then departed. At the very time he showed his appreciation the woman made the wish, 'May my hair be long, soft, sleek and fine and curled at the ends!' She died in due course and as an outcome of her meritorious and demeritorious deeds she arose all alone in a golden mansion in the middle of the ocean. Her hair turned out just as she had wished but she was naked on account of having stolen the men’s cloaks. She arose time and again in that golden mansion and, naked, she passed one Buddha-interval there. Then when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was in due course staying at Sāvatthī, as many as a hundred traders, residents of Sāvatthī, set out by ship across the mighty ocean heading for Suvannabhūmi. The ship in which they had embarked was thrown about by the force of rough winds and, drifting here and there, came to that spot whereupon the vimānapetī revealed herself and her mansion to them. When he saw her the senior trader uttered this verse enquiring:

[48] Now who are you remaining inside your mansion, not coming out? Come out, my dear, let us see you standing outside."

Herein now who are you remaining inside your mansion? (kā nu anto vimānasmiḥ tīthāṁ: he asks, 'Now who are you remaining within, inside your mansion? Are you a human or non-human female?' Not coming out (na upanikkhami): not leaving your mansion. Come out, my dear, let us see you standing outside (upanikkhamassu bhaddde tvāṁ passānaṁ tam bahīṭhitaṁ): my dear, let us see you, we wish to see you, standing outside, so please leave your mansion. An alternative reading is 'Blessings to you! Come out!' (upanikkhamassu bhadddan te), meaning blessings be to you.
She then uttered this verse explaining her inability to come outside:

2 'Naked, I am (too) distressed and embarrassed\(^{13}\) to come outside; I am covered (only) by my hair — few are the meritorious deeds that I have done.'

2 Herein *I am (too) distressed* (*aṭṭiyāmi*): being naked, I am (too) distressed and miserable to come outside. *Embarrassed* (*harāyāmi*): ashamed. *I am covered (only) by my hair* (*kesch' amhi paṭicchannāḥ*): I am covered, my body is hidden (only) by my hair. *Few are the meritorious deeds that I have done* (*puṇṇam me appakaṁ katan*): few, trifling, are the skilled deeds that I have done, the gift of merely (a cake made from) ground sesamum\(^{14}\) — this is the meaning.

Then the trader, wishing to give her his cloak, uttered this verse:

3 'Here, I will give\(^{15}\) you my cloak — put on this garment. When you have put on this garment, then come outside, my pretty one. Come out, my dear, let us see you standing outside.'\(^{16}\)

3 {49} Herein *here* (*handa*): take this. *Cloak* (*uttarāyaṇa*): an upper garment, worn on top, meaning an outer cloak. *I will give you* (*dādāmi te = tulyam dādāmi*\(^{17}\)) (alternative grammatical form). *Put on this garment* (*iṁāṁ dussaṁ nivāsaya*): put on this outer cloak\(^{18}\) of mine. *My pretty one* (*sobhane*): my beautiful one.

So saying he presented her with his outer cloak. She uttered these two verses showing that that which is given in that way does not benefit her hand the way in which things given would benefit her:

4 'What is given by your hand into my hand is of no benefit to me. But this lay follower here has faith and is a sāvaka of the Perfect Buddha;

5 Having clothed him, assign that donation to me: Then I will be happy and richly endowed with all I desire.'

4 Herein *what is given by your hand into my hand is of no benefit to me* (*hathena hathe te dinnaṁ na mayhaṁ upakappati*): what is given by you, good sir, by your hand into my hand is to me of no benefit, does not accrue to me, meaning is not fit for my use.\(^{19}\) *But this lay follower here has faith* (*es' etth' uपāsako sαddho*): but there is in this collection of people here this lay follower who has gone for refuge to the Three Jewels and who has faith since he possesses faith in the fruition of deeds.

5 Having clothed him, assign that donation to me (*etam acchādayit-vāna mama dakkhiṇam ādisa*): have this lay follower clothed with that cloak that was being given to me and assign that donation to me, give
me) a gift that is assigned. Then I will be happy (tadāhaṁ sukhītaḥ hessām): when that is done I will attain happiness and will be dressed in heavenly clothes.

When they heard this the traders bathed and anointed the layfollower and then clothed him with a pair of garments. Those rehearsing the texts then spoke these three verses clarifying this point:

6 Those traders bathed and anointed him and clothed him with the garments and assigned the donation to her.

7 [50] Immediately they dedicated this the result came into being — food, clothing and drink being the fruit of this donation.

8 Thereupon she became pure, clad in fresh, clean, clothes, wearing those more fine than those of Kāsi and left her mansion smiling (to indicate), "This is the fruit of your donation".

6 Herein hīṁ (tam): that layfollower; the word ca (untranslated) is a mere particle. Those (te) is to be construed with 'traders'. Anointed (viśūpīrīvāna): anointed with the finest scent. Clothed him with the garments (vattheh' acchāyārīvāna): having fed him curried food of every description endowed with good appearance, fragrance and flavour, they clothed him with two garments — an undergarment and a cloak — meaning they gave him the two (items of) clothing. Assigned the donation to her (tassā dakkhinam ādisam): gave that donation for the sake of the petī.

7 Immediately they dedicated this (samanañtarānuddīṭhe): anu (untranslated) is a mere particle; immediately they dedicated the donation to her. The result came into being (vipāko upapajjatha): the result for the petī, that is, this fruit of the donation, came into being. What sort of result? The petī said: food, clothing and drink (bhojanacchādanapānīyam): various foods similar to heavenly foods, variously dyed clothes blazing forth colours similar to heavenly clothes and countless sorts of drink — such was the fruit of that donation that came into being — this is how it should be construed.

8 Thereupon (tato): after receiving the aforesaid food and so on. She became pure (suddhā): her body being pure through bathing. Clad in fresh, clean clothes (sucivasanā): dressed in clean, bright clothes. Wearing those more fine than those of Kāsi (kāsikuttamadārīṁ): wearing those more fine than those made from Kāsi cloth. Smiling (hasantī): she left her mansion smiling to indicate, 'Behold, friends, this exquisite fruit of your donation.'

When the traders thus saw for themselves the fruit of their meritorious deed, their hearts were filled with wonder and surprise and they were filled with respect and veneration for the layfollower and honoured him
with the añjali salute. He caused them still more devotion with a talk on Dhamma and established them in the Precepts and the Refuges. They questioned the vimānapetī about the deed she had done with this verse:

9 [51] 'Your nicely painted, gleaming mansion is radiant; O devatā, you are asked to inform us of what deed this is the fruit.'

9 Herein nicely painted (sucittarāpaṇa): nicely decorated with paintings of both elephants, horses, men and women and so on, as well as festoons of garlands and creepers. Gleaming (ruciraṇa): delightful and lovely to behold. Of what deed this is the fruit (kīsa kammasa’ idān phālaṇa): of what sort of deed, meaning is it the fruit of one consisting in giving or of one consisting in virtuous conduct?

When thus questioned by them she spoke these verses informing them both that that (mansion) was the extent of the fruit of that trifling skilled deed she had done and that in the future, however, there would be of that unskilled deed (fruit) such as is found in hell:

10 To a wandering, upright monk I, with a devout heart, gave an oil-cake,

11 As a result of that skilled deed I have for a long while enjoyed myself in this mansion but now there is but a trifle.

12 After four months will come my death and down to the exceedingly severe and terrible hell will I fall:

13 Four-cornered and with four gates, it is divided into equal portions, encircled by an iron wall with a roof of iron above;

14 Its incandescent floor is made of glowing iron - all around a hundred yojanas it spreads, forever standing.

15 There for a long time I will experience painful feelings as the fruit of my wicked deeds - for this reason I am exceedingly sorrowful.

10 Herein to a wandering monk (bhikkhuṇo caramānassa): to a certain monk who had broken up the defilements and who was wandering around in search of alms. An oil-cake (dōninnimajjanam): ground sesame oozing with oil. Upright (uujabhūtassa): who had attained uprightness through being without the defilements that produce crookedness, deceitfulness and dishonesty of mind. [52] With a devout heart (vippasaṇanena cetasa): with true devotion in heart due to faith in the fruition of deeds.

11 For a long while (dīgham antaram): the words dīgham and antaram are euphonically connected with the syllable ma, meaning for a long time. But now there is but a trifle (tai ca dānī parittakam): but now there is but a trifle, but little remaining of that deed - the fruit of that meritorious
deed is fully ripe and has reached maturity, meaning I will fall from here before long. For this reason she said:

12 After four months will come my death (uddhañ ca tūhi māsēhi kālakiriyā bhavissati): she points out that after four months, four months further on, in the fifth month (from now), will come her death. Exceedingly severe (ekantaṃ kaukaka): undesirable in the extreme, meaning it is extremely painful on account of its belonging to the six fields of (sense) impingement. Terrible (ghoraṃ): cruel. Hell (nirayāṃ): hell is called nirayāṃ as there is nothing here (nir-, negative prefix) that makes for ease (ayāṃ), for comfort. Will I fall: pāpatissāhāṃ=pāpatissāmi aham (resolution of compound). And since 'hell' here is to be understood as the Great Hell of Avici she uttered (the verses) beginning, 'Four-cornered' showing it has the same shape (as Avici).


14 Incandescent (tejasāyatta): the flames are continuously joined in a great fire of flame that rises up all around. All around a hundred yojanas (samanta yojanasataṃ): whilst all around outside it is thus in all directions a hundred yojanas, in yojanas one hundred. Forever (sabbadā): all the time. It spreads (pharitvā): it stands pervading.

15 There (tattha): in that Great Hell. I will experience: vediṣṣaṇi=vedissāmi (alternative grammatical form); I will undergo. As the fruit of my wicked deeds (phalaṃ ca pāpakammassa) means that this undergoing of painful (feelings) of such a kind will be the fruit of the wicked deeds that were done by me alone.

When she had thus made known the fruit of her deed and her future existence in hell [S3] the heart of that layfollower was stirred with compassion and, thinking he might be a (means of) support for her, said, 'By way of but one gift to me, O devatā, did you become richly endowed with all you desire and put in contact with this noble excellence. If you now give a gift to these layfollowers and recall the virtues of the Teacher you will be freed from having to arise in hell. The petī was overjoyed and said, 'Very well', and satisfied them with heavenly food and drink and gave them heavenly clothes and jewels of various kinds. She then gave into their hands a pair of heavenly garments specifically for the Lord and sent this salutation: 'When you reach Sāvatthī, please salute the Teacher with
this message from me: "Lord, a certain vimānapetī salutes the Lord with her head at his feet." * She brought their ship to the port they desired that very same day by means of her psychic power and majesty. Now those traders reached Sāvatthī from that port in due course and entered the Jeta Grove. They gave the Teacher the pair of garments and when they had passed on her salutation they raised that whole issue right from the beginning. The Teacher took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma in detail to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people. On the following day those layfollowers gave a great alms-giving to the order of monks with the Buddha at its head and assigned the donation to her. When she fell from the world of the petas she arose in a golden mansion in the realm of the Thirty-three, resplendent with various jewels and with a retinue of a thousand nymphs.

1 So Se Be for text’s Khalātiya-.
2 Reading sammantetvā with Se for text’s samantetvā; Be reads mantetvā.
3 Reading tittakābu with Be (Se -Śāpe) for text’s tītakābu; cp PED sv tītakā.
4 Reading luheṭamatthakā with Se Be for text’s luheṭapamattā; cp also PED sv pamaṭṭa where a reading of luheṭapakkhikā is suggested, which Gehman followā.
5 Be adds tato nivattetā, she returned from there, here.
6 Reading dominimminijanam piṇākāpa with Se (Be dominimminijanap p.) for text’s dominimminijanam piṇākāpa; cp cty on v 2 below.
7 sampahamsanto, literally made her bristle with joy; cp PVA 31 where the latter rendering was adopted. Gehman wrongly suggests that it is the elder’s heart that is delighted.
8 Reading pathitakāyeva with Se Be for text’s pathitā kāyā yeva.
9 Be reads sattasati, seven hundred, here.
10 See note at PVA 137: the mighty ocean is seventh from Mt. Meru and it is in this ocean that the four continents are located, one of these being India.
11 Literally the Golden Land and generally identified with lower Burma; see DPPN ii 1262f.
12 Reading bāhiṭṭhitaṃ with Be for text’s Se mahādhiṭṭhakaṃ; the latter would mean they were asking her to display her great psychic power.
13 Reading hariyāmi with Se Be for text’s hariyāmi.
14 piṇāka-; cp n. 6.
15 Reading dadāmi with Se Be and as at II 4 1 for text’s dāmi.
16 See n. 12.
17 So Se Be; text omits.
18 Reading uttarasāṭakaṃ with Be (Se uttara-) and in conformity with the preceding sentence but one and also the sentence following for text’s uttarīyāṃ sāṭakaṃ.
19 Reading upabhogayogam with Se Be for text’s upabhogayoyam.
20 Reading samantarānudittāthe with Se Be for text’s -udittāthe both here and at II 1 8, 2 8, 3 8, 4 8, III 2 8, 2 8, 2 8, 2 8, 3 8, 3 8 and IV 2 8.
21 The text is poorly punctuated here and should read with Se: Kidiso ti? Petī ḍa . . . . it may however be noted that Dhammapāla earlier attributed these verses to those rehearsing the texts.
22 Reading dibbahojanasadisaṃ with Se Be for text’s dibbahojana-.
23 Reading yathāvuttabbhajanādi with Se Be for text’s yathāvuttā-.
That is, the fivefold precepts binding upon the laity and the threefold refuges of the Buddha, the Dhamma and the Saṅgha; by taking these they thus became lay-followers themselves, though not, unlike the layfollower here, sāvaka of the Buddha.

Reading pabhāsatī with Se Be for text's cā bhāsatī.

Reading hatthi-assa-ittipisādāvasena with Se Be for text's aṭṭhi-assa-ittih-,

Earlier we were given to suppose that her theft of the clothes was expiated by her being naked.

Reading doninimmajjanam with Se (Be -jjanam) for text's doninimmījjanam; cp n. 6.

Cp M 167; A I 141 f.; J v 266.

Reading socām' aham bhussan with Se Be and IV 388 for text's socām'daṁ bhūtam; II 715 reads socā m' aḥabhussan in Pā.

bhinnakāsassa.

Reading vissandamāṇanaṁ pīṇākaṁ with Se Be for text's vissandamāṇatelaṁ-mīja-kami.

Reading kammaphalasadāhīya with Se Be for text's-sandāhīya.

Text should thus be amended to read dīgha-m-antarān.

Reading vipakkavipakkattā with Se Be for text's vipakkattā.

Cp S v 126 for an account of this.

The text is poorly punctuated here and should be amended to read with Be: Papatis' āham ti papattissām aham. Niraya ni . . .

So the verse: text (Se) however (mis)quote as tejasāyutta (tejasāyutāṁ) here and gloss samāyutta jāla (samāyuttajālāṁ) whilst Be reads tejasāyutta and samāyuttajālā respectively.

Reading evamp pana with Se Be for text's evamp pana.

Text mis-spells sabbada here.

Reading eva with Be for text's Se evam.

I.11 EXPOSITION OF THE ELEPHANT PETA STORY

[Nāgāpetavatthuvanāna]

One proceeds in front on a white elephant. This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning two petas who had been brahmans.

It is said that the seven year old venerable Saṅkicca had attained arahantship whilst still in the tonsure-hall and was dwelling as a novice with as many as thirty monks in a forest haunt. After he had defended those monks from impending death at the hands of five hundred robbers and had tamed the robbers and had them go forth, he then went into the Teacher's presence. The Teacher taught Dhamma to the monks and at the end of that teaching they attained arahantship. Then when the venerable Saṅkicca had become old enough and had received ordination he went to Benares with five hundred monks and stayed at Isipatana. The people
went into the elder’s presence, heard Dhamma and, with devotion in their hearts, formed themselves into groups along the streets, giving alms to new-comers. A certain layfollower there urged the people (to provide) a constant supply of food and they provided this constant supply of food in accordance with their means.

Now there was in Benares at that time a certain brahmin possessed of wrong views who had two sons and a daughter. The elder son of these was a friend of that layfollower. He took him and went into the venerable Sāṇḍikicca’s presence and the venerable Sāṇḍikicca taught him Dhamma, at which his heart became tender. Then the layfollower said to him, ‘You should give a constant supply of food for one monk.’ ‘It is not the custom for us brahmans to give a constant supply of food to those recluses who are sons of the Sākyas, so I will not give (this).’ ‘Would you not give food even to me?’ he asked. ‘How could I not give it?’ he replied. ‘In that case, then give to one monk what you would give’ to me.’ ‘Very well’, he agreed and on the following day whilst still very early went to the vihāra, fetched one monk and fed him. As time went on in this way his younger brother and sister saw the conduct of the monks and heard Dhamma and, finding faith in the Teaching, took delight in meritorious deeds. Thus these three people, giving alms according to their means, venerated, respected, esteemed and honoured recluses and brahmans. Their parents, however, had neither faith nor devotion, lacked respect for recluses and brahmans and paid no regard to the performance of meritorious deeds. Relatives asked that their young daughter should be given in marriage to her maternal cousin. But he heard Dhamma in the presence of the venerable Sāṇḍikicca and, filled with agitation, constantly went as one gone forth to his mother’s house to eat. His mother tried to entice him with his young maternal female cousin. Because of this he became dissatisfied and approached his preceptor and said, ‘I wish to leave the order, sir. Please give me permission.’ His preceptor, seeing that he possessed the potential (of becoming a sāvaka), said, ‘Wait for just a month, novice.’ ‘Very well’, he agreed and, when one month had elapsed, he addressed (him) in the same manner. His preceptor again said, ‘Wait for just a fortnight.’ When a fortnight had elapsed and (the preceptor) had been spoken to in the same manner he again said, ‘Wait for a week.’ ‘Very well’, he agreed. Inside a week the house of that novice’s aunt collapsed when its perished thatch and its old weak walls were struck by the wind and rain and the brahmin and his wife, their two sons and their daughter died when crushed by the house. Of these, the brahmin and his wife arose in the peta-womb whilst their two sons and their daughter amongst the terrestrial devas. Of these, the elder son arose riding on an elephant, the younger in a mule-drawn
chariot and the daughter in a golden litter. The brahmin and his wife would each take huge iron hammers and beat one another and swellings, each the size of a huge water-pot, would arise at the places where they were struck, come to a head in an inkling and then burst open. They would split open one another's swellings and, overcome by anger and ruthlessly cursing (each other) with harsh speech, would drink the blood and pus yet not find any satisfaction.

Then the novice (still) overcome with dissatisfaction, approached his preceptor and said, 'I have waited the agreed number of days, sir. I wish to go home, sir. Please give me your permission.' His preceptor then said, 'Come (here) at sunset when it is the fourteenth day of the dark half of the month,' and went and stood a little to the rear of the Isipatana vihāra. Now at that time those two devaputtas were going, together with their sister, along that same road to attend an assembly of the yakkhas. Their mother and father followed\(^4\) them with clubs in their hands and with harsh speech.\(^5\) They were of dark appearance, burdened with thoroughly tangled, coarse, flying hair,\(^6\) and resembled the burnt trunks of palm trees (struck by) lightning.\(^7\) They were dripping with blood and pus and their bodies were wrinkled — they were an extremely loathsome and disgusting sight. The venerable Saṃkīccha then worked his psychic powers in such a way that the novice could see all of them going along and, when he had done so, said, 'Do you see them going along, novice?' "Yes, sir, I do see (them)' (he replied). 'Well then, question them about the deeds they\(^11\) did.' Those going along he questioned in turn, beginning with the one riding on an elephant. 'You should question the petas following on behind' they said, and the novice addressed the petas with these verses:

1. 'One proceeds in front on a white elephant, in the middle in a mule-drawn chariot however, whilst at the rear a maiden is conducted about in a golden litter, entirely lighting up the ten directions.

2. But you, with hammer in hand, with weeping faces and split and broken bodies, what wicked deed did you do whilst in the world of men, on account of which you must drink each other's blood?'

---

1. Herein in front (purato): foremost of all. White (setena): pale (-coloured). One proceeds (paleti): one goes. In the middle however (majhe pana): between the one mounted on the elephant and the one mounted in the litter. In a mule-drawn chariot (assatarathena): one proceeds by chariot yoked with she-mules — this is how it should be construed. Is conducted about (nyati): is driven about. Entirely lighting up the ten directions (obhāsayingāt dasa sabbato dīsā): shining forth entirely throughout all the ten directions with the radiance of her
body and with the radiance of her clothes and ornaments\textsuperscript{12} and so on.

2 With hammer in hand (muggarahathapāṇino): those who have hammers in their hands (pāṇis) (here) reckoned as hands (hattha-) are 'with hammer in hand'. 'Hand' (pāṇi) by itself\textsuperscript{13} is qualified with the word hattha due to the fact that it might (otherwise) be taken for the common designation of pāṇi as a wooden instrument for smoothing the ground and so on.\textsuperscript{14} With split and broken bodies (bhinnapabhinnagatā): with bodies split and broken all over by the blows of the hammers. You should now drink: pivātha=pivatha (metri causā).

[57] When thus questioned by the novice, those petas replied with four verses (telling) the entire story:

3 ‘He who goes in front on an elephant, on a four-footed white elephant, he was our elder son. Having given alms, he is now happy and delighted.

4 He who is in the middle in a galloping\textsuperscript{15} four-yoked mule-drawn chariot, he was our second son. Unselfish and a master in the practice of giving, he now shines brilliantly.

5 She who at the rear is conducted about in a litter, the wise maiden with the soft eyes of a deer, she was our daughter and youngest born. (Satisfied) with a half portion of her share, she is now happy and delighted.

6 Now in the past they gave alms with devotion in their hearts to recluses and brahmans; we, however, were selfish and abusive to recluses and brahmans. They gave and now gratify themselves whilst we are withered like a cut down reed.\textsuperscript{16}

3 Herein he who goes in front (purato va yo gacchati): he goes in front of those who are going along. Another reading is yo so purato gacchati (he who goes in front), meaning that one who goes in front thereof. On an elephant (kuṇjarena): on an elephant (hatthinā) that has acquired the name kuṇjara since it brings the terrain (kuṇi), the earth, to destruction (jirayati); or, alternatively, since it is in glens (kuṇjesu) that it delights (ramati), that it roams about.\textsuperscript{16} On a . . . elephant (nāgana): that elephant, the nāga to whom nowhere (na) is inaccessible (agamantyan) and for whom there is nothing he cannot overcome.\textsuperscript{17} Four-footed (catukkamena): four-legged. Elder (jetṭhako): born earlier.

4 Four-footed (catubbhī): (yoked) with four she-mules. Galloping (suvaṃgītena):\textsuperscript{15} with beautiful movement or with swift movement.

5 With the soft eyes of a deer (migamandaločā): with eyes casting a soft look like that of a doe. [58] With a half portion of her share: bhāgaḍḍhabhāgena=bhāgassa aḍḍhabhāgena (resolution of compound), the
reason being that she gave away a half portion of the share she received for herself. *Happy: sukhi=sukhinī;* this was given here with a distortion of gender.

6 Abusive (*paribhāsakā*): insulting. They now gratify themselves (*paricārayanti*): they feast (*cārentī*) their senses at will wherever they like with the heavenly sensual pleasures, or they amuse themselves (*paricāryaṇī* katāreṇti) with their attendants due to the majestic outcome of their meritorious deeds. Whilst we are withered like a cut down reed (*mayaṇa ca sussāma nalo va chinno*): but we are withered like a reed that has been cut down and laid down in the heat of the sun; we are parched and dried up by hunger and thirst and by the deadly blows (we receive) from one another.

When they had thus made known their wicked deeds, they then informed him that they were his aunt and uncle. When he heard this the novice, full of agitation, uttered this verse asking how food could be made available for such wrong-doers:

7 *What is your food? What your bed?* How do you sustain yourselves, you who were by nature so very wicked, who though amidst abundant and plentiful wealth, missed (your chance of) happiness and have today attained to misery?

7 Herein what is your food? (*kīṁ tumhākaṁ bhojaṇaṁ*): of what sort is your food? *What your bed?* (*kīṁ sayānaṁ*): of what sort your bed? Some read ‘what your sleep?’ (*kīṁ sayānā*): of what sort your sleep, meaning in what sort of bed do you sleep? How do you sustain yourselves? (*kathan su yāpetha*): in what manner do you sustain yourselves? An alternative reading is *kathant vo* yāpetha=kathan tumhe yāpetha (alternative grammatical form), meaning how do you sustain yourselves? You who were by nature so very wicked (*supāpadhammino*): you who were of so very wicked a nature in the extreme. Though amidst abundant wealth (*pahūtabhojagru*): though being amidst boundless and immense wealth. Plentiful: *anappakesu=na appakesu* (alternative grammatical form); much. Missed (your chance of) happiness (*sukhaṁ virādhaya*): [59] missed, lost (your chance of) happiness through not performing meritorious deeds which are the cause of happiness. Some read ‘through missing (your chance of) happiness’ (*sukhassa virādhena*). Have today attained to misery (*dukkha aja patta*): have today, have now, arrived at this misery belonging to the peta-womb.

When thus questioned by the novice, the petas spoke these verses answering the points about which he had enquired:
When we have struck one another, we drink the blood and pus; we
drink much but we are not nourished, we are not pleased.

So, in fact, do unbestowing mortals lament when after death they
become Yama’s residents; those who have known and attained
wealth but who do not make use of it, nor even perform meritorious
deeds,

These undergo hunger and thirst hereafter; those petas burn, being
for a long time scorched. Having done deeds yielding misery, bitter
fruit, they suffer misery.

Short-lived indeed are riches and grain and fleeting one’s life
here; knowing the transient as transient, the wise man should
make a refuge.

Those who understand this are men skilled in the Dhamma; having
heard the speech of the arahants, they do not neglect to give alms.

Herein we are not nourished (na dhātā homa): we are not nourished,
not satisfied, not satiated. Are not pleased: na ruccādimhase=na ruccāma
(alternative grammatical form); we obtain no pleasure, meaning we do not
drink it for our pleasure.

So, in fact (icc’ eva): in just this way. Do mortals lament (maccā
paridevayanti): other people who like us, have done wrong, do
lament and wail. Unbestowing (adāyakā): selfish, lacking the virtue of
generosity. They become Yama’s residents (Yamassa ṭhāyino): their nature
is to reside on the peta-plane, the residence of Yama known as the world
of Yama. [60] Those who have known and attained wealth (ye te viditvā
adhigamma bhogā): those who have known and obtained wealth providing
extraordinary happiness, both now and in the future. But who do not
make use of it, nor even perform meritorious deeds (nā bhūñjare nā pī
karonti puññām): but who, like us, do not make use of it themselves, nor
even perform meritorious deeds consisting in almsgiving by giving to others.

These undergo hunger and thirst hereafter (te khuppipāsāpagata
parattha): these beings are overcome by a desire to eat and by thirst here-
after, on the peta-plane in the next world. (Those petas) burn, being for a
long time scorched (ciraṃ ṭhāyare ṭayhamānā): means (those petas)
burn, they bemoan, being continually scorched by the fire of an uneasy
conscience, thinking, ‘We did, alas, no skilled deeds, we did (only) wicked
deeds’ and so on and by the fire of misery caused by their hunger. Yielding
misery (dukkhudrayāṇi): resulting in misery. Bitter fruit they suffer
misery (anubhonti dukkhāṃ kaṭukapphalāṇi): having done wicked deeds
(yielding) undesirable fruit, they suffer misery, they suffer misery charac-
teristic of the woeful state for a long time.
11 Short-lived (ittaram): not long lasting, impermanent, subject to change. Fleeting one’s life here (ittaram idha jīvita): the life of beings here, in this world of men, is fleeting, limited, trifling. For this reason the Lord said, ‘He, who lives long, lives but a hundred years or but little longer.’* Knowing the transient as transient (ittaram ittaraṇaḥ ātāvah): ascertaining by means of wisdom that commodities such as riches and grain and so on and human life are fleeting, limited, momentary and not long lasting. The wise man should make a refuge (dīpanā kayirāha paṇḍito): the man of wisdom should make a refuge, a support, that will be the basis of his happiness and well being34 in the next world.

12 Those who understand this (yē te evam pājānanti): those who truly35 realise the transient nature of human life and wealth, they do not neglect to give alms at all times. Having heard the speech of the arahants (suva arahatam vaco) means having heard the words of the arahants, of ariyans36 such as Buddhās and so on. The rest is quite clear.

When those petas had explained the points on which they had been questioned by the novice, they said, ‘We are your aunt and uncle.’ When he heard this, the novice, full of agitation, dispelled his dissatisfaction and fell down with his head at his preceptor’s feet, saying, ‘Whatever [61] pity should be shown out of pity has been shown to me by you, sir. I have certainly been protected from falling into great misfortune.37 I have now no interest in the household life and will find my delight in the Brahma-faring.’ The venerable Sāmkicca then imparted to him a meditation subject suitting his disposition. He devoted himself to that meditation subject and before long attained arahantship. The venerable Sāmkicca raised the issue with the Lord. The Teacher took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma in detail to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

*S 108; cp S 94.

1 For details of this frequently quoted incident see DPPN ii 975. Sāmkicca’s verses appear at Thag 597–607 and not at ‘No. 240’ as stated by Gethman.
2 Site of the famous Deer Park at Sarnath, some six miles from Benares, where the First Sermon was preached. It was so called because sages, on their way through the air (from the Himalayas), alight here or start from here on their aerial flight’ (DPPN i 324).
3 Cp A iii 41.
4 Reading na dassasi with Be for text’s Se dassasi na dassasi.
5 Reading desitam with Se for text’s desitam.
6 Be reads bhāṇḍhitaḥ dārīkāya, with the young daughter of her brother, which amounts to the same thing.
7 Reading dubbalakuddam with Se (Be -kuttam) for text’s dubbalam kūṭam.
Reading anubandhanti with Se Be for text's anubajjanti; cp PED sv anubajjati.

9 Reading śūlaśūlabhākapātakasabhā with Se Be for text's -sukha-

10 indaggi, literally Indra's fire.

11 Reading imehi with Se Be for text's ime.

12 Reading sattāsambhanādippabhāṣā with Se Be for text's vattiha-

13 Reading pāṇi eva with Se Be for text's pāṇi.

14 Reading bhūmisāṇhakaraṇādīrmaṇ with Se Be for text's bhūmisāṇhā; this sense of pāṇi is not listed in PED.

15 Reading suvaggatena with Se Be and Py for text's suvagtena and suvaggatena in cty below; this sense of vaggati is not listed in PED.

16 Reading kuñjesu vāramati ca saññi with Se Be for text's kuñjo suvāramaticarati.

Cp VēA 35 for a similar etymology.

17 Reading nāsa agāmanīyam anabhībhavaniyam atthi ti with Be for text's nāssa agātā sābhībhavaniyam atthi ti (≈ Sc). See also Thag 693 and notes at EV i 177; also cty on S i 27. Text's punctuation should read with Se Be, . . . nāgotta nañgena.

Catukkamanā ti . . .

18 So Se Be for text's pāncariyam.

19 Cp ThagA on Thag 96 (quoted at EV i 145).

20 Text's punctuation should read with Be, 'evaṇpāṇaṁ kibīsakārīnam kathāṁ . . . sijjhanti' ti.

21 Reading kīṁ sāyānaṁ with Se Be for text's kīṁ sāyānaṁ.

22 Reading virāgāya with Se Be for text's virāgāya.

23 All texts vary considerably over minor points here. For consistency's sake I follow Be, kīṁ sāyānaṁ ti kīlīsam sāyānaṁ. 'Kīṁ sāyānaṁ ti kīcī pāṭhanti, kīcī sāyānaṁ, kīcī sāyānaṁ sāyānaṁ ti attho.

24 So Se Be for text's ha; the meaning is unaffected.

25 So Se Be for text's sukhassa virāgāna.

26 Reading pucchitamattham with Se Be for text's pucchitamattham.

27 pecca.

28 Reading vidiāvā with Se Be for text's vidićca; Be reads vidićca.

29 Reading jhāyare with Se Be for text's jhāyure; similarly jhāyanti in cty below for text's jhāyanti.

30 Reading dukkhudrayāni for text's dukkhandriyāni, Se dukkhdrayāni, Be dukkhdrayāni; cp PED sv dukkha.

31 ittaram.

32 Reading thānasilā with Se Be for text's thāne silā.

33 apāyikam.

34 Reading hitsukhādhitthanam with Se Be for text's hitsukhādhitthanam.

35 Reading yathāvato with Be (Se yathāvato) for text's yathā vato; cp PED sv yathāvā.

36 That is, a member of the Ariyasaṅgha (cp VēA 1) and thus a sāvaka, or, as here, a Buddha.

37 Reading mahatā vata 'mhi anatthapātato with Be for text's Se mahato vata 'mhi anatthato pātato.
I.12 EXPOSITION OF THE SNAKE PETA STORY
[Uragapetavattuvamana]

‘Just as the snake (having cast aside) its worn out skin.’ The Teacher who was staying in the Jeta Grove told this concerning a certain layfollower.

It is said that at Sāvatthi the son of a certain layfollower died. Full of grief and lamentation on account of the death of his son, he would just stay at home, neither going outside nor able to do any work. Then when, towards dawn, the Teacher had emerged from the meditation of the great compassion and was surveying the world with his Buddha Eye, he saw that layfollower. He dressed early that morning and, taking his robe and bowl, went and stood at the door of his house. When the layfollower heard of the Teacher’s arrival, he rose quickly and went out to meet him. He took the bowl from his hand, had him enter the house and offered him the appointed seat. The Lord sat on the appointed seat and the layfollower saluted him and then sat at one side. The Lord said, ‘Why, layfollower, you appear like one overwhelmed with grief.’ ‘Yes, Lord, my beloved son has died — for this reason I am overwhelmed with grief’ (he replied). The Lord then recited the Snake Jātaka (with the purpose of) dispelling his grief.

Long ago, there was at Benares in the kingdom of Kāsi a brahmin family named Dhammapāla, all of whom — the brahmin and his wife, his son and daughter, daughter-in-law and servant-girl — were given to cultivating mindfulness of death. [62] Whenever any of them left the house, he would advise the rest of the people and then leave without concern. Then one day the brahmin left the house with his son and went to his field and ploughed whilst his son set fire to some dry grass and sticks. At this a (poisonous) black snake, through fear of being burned, left the hollow of the tree and bit the brahmin’s son, who fainted from the effect of the venom, fell down right there and died (thereafter) arising as Sakka, king of devas. When the brahmin saw his dead son, he said to a man he saw passing near where he was working, ‘My good man, please go to my house and tell my wife she should bathe and dress in clean clothes and then come here with food for one person and with garlands and scent and so on.’ He went there and informed her accordingly and the members of the household did as he said. The brahmin bathed, ate and anointed himself and, surrounded by his attendants, put his son’s body on the funeral pile and set fire to it and then stood there as if he were (merely) burning a wooden log, with neither grief nor self-torment but with his mind fixed on the idea of impermanence.

*No. 354.
Now it is our Bodhisatta who was at that time the brahmin’s son who had arisen as Sakka. When he contemplated the meritorious deeds he had done in his previous life, he felt pity for his father and his relatives and went there disguised as a brahmin. When he saw that his relatives were not mourning him, he said, ‘Hey there — you who are cooking that venison. Please give us some meat; I am hungry!’ ‘It is not venison, brahmin, it is a human being’, he replied. ‘Was he your enemy then?’ ‘He was no enemy but my own flesh and blood, my young son of great virtue.’ ‘Why do you not mourn when your young son of such virtue is dead?’ When he heard this, the brahmin uttered these two verses telling why he was not mourning:

1 ‘As the snake quits its old skin, its person, and then goes on its way, so at death the peta5 his useless body.

2 That which is burning is unaware of the lamentation of relatives. Therefore I do not mourn him; he is gone to whatever is his destiny.’

[63] Herein the snake (uraga): uraga is a descriptive term for the serpent: it is on its breast (urena) that it moves about (gacchati). Its old skin (tucan ḱinnan): its skin, its slough, which is old, worn out, due to its decrepitude. Quits its person and then goes on its way (hitvā gacchati santanum): just as the snake (passing) between trees, branches; roots or rocks, removes from its body its old skin that is causing it misery, as though removing a close fitting jacket and, having given it up and cast it aside, then goes on its way as it wishes, even so does the being passing through6 samsāra leave his decrepit ‘person’, his body, due to the exhaustion of his former deeds and then goes on his way, goes on his way in accordance with his deeds, meaning he arises by way of renewed existence. So (evaṁ): he says this pointing to his son’s burning body. His useless body (sattre nibbhoge): his body that has lost its usefulness, that is of no avail; as it was for him, so also is it for others. The peta (pete): when vitality, heat and consciousness have gone, have left the body.7 At death (kālakate sati): when one is dead.

2 Therefore (tasmā): since, due to the departure of consciousness, the body that is burning is unaware of the pain of being burnt and also the weeping and lamentation of beloved relatives, therefore I do not weep making a pretext of this son of mine. He is gone to whatever is his destiny (gato so tassa yā gati): nonetheless, dead beings are not annihilated; rather, immediately he fell,8 he was gone to whatever destiny there was said to be in store for him through a deed of that dead person finding its opportunity.9 He does not wait for the weeping and lamentation of former relatives, nor is anything to any purpose generally accomplished by the weeping of former relatives — this is the meaning.
When the brahmin had thus manifested his skillfulness in thoroughly fixing his mind (on the idea of impermanence), Sakka, disguised as a brahmin, said to the brahmin’s wife, ‘Good woman, what was the deceased to you?’ ‘He was my grown up son, sir, whom I carried around in my womb for ten months, suckled and taught to crawl.’ ‘Even though his father does not weep, it being in a man’s nature so to do, surely a mother’s heart is tender — why then do you not weep?’ When she heard this, she uttered these two verses telling her reason for not weeping:

3  [64] ‘He came from there without invitation and went from here without permission. As he came, so he went. In such circumstances what is the use of lamentation?
4  That which is burning is unaware of the lamentation of relatives. Therefore I do not mourn him; he is gone to whatever is his destiny.’

3  Herein without invitation (anabhīto): unsummoned; he was not sent for, saying, ‘Come, become a son to me!’ From there (tato): from where he was before, from the other world. He came: āgā=āgacchi (alternative grammatical form). Without permission (nānuṇātāto): without leave; he was not dismissed by us, saying, ‘Go to the other world, my son!’ From here (ito): from this world. Went (gato): left. As he came (yathāgato): the way in which he came, meaning he came quite without our invitation. So he went (tathāgato): in that same way he went. As he came on account of his own deeds alone, so he went on account of his own deeds alone; in this way the working of kamma is shown. In such circumstances what is the use of lamentation? (tattha kā paridevanā): as saṃsāra thus rolls on without one’s control, what indeed is the use of lamentation on account of death? It shows that it is not fitting and should not be done by one possessing insight.

When he heard what the brahmin’s wife had to say, he asked his sister, ‘What was he to you, my dear?’ ‘He was my brother, sir.’ ‘My dear, surely sisters are fond of their brothers; why then do you not weep?’ She uttered these two verses telling her reason for not weeping:

5  ‘If I were to weep I would become emaciated. What would be the fruit for me in that? It would be yet more distress for our relatives, friends and well-wishers.’

6  That which is burning is unaware of the lamentation of relatives. Therefore I do not mourn him; he is gone to whatever is his destiny.’

5  Herein if I were to weep I would become emaciated (sace rode kisā assaṃ): if I should weep I might become emaciated and my body wasted. What would be the fruit for me in that? (tattha me kīṃ phalam siyā): what
indeed might be the fruit, what the advantage, for me in that, in weeping
on account of the death of my brother? [65] My brother would not come
(back to life) thereby nor would he go to a happy state thereby –
this is the meaning. It would be yet more distress for our relatives, friends
and well-wishers (nātimittasahñjānāṁ bhīyo no arati siyā): by my mourn-
ing him there would just be extreme misery, even more misery, at the
death of my brother for our relatives, friends and well-wishers.

When he heard what the sister had to say, he asked his wife, 'What was
he to you?' 'He was my husband, sir' (she replied). 'My dear, surely
women are fond of their husbands and when they die their widows are
destitute. Why then do you not weep?' She too uttered two verses telling
her reason for not weeping:

7  'Just as a child cries for the rising moon, so with similar success he
who mourns the peta.
8  That which is burning is unaware of the lamentation of relatives.
    Therefore I do not mourn him; he is gone to whatever is his destiny.'

7  Herein a child (dārako): an ignorant child. For the moon (candam):
for the moon's disc. Rising (gacchantam): ascending\(^1\) in the firmament.
Cries (anurodati): cries, saying, 'Catch the chariot wheel and give it to me!'
So with similar success (evaṁ sampadam ev' etam): the mourning of him
who mourns the peta, the dead, is just as successful as, and similar to, the
desire to catch the moon as it rises in the sky, since it is wishing for an
unobtainable object – this is the meaning.

When he heard what his\(^1\) wife had to say, he asked the servant-girl.
'My dear, what was he to you?'\(^2\) 'He was my master, sir,' 'If so, you will
have done your work after being beaten by him. I think, therefore, that
you do not weep as you think that by his death you are well rid of him.'
'Do not speak to me thus, sir, it is not [66] befitting. The son of my
master acted properly and possessed extreme patience, friendliness and
kindness – he was like a son who had grown up at my own breast.' 'Then
why do you not weep?' She too uttered two verses telling her reason for
not weeping:

9  'Just as, brahmin, a broken water-pot cannot be put together again,
so with similar success he who mourns the peta.
10  That which is burning is unaware of the lamentation of relatives.
    Therefore I do not mourn him; he is gone to whatever is his destiny.'

9  Herein just as, brahmin, a broken water-pot cannot be put together
again (yathā\(^2\) pi brahme udākumbho bhinnno appaśisandhiyo): just as
indeed, brahmin, a water-jar that has been broken by blows from a hammer
and so on cannot be put together again, cannot be restored to its original condition. The rest is quite self-evident as it has already been stated above.

When Sakka heard this talk on Dhamma from them, he said with devotion in his heart, 'Thoroughly have you cultivated mindfulness of death. From this (day) henceforward, there will be no need for you to labour at ploughing and so on.' He filled their house with the Seven Treasures and exhorted them, saying, 'Do not neglect to give alms; keep the precepts and observe the Uposatha, and, after revealing his (true identity) to them, returned to his own abode. And that brahmin and the others performed meritorious deeds of almsgiving and so on and having lived their full span of years arose in the devaloka.

When the Teacher had recounted this Jātaka and had extracted the dart of sorrow from that layfollower, he afterwards explained the (Four Noble) Truths at the end of which the layfollower was established in the sotāpatti-fruit.

The Exposition of the Snake Peta Story is concluded — thus the exposition of the meaning of the first, Snake, chapter, that is adorned with twelve stories in these Peta Stories of the Khuddaka Nikāya is concluded.

1 mahākarunāsamāpattito.
2 Cp D ii 38f.
3 maraṇatibhāvanā; recollection of death, maraṇaṇussati, is one of the forty kammapāṇinas. See Vism viii 1-41 (Path of Purification pp. 247-259).
4 In the Jātaka account the Bodhisatta is said to be the father and whilst Sakka appears in the story there is no suggestion that he has any connection with the deceased son.
5 Perhaps meaning here simply 'departed' or 'dead and gone'.
6 paribbhamanto, literally roaming or wandering about. No doubt some parallel was also intended between the snake going on its own way 'as it wishes' (yathā kāmam) and the being going on its way 'in accordance with his deeds' (yathā kammam).
7 Reading āyu-ussana-viññāṇe ite kāyato apagate with Se for text's āyuusnāviññānato apagato (Be āyu-usmā); or these three see Mi 296, S iii 143, Thig 468 (not Thag as stated at MLS i 356 n. 3) and cp CPD sv āyu.
8 Reading tam cuti-anantarām eva with Se Be for text's ti vuccati tadanantarām eva.
9 To ripen.
10 hatthapāde santhapeva, literally established in hand and foot. Gehman offered 'I placed his hands and feet' and Jātaka Stories iii 109 reads 'directed the movements of his hands and feet': it may mean simply 'brought up'.
11 Cp Thig 129.
12 paralokato, usually meaning the 'next world' or the 'world beyond' both with reference to the future and in distinction to the world of men. Here, however, the sense is clearly that of the past and there is nothing to suggest whether it was from the world of men or some other world that he came.
13 Reading idhalokato for text's dhalokato.
14 Reading eva with Se Be for text's evam.
See M 1 265f. where three things are said to be necessary for conception; cp also M ii 157.

suhajjānam, not listed in PED. Text should read, with Se Be, ātimitta, not ātimittā.

Reading abhussukkamānaṁ with So Be for text's abhuggamānaṁ, a term commonly used for the movement of heavenly bodies — e.g. M 1 317 = S iii 156 = It 20; cp KS iii 133 n. 3.

Reading tassa with Se Be for text's tassā.

Reading tuyham so with Se Be for text's tvam tassa.

Text misquotes yathā.

sattaratanābharitāṁ; the expression occurs at S iii 83 where the ctv says these are the seven bojjhāṅgas, or factors of enlightenment, but this would seem unlikely here. (The reference in PED s v ratana to S ii 217 is in fact to an instance of ratana and should be amended.) A list of seven moral treasures (dhana) is given at A iv 4ff. (cp Mūn 336) but these again seem out of place here. On the other hand it would seem equally unlikely that the seven treasures of the bakkavattin (D ii 16, 172ff., 187ff. etc.) were intended. The Jātaka account states simply that before he left he filled their house with countless wealth (sparīmitamāhaṁ katvā).

Reading samuddharitvā with Be for text's, Se, samudbhāritvā.

So Be.
Chapter II

THE UBBARĪ CHAPTER
[Ubbarīvagga]
II.1 EXPOSITION OF THE SAMSĀRAMOCAKA PETA STORY
[Samsāramocakapetavatthuvaṇṇanā]

[67] ‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a certain petā in the village named Iṭṭhakāvati in the kingdom of Magadha.

It is said that in the kingdom of Magadha there were two villages, Iṭṭhakāvati and Dīgharājī, in which lived many Samsāramocaka heretics.¹ A long time ago, some five hundred years past, a certain woman arose in a Samsāramocaka family right there in Iṭṭhakāvati and due to her wrong views she took the life of many insects and grasshoppers and arose amongst the petās where she underwent the misery of hunger and thirst for five hundred years. Then when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was in due course staying in the Bamboo Grove, near Rājagaha, she arose yet again in that same Samsāramocaka family in that same Iṭṭhakāvati. Then one day when she was seven or eight years old and was busy playing with other girls on the highway, the venerable elder Sāriputta, who was staying at the Arunavattī vihāra near that same village, passed along that road, close by the gate of that village, accompanied by twelve monks. At that moment many girls of that village, who had left the village and were playing close by the gate, after the manner of their parents quickly went with devotion in their hearts and saluted the elder and the other monks with the five-fold prostration.² The daughter of that family of non-believers,³ however, disrespectful and lacking the good manners of virtuous people through her not having collected skilled deeds for a long time, remained standing like one undisciplined.⁴ The elder discerned her former conduct, her present arising in a Samsāramocaka family and that she was worthy of arising (only) in hell in the future. He realised that if she were to salute him she would not arise in hell and that though she would arise amongst the petās she would attain excellence through him.⁵ With his heart stirred with compassion [68] he said to those girls, ‘You salute the monks⁶ but this girl has remained standing like one undisciplined.’⁷ Then those girls grabbed her by the hands, dragged her forward and, with the use of force, made her salute at the elder’s feet. In due course she came of age and was given (in marriage) to a certain young man in a Samsāramocaka family in Dīgharājī.⁸ When she was about to deliver, she died and arose amongst the petās, naked, of hideous appearance, a quite disgusting sight; wandering about she revealed herself during the night to the venerable elder Sāriputta and then stood at one side. When he saw her, the elder questioned her with this verse:
1. 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin one, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, you who are stood here?'

2. Herein with prominent veins (dhvanisanthata): with a body spread with a network of veins due to an absence of flesh and blood. With your ribs standing out (upphasulate): with protruding ribs. You thin one (kisike): you with an emaciated body; having formerly said 'emaciated', the words 'you thin one' are repeated with the purpose of showing her extreme emaciation in that her body was mere skin, bone and sinew.

When she heard this, the peti said this verse making herself known:

3. 'I, sir, am a peti, gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama; having done a wicked deed, I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

Questioned once more by the elder about the deed she had done:

4. 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?'

she spoke three verses showing that after having been selfish and having lacked the virtue of giving she had arisen in the peta-womb and was undergoing great misery thus:

5. [69] 'I, sir, had not father, mother nor other relatives even who, possessing pity for me, would urge me saying, “Give a gift with devotion in your heart to recluses and brahmans.”

6. From now on for five hundred years I must wander about naked like this, being consumed by hunger and craving — this is the fruit of my wicked deed.

7. I salute you, worthy sir, with devotion in my heart; please have pity on me, O resolute and mighty one. Please give something and assign that to me; release me from this state of misery, sir.'

8. Herein possessing pity (anukampakã): helpful as to her welfare in the next world. Sir (bhante): she is addressing the elder. Who would urge me (ye mam niyojeeyum): I had not mother or father or other such relatives of such a kind as who, possessing pity for me, would urge me saying, ‘With devotion in your heart give a gift to recluses and brahmans’ — this is how it should be construed.

9. From now on for five hundred years I must wander about naked like this (ito ahañ vassasatãni pañçã yam eva ripa vicarami naggã): having
recollected her existence as a peti in her last birth but two, the peti said this assuming she would now also have to wander about in that way for five hundred years. Yantra (untranslated)=yasna (alternative grammatical form); since I have not done any meritorious deeds of giving and so on, I have become a peti, naked like this, and I must henceforward wander about for five hundred years -- this is how it should be construed. By craving (tasāhāya); by thirst, being consumed: khājaṃāna=kādiyāmaṇā (alternative grammatical form), meaning being afflicted.

6 I salute you, worthy sir, with devotion in my heart (vandāmi tasmayyapaśannacittā): with devotion in my heart I salute you, worthy sir. This shows just how little merit it is now possible for me to do. Please have pity on me (anukampasmayam): please help, please be kind towards me. Please give something and assign that to me (datvā cāme ādissayamhi kiṅcī): she said this assuming that when he had given some merit-offering and had assigned that donation to her, there would thereby be release for her from the peta-womb. For this reason she said, 'Release me from this state of misery, sir.'

These three verses were said by those rehearsing the texts to show the manner in which the elder proceeded to act when the peti had thus spoken:

7 "Very well," consented Sāriputta, possessing pity, and gave to the monks a morsel, a piece of cloth measuring a hand and a bowl of water and assigned the donation to her.

8 Immediately he dedicated this the result came into being, food, clothing and drink being the fruit of this donation.

9 Thereupon she became pure, clad in fresh, clean clothes, wearing those more fine than those of Kāsi and, bedecked in various clothes and ornaments, she approached Sāriputta.

7 Herein to the monks (bhikkhuṇa): to a monk; this is said with a distortion of number. Some read 'gave to a monk a morsel' (ālopaṁ bhikkhuṇo datvā). A morsel (ālopaṁ): a mouthful, meaning merely one morsel of food. A piece of cloth measuring a hand (pañimattāna ca colakaṇṇa): the size of one hand, meaning a bit of cloth. And a bowl of water (ṭhāla-kassa ca pāntyaṁ): merely one bowlful of water.

The rest is just as already given in the Bald-headed Peta Story.

Then when the venerable Sāriputta saw that peti who, having come into his presence, was stood with her faculties refreshed, completely pure in complexion and adorned with heavenly clothes and ornaments and lighting up everything around her with her own radiance, he spoke three verses, desiring to have the fruition of deeds explained by her from her own experience:
10 'You who stand with surpassing beauty, devata, lighting up all directions like the Healing Star,

11 Due to what is such beauty yours? Due to what is this accomplished by you here [71] and that there should arise whatever pleasures your heart holds dear?

12 I ask you, devi of great majesty, what meritorious deed did you do when you were human? Due to what is your shining majesty thus and your beauty radiates in all directions? 19

10 Herein surpassing (abhikkantena): extremely lovely, meaning very beautiful. With beauty (vannaena): with complexion. Lighting up all directions (abhāsentī disā sabbā): shining in all the ten directions with a single light. In what manner? He said, 'Like the Healing Star'. This star has acquired the name Osadhi since excessive (ussāvina-) radiance is contained (dhiyati) by it or since it contributes to giving strength 20 to medicines (osadhitnam): just as it stands shedding light all about it, even so do you (stand) lighting up all directions -- this is the meaning.

11 Due to what? (kena): the word 'what' (kūn) in its interrogative form; this is the instrumental case in the sense of (asking for the) cause, meaning due to what cause? Yours: te-tāva (alternative grammatical form). Such (etiādiso): 21 this is said with reference to how it appears at the moment. Due to what is this accomplished by you here? (kena te idha-m-ijhathi): due to what especially meritorious deed is this fruit of good conduct that is now being received by you accomplished, produced, here, at this place? There should arise (upajjanti): there should come into existence. Pleasures (bhogā): outstanding possessions and means such as clothes and ornaments and so on that have acquired the name 'pleasures' (bhogā) through being fit to be enjoyed (paribhūjitaḥbattenā). Whatever (ye keci) means (all) pleasures are embraced and included, without remainder, for this is an expression embracing (everything) without remainder, as in that of 'whatever is compounded' (ye keci saṅkhārā). Your heart holds dear (manaso piyā): that are endeared to your heart, meaning that are dear to your heart.

12 I ask (puccāmi): I put the question, meaning I wish to know. You: tum=tvan (alternative grammatical form). Devi (devi): she is a devi due to her being endowed with heavenly majesty. For this reason he said, 'Of great majesty'. When you were human (manussabhūtā): when you were born amongst men and had attained the human state. This is said in accordance with the general rule that beings perform meritorious deeds whilst they remain in a human existence. This is the meaning of these verses in brief only. It should, however, be understood just as has already been
given in detail in the Commentary on the Mansion Stories (section) of this Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning.

[72] The petif, questioned thus by the elder, spoke the remaining verses, clarifying the reason as to how this excellence of hers had been received:

13 The compassionate sage for the world saw me gone to a miserable existence — yellowish, emaciated, famished, naked and with a wrinkled skin.

14 He gave to the monks a morsel, a piece of cloth measuring a hand and a bowl of water and assigned the donation to me.

15 Behold the fruit of that morsel: for one thousand years I shall eat food curried with many flavours, enjoying the gratification of all my desires.

16 Behold what kind of result there is of a piece of cloth measuring a hand: as many clothes as were in the whole of king Nanda’s realm.

17 Still more than that, sir, are my clothes and coverings of silk and wool, linen and cotton.

18 Many and costly are they — they even hang down from the sky and I just put on whichever takes my fancy.

19 Behold what kind of result there is from a bowl of water: deep, four-cornered and well laid out lotus ponds.

20 With clear water and beautiful banks, cool and fragrant, covered with lotuses and water lilies, the water full of lotus filaments.

21 And I sport and play and enjoy myself, having nothing to fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come to salute the compassionate sage for the world.

13 Herein yellowish (uppanḍukīm): having become yellowish. Famished (chātām): wishing to eat, overcome with hunger. With a wrinkled skin (sampatticchāvīm): with the skin of my body chapped and broken. For the world (lake): this shows the range of the compassion of the one here said to be ‘compassionate’. Me (tam mām): me in that condition, me in a state that certainly (calls for) compassion as already mentioned. Gone to a miserable existence (duggatām): gone to a state of misery.

14 He gave to the monks a morsel (bhikkhunam ālopana datvā): and so on indicates the way in which the elder acted out of compassion.

15 [73] Herein food (bhattam): boiled rice, meaning heavenly food. For one thousand years (vassasatanm dasa): for ten times a hundred years is said to be a thousand years; this is the accusative case in the sense of a continuous period of time. Curried with many flavour, enjoying the gratification of all my desires (kāmakāmin antekarasasavyājanam): I shall eat
food curried with many flavours, endowed with yet other desirable sense pleasures — this is how it should be construed.

16 A piece of cloth (colassa): this indicates the meritorious deed consisting in giving²⁹ with this as its object under the general heading of merit-offerings. Behold what kind of result (vipākaṃ passa yādisan): behold the fruit, the result so-called, of that gift of a piece of cloth, sir, of what kind, of what form, it is. In case (one should ask) 'What?', the peti said,³⁰ 'As many (clothes as were in the whole) of king Nanda's (realm)' and so on.

Now in this connection who was this king Nanda?

It is said that long ago, when the human life-span was ten thousand years, a man of property who was a resident of Benares saw a certain Pacekabuddha in his forest haunt when taking a walk in the forest. The Pacekabuddha had been making a robe there but had folded it up and begun to put it aside, the binding being insufficient.³¹ When the man of property saw this, he said, 'What are you doing, sir?' Though nothing was said by him due to his few wants,³² he realised that the robe material was not sufficient;³³ laid his outer cloak at the Pacekabuddha's feet and went away.³⁴ The Pacekabuddha took it and, adding it to the binding, made the robe and put it on. At the end of his (natural) life the man of property died, and arose³⁵ in the realm of the Thirty-three. He enjoyed heavenly excellence there for his entire life-span and after falling from there arose in a family of special advisers (to the king) in a certain village at a place a yojana distant from Benares. At the time he came of age, the new-month festivity was announced in that village. He said to his mother, 'Mother, please give me a cloak so that I can take part in the new-month festivity.' She got out a clean garment and gave it to him. 'Mother, this is rough' (he said). She got out another and gave it to him but he refused this too. Then his mother said to him, 'Son, ever since we were born in this house we have not had any merit for acquiring clothes finer than these.' 'I will go to a place for obtaining it, mother.' 'Go then, son, I wish that you might this very day acquire sovereignty of the city of Benares.' [74] 'Very well, mother', he replied. He saluted his mother, circumambulated her by the right³⁶ and said, 'Goodbye, mother.' 'Goodbye, son.' It is said that the thought³⁷ occurred to her thus, 'Where can he go? He will just sit here or there about the house.' But urged on by way of his meritorious deeds³⁸ he left the village and went to Benares where he lay down to sleep on an auspicious slab of stone after covering himself from the head down. Now that was the seventh day following the death of the king of Benares. When the king's special advisers and chief-priest had performed the funeral rites, they sat in the royal courtyard and took counsel, saying, 'There is one daughter of the king but no son — a kingdom with no king does not endure.
We must despatch the carriage of state. They harnessed four Sindh horses the colour of the white lotus and installed in the carriage the five-fold royal regalia headed by the white umbrella. They then despatched the carriage and had the music struck up at the rear. The carriage left by the eastern gate headed towards the park. Some said, 'The carriage is going along headed towards the park through habit. Turn it back!' But the chief-priest said, 'Do not turn it back!' The carriage circumambulated the boy by the right and then stood ready to be mounted. The chief-priest lifted a corner of the covering, inspecting the soles of his feet, and said, 'Let this (boy) be our refuge — he is capable of creating a single realm of the four great continents and the two thousand surrounding islands', and then had the music struck up three times, saying, 'Strike up the music! Strike it up again!' The boy then uncovered his face, looked around him, and said, 'On what business have you come here, my friend?' 'Your majesty, the kingdom has come to you.' 'Where is your king?' 'He has gone to heaven, my lord.' 'How many days past?' 'Today is the seventh day.' 'Is there no son or daughter?' 'There is a daughter, your majesty, but no son.' 'Well then, in that case I will rule.' They straightaway erected a pavilion for anointing him, adorned the king's daughter with all her ornaments, took her to the park and anointed the boy. When he had been anointed, they presented him with clothes worth a hundred thousand (pieces). 'What is this, my friend?', he asked. 'Your underclothes, your majesty.' 'They are not rough are they, my friend?' There are none finer than these amongst any of the clothes used by men, your majesty.' 'Did your king dress like this?' 'Yes, your majesty.' 'I do not think your king possessed merit. Bring me the golden water jug and I will get some clothes.' They brought the golden water jug. He stood up, washed his hands, rinsed his mouth and, taking some water in his hands, sprinkled it in an easterly direction, whereupon eight wish-granting trees broke through the solid ground and rose up. He again took some water and sprinkled it to the south, to the west and to the north, thus (sprinkling it) in each of the four directions. In each of all of the directions he produced eight (trees) so that there rose up thirty-two wish-granting trees (in all). Some say that in each direction he produced sixteen (trees) so that there were sixty-four wish-granting trees (in all). He dressed in one heavenly garment, wrapped one about him, and said, 'Have it proclaimed by beat of drum that in the realm of king Nanda no thread spinning women need spin thread (any longer).'

He had them raise the umbrella and, dressed and adorned and mounted on the back of the most stately elephant, entered the city, went up into the palace and enjoyed great excellence.

So time went on until one day the queen, seeing the excellence of the
king, showed her compassion by saying, "You certainly ought to show more restraint."\textsuperscript{48} When asked, "What do you mean, devil?", she said, "You have excellence to excess, your majesty. At some time in the long past you must have done skilled deeds but now you do no skilled deeds for your future well being." "To whom can we give? There are no virtuous ones." "This Jambudīpā,\textsuperscript{49} your majesty, is not devoid of arahants. You just prepare the alms and I will get the arahants",\textsuperscript{50} she said. On the following day the king had a great almsgiving prepared. The queen wished, 'If there are arahants in this direction may they come here and accept alms from us', and prostrated herself facing the northern direction. No sooner than the queen was lying down than the Paścikabuddha Paduma, eldest of the five hundred Paścikabuddhas who were sons of queen Padumavati and who were dwelling in the Himālaya, addressed his brothers, saying, 'King Nanda is inviting you, good sirs\textsuperscript{51} — you should accept his (invitation).'

They consented and straightaway went through the air and descended at the northern gate.\textsuperscript{[76]} The people informed the king, saying, 'Five hundred Paścikabuddhas have come, your majesty.' The king went together with the queen and saluted them, took their bowls and had the Paścikabuddhas go up into the palace. There he gave them the alms. When the meal was over they lay themselves down,\textsuperscript{52} the king at the feet of the senior member of that company and the queen at the feet of the younger ones,\textsuperscript{53} saying, 'You worthy ones will not go short of the requisites; our meritorious deeds will not diminish. Please give us your consent as to staying here.' Having made them consent, he had dwelling places built in the park and supported the Paścikabuddhas for the rest of their lives. When they attained Parinibbāna, he had the sacred festivities\textsuperscript{54} performed and had the funeral rites performed with sandalwood and so on and then took their relics and installed them in a stūpa. Filled with agitation at the thought, 'If death must come even to these great rishis of such great majesty, what can be said of those like me?', he installed his eldest son as ruler and himself went forth into the homeless life of the recluse. The queen, wondering what she might do now that the king had gone forth, went forth herself. Dwelling in the park the two of them caused the jhānas to arise and passed their time in the "ease of jhāna"\textsuperscript{55} and at the end of their lifespan they arose in the Brahmaloka. It is said that the elder Mahākassapa,\textsuperscript{56} a mahāśāṅkika of our Teacher, was that king Nanda and Bhaddā Kāpiḷāṇṭ\textsuperscript{57} his queen consort. For the ten thousand years that this king Nanda himself wore heavenly clothes he made his whole realm just like Uttarakuru\textsuperscript{58} and would give heavenly garments to all-comers. Now it was with reference to this magnificence of heavenly clothes that the poet said, 'As many clothes as were in the whole of king Nanda's realm.' Herein in the realm
(vijitasmaṁ): in the kingdom. Clothes (paṭīcchādā): clothes (vattāni); they are called ‘clothes’ (paṭīcchādā)⁵⁹ since (people) clothe themselves (paṭīcchādenti) with them.

Now showing that her magnificence was now even greater than the magnificence of king Nanda⁶⁰ the pett said, ‘Still more than that, sir, are my clothes and coverings’ and so on.

17 Herein than that (tato): still more than the clothes that belonged to king Nanda are my clothes, that is, my garments. Clothes and coverings (vattāni 'echādaṁaññi): underclothes and outer clothes. [77] Of silk and wool: koseyyakambalīyaṁ=koseyyaṁ c'era kambalāṁ ca (resolution of compound). Linnen and cotton (khaṃakeppāṣikān ān ca): clothes of linen and clothes made of cotton.

18 Many (vipūḷa): many and great in length and breadth. Costly (mahaggā): of very great value through being costly. Hang down from the sky (ākāse 'valambare): remain hanging down in the sky. Whichever takes my fancy (yaṁ yaṁ hi manaso piyaṁ): and I just take whichever takes my fancy and put it on and wrap it round me – this is how it should be construed.

19 Behold what kind of result there is from a bowl of water (thālakassa ca pāṇīyaṁ vipākaṁ passa yaṭīsaṁ): behold what kind and just how great is the result of this, a mere bowlful of water given and appreciated. Indicating this she said, ‘Deep, four-cornered’ and so on. Herein deep (gambhṛā): unfathomable. Four-cornered (caturassā): rectangular in shape. Lotus ponds: pokkharāṇno=pokkharāṇiyo (alternative grammatical form). Well laid out (sanīmmitā): well laid out in accordance with her deed.

20 With clear water: setodakā=setu-udakā,⁶¹ (resolution of compound); (and)⁶² strewn with white sand. With beautiful banks (supattithā): with beautiful bathing places. Cool (stā): with cool water. Fragrant (appati-gandhiyā): with an entrancing⁶³ aroma, lacking any disagreeable odour. The water full of lotus filaments (vārikiṇjakkhapūriṭa): filled with water that is covered with the hairy filaments of lotuses and blue water lilies and so on.

21 I: sāhanā=sā ahāṁ (resolution of compound). Sport (ramāmi): find delight. Play (ktāmi): gratify⁶⁴ my senses. Enjoy myself (modāmi): am delighted at the excellence of my enjoyment. Having nothing to fear from any quarter (akutobbhayaṁ): I dwell at ease and as I like⁶⁵ lacking fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come to salute (bhante vanditum āgataṁ): I, sir, have come; that is, I have approached, to salute you who are the means of my acquiring this heavenly excellence.

That which is not analysed here as to its meaning is given elsewhere.

When this had thus been said by the pett, the venerable Śāriputta,
relating the story in detail to the people – residents of the two villages of Ițṭhakāvatī and Dīgharājī, who had come into his presence – agitated them and released them from their wicked Sāṃśāramocaka heresy and then established them as layfollowers. [78] This issue became well known to the monks and the monks raised it with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

1 It is not clear who these were nor in what their heresy consisted. At Jātaka Stories vi 117 king Angati may be found saying, “There is no door to heaven: only wait on destiny. Whether thy lot be happiness or misery, it is only gained through destiny; all will at last reach deliverance from transmigration (sāṃśārasuddhi); be not eager for the future.” It could be that they are Ājīvakas since the doctrine attributed at Di 54 to Mahāhali-Gosāla is there similarly called sāṃśārasuddhi – ‘purification through transmigration’ (Di 73).

2 A kneeling añjali salutation in which the forehead, edges of the hands and the knees touch the ground.

3 Reading assaddhākulassa with Se Be for text’s assadhā kulassa.
4 Reading asikkhita with Se for text’s āsikkhita (Be abakkhika).
5 Reading nanaṁ with Se Be for text’s nanaṁ.
6 Reading bhikkhū with Se Be for text’s bhikkhū.
7 PED sv rūp suggests dīgharājīyaṁ here means ‘of long lineage’ but it is almost certainly a reference to the above-mentioned village and should have been given in the text with a capital letter.
8 Reading dhamanisaṁhitā with Se Be for text’s dhamanisaṁhitā both here and throughout.
9 Reading kisā with Se Be and verse for text’s kisā.
10 Reading kisike with Se Be and verse for text’s kisikā.
11 Reading kisabhāvadassanantham with Se Be for text’s kisabhāva dassanantham.
12 Reading nibbattivā with Se Be for text’s nibbattivā.
13 Reading yam hi with Se Be for text’s yāhi.
14 Reading niyojeyyum with Se Be and verse for text’s yojeyyum.
15 So Se Be and verse for text’s khajjamāno.
16 Traditionally petas were thought incapable of any meritorious deeds – hence the need of relatives to do this on their behalf. See however the remarks at PvA 26 above.
17 As much as is made into a small ball when eating with the fingers.
18 I 10 above.
19 These verses recur at Vv 91.3,4.
20 Reading anubalappadāyika ti katvā with Se Be and VvA 53 for text’s anubalappadāyika is not listed in PED but cp CPD sv. According to PED sv osadhī, ‘Childers calls it Venus but gives no evidence; other translators render it “morning star”. According to Hindu mythology the lord of medicine is the moon (osadhī), not any particular star.’ No doubt it is the moon that was expected to be understood here. We need not be misled by the word ‘star’ (tāraka) for this may be used just as easily of the moon – see Sa 687 where the moon is said to be the ‘bull of stars’ (tārassābha). Moreover the morning star, however bright, could hardly be said to light up all about it as required here. Cp also Si 65; A v 62; It 20.
21 Reading Itādiso ti with Se Be; text omits ti. Verse 10 should thus be amended to read Kena te ‘tādiso. . .
22 Reading addakkhi with Se Be for text’s dakkhasi.
Reading upaṇḍukinīm with Se Be for text’s upakāṇḍakīnī both here and in city below where it is defined as upaṇḍukājītapi.
Reading sampattaccavāmin with Be for text’s appatīcchavin; see also PED sv appatīcchavin which also recommends this reading but which gives no entry at the appropriate place; Se reads appattaccavāmin.
Literally whichever my heart holds dear, as above.
Reading pokkharaṁho with Se Be and III 29 below for text’s pokkharāṇāṁ.
Reading upaṇḍukājītapi with Se Be for text’s upakāṇḍakājītapi.
Reading vassaśassanam ti vuttaṁ with Se Be for text’s vassasaśassanam nivuttaṁ;
PED entry for nivutta1 should probably be deleted.
Reading dānamayāṃ puṇānam with Se Be for text’s dānapuṇānam.
Text reads yathārūpan ti pettāna as does Se though it seems this is Hardy’s emendation since he states that all MSS. read ce ti or ve ti for pet. Be has yathārūpaṁ,
Kīn ti ce ti āna. I emend to read yathārūpaṁ. Kīn ti ce pettāna.
Reading appahonti with Se Be for text’s appabhonti.
Reading appicchātya with Se Be for text’s appicchātya.
Reading nappahoti with Se Be for text’s tassa hoti.
Reading ṣīsamāśi with Se Be for text’s ṣīsamāśi.
Reading nippattivā with Se Be for text’s nippattivā,
padakkhiṇam kāva, that is, circumambulating a person whilst keeping one’s right side turned towards that person, or in other words clock-wise and the way of the sun. It was normally performed three times (e.g. VvA 173, 219) as a means of saying farewell; as here, or as a means of greeting one newly arrived. The practice was also common in Scotland where it was known as ‘walking the deasil’ around someone – for a detailed investigation see W. Simpson, The Buddhist Praying Wheel, London 1896.
Reading cittap with Se Be for text’s pi tam.
Reading puṇāniyām is with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyām.
phussaranāṁ with Se Be for text’s phussaranāṁ.
Reading saṅgahaṁsa with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading saṅgahaṁsa with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading cittap with Se Be for text’s pi tam.
phussaranāṁ with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading saṅgahaṁsa with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading cittap with Se Be for text’s pi tam.
phussaranāṁ with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading saṅgahaṁsa with Se Be for text’s puṇāniyāmena,
Reading cittap with Se Be for text’s pi tam.
II.2 EXPOSITION OF THE ELDER SĀRIPUTTA'S MOTHER
PETĪ STORY
[Sāriputtattheramātupetivatthuvaṇṇanā]1

‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a petī who had been the mother of the venerable elder Sāriputta in her last birth but four.

One day the venerables Sāriputta, Mahāmoggallāna, Anuruddha and Kappina were staying in a certain forest haunt not far from Rājagaha. Now there was in Benares at that time a brahmin owning great riches, great wealth, immense hoards of gold and silver, who would give food, drink, clothing and bed and so on to recluse and brahmins, indigents, tramps,2 wayfarers and beggars, as a well might give water. He gave to all-comers according to occasion and desert,3 stocking a range of gifts consisting of everything that should be bestowed such as water for (washing) the feet, (ointments) for soothing the feet and so on,4 as well as serving the monks with due care with food and drink and so on for their morning meal. When going to other areas, he would say to his wife, ‘My dear, please continue
with due care this form of almsgiving just as I have arranged it, without allowing it to decline. 'Very well,' she agreed but when he had left she put an end to the form of almsgiving he had arranged for the monks. She would show to travellers who approached in search of a dwelling an old abandoned shed at the back of the house, saying, 'You can stay here,' whilst when travellers came there in search of food and drink and so on, she would say, 'Eat excrement; drink urine, drink blood; eat your mother's brains!' and curse them with the name of whatever is impure and loathsome.

She died in due course and swept up by the power of her deeds arose in the peta-womb, undergoing misery commensurate with her misconduct in speech. [79] Recollecting their connection in an earlier birth and desiring to enter the presence of the venerable Sāriputta, she reached his vihāra but the (guardian) devatās of that vihāra refused her admission to the vihāra. It is said that she had been the elder's mother in her last birth but four. She therefore said, 'In my last birth but four I was the mother of the worthy elder Sāriputta; please give me admission through the gate to see the elder.' When they heard this, the devatās granted her admission. When she had entered, she stood at the end of the walk-way and revealed herself to the elder. When the elder saw her, his heart was stirred with compassion and he questioned her with this verse:

1. 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin one, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, you who are stood here?'

On being questioned by the elder, she spoke these five verses in reply:

2. 'I was your own mother in other former births but now I have arisen on the peta-plane, endowed with hunger and thirst.

3. The thrown out, the expectorated, sputum, nose-mucus, phlegm, the fat of those being burnt and the blood of delivered women.

4. And the blood from wounds and that from severed noses and heads — overwhelmed by hunger I eat what is attached to men and women.

5. I feed on pus and blood of cattle and of men and am without shelter and without home, resting on the black bed.

6. Give, dear son, a gift for me and when you have given make it over to me — surely then I will be freed from eating pus and blood.'

2. Herein I was your own mother (ahān te sākiyā mātā): I was your own mother who brought you into the world. In other former births (pubbe aṇhāsu jātisu): though being your mother, it was not in this birth, but in other former births, in my last birth but four — this is how it should
be regarded. But now I have arisen on the peta-plane (uppanñā pettivissayan); but now I have come to the world of the petas by way of rebirth. [80] Endowed with hunger and thirst (khuppipāsāsamappātī): provided with hunger and thirst, meaning being overcome with an incessant desire to eat and to drink.

3 The thrown out (chadikkatā): the thrown up, meaning the vomited.11 The expectorated (khipitā): the impurities that leave the mouth upon expectoration. Sputum (khelā): spittle. Nose-mucus (siṣīghāṇīkarn): the impurities that leave the nose after streaming down from the brains. Phlegm: sileṣamantāsemhāṃ (alternative grammatical form).12 The fat of those being burnt (vasaṅ ca dayhamānānānā): the fat and oil of corpses that are being burnt on the funeral pile. And the blood of delivered women (vijītānā ca lohitā): and the blood of women who have delivered; the impurities of the womb are included by the word 'and'.

4 From wounds (vaṇipatā): from wounds that have arisen. That (yāṃ): the blood – this is (the word) with which it connects. From severed noses and heads (gāṇasasacchinnām): I eat the blood from severed noses and also from severed heads – this is how it should be construed. This ‘from severed noses and heads’ is a heading for (further) teaching. Since I also eat the blood from severed hands and feet and so on, the13 blood from these may also be regarded as included by (the expression) ‘from wounds’. Overwhelmed by hunger (khudāparetā): overcome by a desire to eat. What is attached to men and women (ittippurisanissītā): this indicates that she eats what is attached to the bodies of men and women as aforesaid and other14 things such as the skin, flesh, sinew and pus and so on.

5 Of cattle (pasùnā): of goats, cows and buffaloes and so on.15 Without shelter (aḷena): without refuge. Without home (anagārā): without a dwelling. Resting on the black bed (nītamañcaparāyaṇā): lying on a bed of impurities that have been abandoned16 in a cemetery. Or, alternatively, ‘black’ (nīta) refers to the cemetery ground with its many ashes and embers, meaning lying on just this as though it were a bed.

6 Make it over to me (anvādisahi me): please give an assigned gift dedicating it in such a way that the donation that has been given will be of benefit to me.17 Surely then I will be freed from eating pus and blood (app’ eva nāma muṇceyyaṃ pubbalohitabhōjanā): surely I will be freed from this life as a pet eating pus and blood by means of your dedication.

When he heard this the venerable elder Sāriputta consulted, on the following day, the three elders, that is, the elder Mahāmoggallāna and so on, and, going together with them [81] to Rājagaha in search of alms, came to the dwelling of king Bimbisāra. When the king saw the elder, he saluted
him and asked him of the reason for his visit, saying, ‘For what purpose have you come here, venerable sir?’ The venerable Mahāmoggallāna informed the king of the incident. The king said, ‘You have my permission, reverend sir’, and then dismissed the elders. He summoned his minister who looked after everything and commanded, ‘Have four huts built near the city in a grove that is shaded and well watered.’ He divided his inner city into three in accordance with their particular expertise, had the four huts roofed, and then went there himself and did what had to be done. When the huts were completed, he had all the food offerings prepared and all the proper requisites such as food, drinks and clothes and so on got ready for the order of monks with the Buddha at its head and then handed all this over to the venerable elder Sāriputta. The elder then gave all this on behalf of that peti to the order of monks of the four quarters with the Buddha at its head. The peti showed her appreciation to him and arose in the devaloka, richly endowed with all she desired. On a later day she approached the venerable elder Mahāmoggallāna, saluted him and then remained while the elder questioned her. She told him in detail about how she had arisen as a peti and as a devi. For this reason it was said:

7 When he had heard what his mother had to say, Upatissa, possessing pity, consulted Moggallāna, Anuruddha and Kappina.

8 He built four huts and he gave those huts together with food and drink to the Saṅgha of the four quarters and then dedicated that donation to his mother.

9 Immediately he dedicated this the result came into being, food, drink and clothing being the fruit of this donation.

10 Thereupon she became pure, clad in fresh, clean clothes, wearing those more fine than those of Kāsi and, bedecked in various clothes and ornaments, she approached Kolita.

8 Herein he gave to the Saṅgha of the four quarters: saṅgha cāuddise adā-cāuddisassa saṅghassa adāsi (alternative grammatical form), meaning he handed over (to them).

[82] The rest has just the meaning stated.

The venerable Mahāmoggallāna then questioned that peti:

11 You who stand with surpassing beauty, devatā, lighting up all directions like the Healing Star,

12 Due to what is such beauty yours? Due to what is this accomplished by you here and that there should arise whatever pleasures your heart holds dear?

13 I ask you, devi of great majesty, what meritorious deed did you do
when you were human? Due to what is your shining majesty thus and your beauty radiates in all directions?'

She then answered, saying, 'I was the mother of Sāriputta' and so on. The rest has just the meaning stated.

Then the venerable Mahāmoggallāna raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

1 So Be for text's Se Sāriputtatharassassattu.
2 Reading 'kapanaddhīka' with Se Be for text's 'kapanaddhīka'.
3 Reading yathāraḥam with Se Be for text's yathā raham.
4 Reading pādodakapādabhajanādānānupubbakam sabbābhideyyam with Be (or Se) for text's pādodakapādabhajanādānānupubbakam sabbāpāthheyyam.
5 Reading paṭissunīvā with Se Be for text's paṭissunīvā.
6 Reading chaḍḍitam with Se Be for text's chaḍḍitam.
7 'This vihāra' was presumably in the forest haunt in which he was earlier said to be staying.
8 chaṭkamanakoṭiyam, a long strip of ground on which one walks up and down when developing mindfulness; cp also GS iii 21 n. 2.
9 Reading pasūnan with Se Be for text's pasunam.
10 Reading anagārā with Se Be for text's anagarā.
11 Reading vantan ti with Se Be for text's vantanii.
12 śilesuma is the dialetic form of the contraction semha; cp PED sv śileśuma.
13 Text wrongly begins a new sentence here.
14 Reading aṭṭhān ca with Se Be for text's aṭṭhān.
15 Cp II 1318, PVA 166 and AV XI 29.
16 Reading chaḍḍitamalamaṭṭiyaṇā with Se Be for text's chaḍḍitamalā maṭṭiyaṇā.
17 Reading mayhaṃ upakappati tathā uddissa paṭṭidānām dehi with Se Be for text's mayhaṃ uddissa paṭṭidānām dehi.
18 antepure, sometimes harem but here apparently the various craftsmen in his palace or city.
19 Adopting the text's vi paṭṭeṣhādeśi for all texts' paṭṭeṣhāpeṣi.
20 balikarāṇaṃ: a fivefold offering on behalf of relatives, guests, petas, the king and the devatās can be found at A ii 68 (cp A iii 45).
21 parikkheśa: various lists are to be found, the earliest of which being probably that of four, viz. robe, almsfood, bed and seat, and medicines, commonly encountered throughout this text. Cp PED sv.
22 Things may be donated to monks in either of two ways, either to an individual monk for his own use or to a monk (or monks) on behalf of the whole Sangha. In the latter case what is given then becomes sanghika or the property of the Sangha and cannot be disposed of by individual monks. When a monk wishes to make a presentation of some item to a visiting tayman he normally does so stating at the same time that it is not sanghika, implying thereby that it is his own property to be disposed of as he wishes. See Vin i 250 where these two methods are clearly distinguished and cp also II 34', III 24'. See also S. Dutt, Early Buddhist Monachism, 1960, pp. 67ff. The merit earned by a gift to the order of monks of the four quarters might be expected to surpass that earned by a gift to an individual monk, even were the latter an arahant. However on the basis of the principle laid down at M i 236f, it would seem that the merit earned by Rimbisāra would have been that of a gift to the individual
Sāriputta alone, whilst that earned by Sāriputta (and assigned to the petī) was that earned by this subsequent gift to the order of the four quarters and thus considerably greater.

33 The personal name of Sāriputta (M I 150) and, according to some accounts, the name of his village.

34 catasso kutiya katvā, presumably by persuading the king to do this on his behalf as the story above suggests; the cty below is silent.

35 The personal name of Mahāmoggallāna after his village of the same name. This verse is to be found in Se and Be as well as our text and Gehman’s note that it is only in the Burmese MS., Phayre Collection’ should perhaps be deleted.

36 The wording here strongly suggests that there were originally further verses in answer to the questions posed in vv 12–13. Whilst neither our text, Se nor Be contains these, two MSS. later consulted by Hardy add a further verse:

Through that gift of Sāriputta I enjoy myself, having nothing to fear from any quarter. I, sir, have come to salute the compassionate sage for the world.

(Sāriputtassā dānena modāni akutobhayā munīṃ kāruṇikāṃ loke ταῦ ὁδὸν bhaddante vanditum āgatā ti)

and one of these MSS. apparently inserted after v 13 and before this additional verse a repetition of vv 2–5 above but with the exception that the ‘I was your own mother’ (aḥaṃ te sākiyā mātā) of v 2 is now replaced by ‘She was the mother of Sāriputta’ (Sāriputtassā sā mātā) which closely resembles the ‘I was the mother of Sāriputta’ (Sāriputtassā aḥaṃ mātā) seemingly quoted here by Dhammapāla (see JPTS 1904–5 p. 149 and Pr).

II.3 EXPOSITION OF THE MATTĀ PETĪ STORY

[Mattāpetivatthuvaṇṇanā]

‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jetavana Grove concerning a petī named Mattā.

It is said that in Āvattī there was a certain man of property who had faith and devotion. His wife, who was known by the name of Mattā, had neither faith nor devotion and was of an angry disposition and barren. Now that man of property, out of fear that the family line would be cut off, took a bride named Tissa from a similar clan. She had faith and devotion and was dear and charming to her husband. She became pregnant before long and after ten months gave birth to a son. His name was Bhūtā. She became mistress of the house and supported four monks with due care. The barren (wife) became jealous1 of her. One day they both bathed their heads and were standing with wet hair. The man of property was in love with Tissa on account of her qualities and would often stand talking with her with a solemn heart. Being unable to bear this and overcome with envy Mattā swept the house and poured the rubbish she had collected over Tissa’s head. She died in due course and arose in the peta-womb undergoing,
through the power of her deeds, a misery that was fivefold. This misery is made known by the text. Then one day as evening wore on she revealed herself to Tissā who was bathing at the back of the house. When she saw her Tissā questioned her with this verse:

1 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin one, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, you who are stood here?'

The other spoke in reply with this verse:

2 'I am Mattā, you are Tissā. I was your co-wife in the past. Having done a wicked deed I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

2 Herein I am Mattā, you are Tissā (aham Mattā tuvan Tissā): you are named Tissā whilst I am named Mattā. In the past (pure): in my previous existence. I was: aham=ahosim your: te=tuyham (alternative grammatical forms) co-wife.

Tissā questioned her once more about the deed she had done with this verse:

3 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?'

The other then explained the deed she had done with this verse:

4 'I was quick-tempered and harsh, I was envious, mean and crafty. Having said ill words of you I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'


From here onwards they continued to exchange conversation with these verses:

5 'I, too, know all this, how quick-tempered you were; but there is something else that I would ask you: why are you covered with dust?'

6 'You had bathed your head and were clean clothed and adorned; yet I was still more so, even more adorned than you.

7 Whilst I looked on you conversed with our husband whereupon you caused intense envy and anger to be born in me.
At this I took some dust and poured that dust over you. It is as a result of that deed that I am covered with dust.

'I, too, know all this, (how) you poured dust over me; but there is something else that I would ask you: why are you eaten up with the itch?'

'We both went to the edge of the forest to fetch medicinal herbs. You brought back medicinal herbs whilst I the kapikacchu.'

Then without your knowing it I scattered them over your bed. It is as a result of that deed that I am eaten up with the itch.

'I, too, know all this, (how) you scattered them over my bed; but there is something else that I would ask you: why are you in the nude?'

There was an assembly of companions, a coming together of relatives took place; and you were asked along with our husband but I not.

Then without your knowing it I removed your clothes. It is as a result of that deed that I am in the nude.

'I, too, know all this, (how) you removed my clothes; but there is something else that I would ask you: why do you smell of excrement?

'I threw your scents and garlands and costly ointments into the latrine — that wicked deed was done by me. It is as a result of that deed that I smell of excrement.'

'I, too, know all this, (how) that wicked deed was done by you; but there is something else that I would ask you: why do you have a miserable existence?

'Whatever wealth was to be found in our house belonged to both of us equally — yet though merit-offerings were at hand I made no refuge for myself. It is as a result of that deed that I have a miserable existence.

Even then you spoke to me, saying, "You are pursuing wicked deeds; surely it is not by wicked deeds that a happy state is easily attained".'

'You approached me from the wrong side and what is more you were jealous of me too. Behold what sort of result there is from wicked deeds.

You had house, servants and these ornaments. These are now enjoyed by others — possessions are not everlasting.

Bhūta's father is now coming home from the market. Maybe he will give you something. Do not go from here till then.'

Naked and of hideous appearance am I, emaciated and with prominent
veins. This is shameful for women. Do not let Bhūta's father see me.'
24  'Well what can I give you or what can I do for you by which you might be happy and richly endowed with all you desire?'
25  'Four monks as of the order and four as individuals' — please feed these eight monks and assign that donation to me; then I will be happy and richly endowed with all I desire.'
26  'Very well,' she consented. She fed eight monks, clad them in clothes and assigned that donation to her.
27  Immediately she dedicated this the result came into being, food, clothing and drink being the fruit of this donation.
28  Thereupon she became pure, clad in fresh, clean clothes, wearing those more fine than those of Kāsi and, bedecked in various clothes and ornaments, she approached her co-wife.
29  'You who stand with surpassing beauty, devatā, lighting up all directions like the Healing Star,
30  Due to what is such beauty yours? Due to what is this accomplished by you here and that there should arise whatever pleasures your heart holds dear?
31  I ask you, devī of great majesty, what meritorious deed did you do when you were human? Due to what is your shining majesty thus and your beauty radiates in all directions?'
32  'I am Mattā, you are Tissā. I was your co-wife in the past. Having done a wicked deed I have gone from here to the world of the petas; but now, through the gift given by you, I enjoy myself, having nothing to fear from any quarter.
33  May you live long, my sister, with all your relatives (and may you attain) the abode of the Vasāvattis, the place that is free of sorrow and pollution.
34  Behave here in accordance with the Dhamma and give gifts, my pretty one; remove the stain of selfishness together with its root and go blameless to the heavenly place.'

[86] Herein I, too, know all this, how quick-tempered you were (sabbatā hāma pījānāmi yathā yam caṃçikā ahū): this 'I was quick-tempered and harsh' that you said, I, too, know all this — how you were quick-tempered, of an angry disposition, harsh spoken, envious, mean and crafty. But there is something else that I would ask you (aṭṭhaṇā ca kho tām puṭṭhāni): but now there is something else that I would ask you, Why are you covered with dust? (kennā piṃsugūṇhītā): due to what deed are you covered with dust and rubbish, meaning (due to what deed) have (dust and rubbish) been poured all over your body?
6 You had bathed your head (sīsan nahātā): you had bathed from the head down. Still more so (adhimattā): more excessively. Even more adorned (samanalakārā): thoroughly and most exquisitely adorned. An alternative reading is exceedingly (adhimattā): extremely drunk, drunk with conceit and pride, meaning riddled with conceit. Than you (tayā): than you, my dear.

7 You conversed with our husband (sāmikena samantayi): you spoke with our husband, talking to one another.

9 Eaten up with the itch (khajjāsi kacchuyā): devoured by scabies, meaning afflicted (therewith).

10 To fetch medicinal herbs: bhesajjāhāt=bhesajjāhāriniyo (alternative grammatical form); fetching medicines. We both (ubhayo): we two, meaning you and I. To the edge of the forest (vanantarś): to the forest. You brought back medicinal herbs (tvan ca bhesajjanā āhari): you brought back medicinal herbs that would be good for you, as prescribed by the physicians. Whilst I the kapikacchu (āhari ca kapikacchuno): whereas I brought back kapikacchu fruits, fruits that are unpleasant to touch. The kapikacchu is alternatively called ‘sayaṇ guttā’, in which case it means I brought back sayaṇ guttā leaves and fruits.

11 I scattered them over your bed (seyyām ty āham samokirinā): I scattered your bed all over with kapikacchu fruits and leaves.

13 Of companions (sahāyānam): of friends. An assembly (samayo): a meeting. Of relatives (nātānām): of kinsmen. A coming together (samīśī): a gathering. Asked (āmantiṭā): invited to a festivity. Along with our husband (sasāṁniṭ): along with our lord, meaning along with the one who supports us. But I not (no ca kho ‘hān̄): but I was not asked -- this is how it should be construed.

14 I... your clothes: dussam ty āham=dussam te aham (resolution of compound). Removed (apāṇudī̀n): took away by stealing.

16 [87] Costly (paccagghān̄): fresh, or very costly. I threw (athāresin) I cast. Smell of excrement (gāthagandhim): smell with the odour of excrement, emit the smell of faeces.

18 Whatever wealth was to be found in our house (yam gehe vijjite dhanam): whatever wealth was received in our house belonged to us both as relatives, to you and to me, equally and evenly. Were at hand (santesu): were known. Refuge (dlīpan): support; she speaks with reference to meritorious deeds.

19 When that petī had explained the points on which she had been questioned by Tissā, she spoke once more, saying, ‘Even then you (spoke) to me’ and so on, confessing the guilt she felt at not having formerly heeded her words. Herein even then (tad eva): even then, at that same
time that I remained in my existence as a human. An alternative reading is, 'in the very manner' ('taṁ 'eva'), meaning that which has now come about has done so in the very manner (in which you spoke to me), To me (mam): she refers to herself. You (tvam): Tissā, Spoke (avaca): told, '(You are pursuing) wicked deeds' and so on was said to show the manner in which she spoke. The text has 'wicked deeds'. You are performing only wicked deeds but a happy state is not easily attained by wicked deeds — rather it is a state of misery that is easily attained (thereby). She says that it (has now come about) in the very manner in which she had formerly spoken exhorting her.

When she heard this, Tissā uttered the three verses beginning, 'You approached me from the wrong side':

20 Herein you approached me from the wrong side (vāmato mam tvam paccesi): you had a wrong opinion of me — though I desired your welfare you took me to be acting hostilely. You were jealous of me: mam usuyyasi= mayham usuyyasi (alternative grammatical form); you envied me. Behold what sort of result there is from wicked deeds (passa pāpānaṁ kammānaṁ vipāko hoti yādiso): she says, 'Behold for yourself what sort of result there is from wicked deeds and how very terrible it is.'

21 These are now enjoyed by others (te aṁhe paricārenti): these houses, servants and these ornaments that were formerly possessed by you are now enjoyed, made use of, by others. These (tūme) is given with a distortion of gender. Possessions are not everlasting (na bhogā hoti sassaśā): these possessions are indeed not everlasting, are not stable, (enduring only) as long as one's time (in a given existence) and have to be left behind when going (on to a new existence). Therefore on this account envy and selfishness should not be entertained — this is the meaning.

22 [88] Bhūta's father is now (fidāni Bhūtassa pitā): Bhūta's, my son's, father, the man of property, is now. From the market: āpanā=āpanato (alternative grammatical form); coming, returning, to this home. Maybe he will give you something (app' eva te dade kiñci): when the man of property has come home he may well give you something fit to be given as a merit-offering. Do not go from here till then (mā su tāva ito agā): she says out of compassion, 'Do not go from here, from this yard at the back of the house, until then.'

23 When she heard this, the pett uttered the verse (beginning:) 'Naked and of hideous appearance am I', making known how she felt disposed. Herein this is shameful for women (koptnam etam ithītṇam): this nakedness and hideousness and so on that is shameful for women must be kept apart due to its need to be covered. Do not let Bhūta's father see me (mā mam Bhūtapiṇḍādasa): 'Therefore do not let Bhūta's father, that man of property, see me', she says shamefully.
24 When she heard this Tissā was filled with (a desire to) help and uttered the verse (beginning:) ‘Well what can I give you.’ Herein well (handa) is a particle put in metri causā. What can I give you?: kin tāham dammi=kin te aham dammi (resolution of compound); shall I give you clothes or food? Or what can I do for you? (kin va ca te karom aham): or what other service can I do for you here at this time?

25 When she heard this, the peti uttered the verse (beginning:) ‘Four monks as of the order.’ Herein four monks as of the order and four as individuals (cattāro bhikkhū saṅghato cattāro para puggale): four monks from the order of monks representing the Saṅgha and four monks as individuals – please feed eight such monks to their satisfaction and assign that donation to me, please give for me a gift that is assigned. Then I will be happy(tadāham sukhitā hessam) means that you have dedicated that donation to me I will then be happy, will attain happiness, and be richly endowed with all I desire.

When she heard this, Tissā informed her husband of the matter and on the following day he fed eight monks and assigned the donation to her. She straightaway attained heavenly excellence and once more approached Tissā. To illustrate this point those rehearsing the texts inserted the three verses beginning: ‘Very well’, she consented.’ As she stood there after approaching, Tissā questioned her with the three verses that begin: ‘You who stand’ with surpassing beauty.’ [89] The other disclosed her identity with the verse (beginning:) ‘I am Mattā’ and showed her appreciation with the verse (beginning:) ‘May you live long’, thereafter exhorting her with the verse (beginning:) ‘Behave here in accordance with the Dhamma.’

32 Herein given by you: tava dinnena=tyā dinnena (alternative grammatical form).

33 The place that is free of sorrow and pollution (asokam virajam phānam): the heavenly place that is free of sorrow due to the absence of sorrow and that is free of pollution due to the absence of sweat and dirt – she says all this with reference to the devaloka. The abode (āvāsanam): the place. Of the Vasavattis (Vasavattinam): of those exercising (vattettānam) their power (vasanam) with heavenly supremacy.

34 Together with its root (samulam): together with the blemish of greed, for the blemish of greed is indeed the root of selfishness. Blameless (anindita): without reproach, praiseworthy. Go to the heavenly place (saggam upchi thānam): may you go to the heavenly place, meaning may you be one destined to a happy state that is called ‘heavenly’ (saggam) as it is supreme (sāthi-aggati) in its range of sense objects such as those that are visible and so on. The rest is quite self-evident.
Tissā then raised the issue with that man of property. The man of property raised it with the monks and the monks raised it with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. When they heard this those people, having received this agitation, removed the stain of selfishness and so on and became given to the virtue of giving and so forth and were those destined to a happy state.

1 Reading usāyati with Se Be for text's dassayati.
2 Reading sañjhāya with Be (Se samjhāya) for text's sañjhāya.
3 Reading Mattā nāma with Se Be for text's Mattā.
4 Reading pure ti with Be Be for text's pure.
5 Reading te ti with Se Be for text's te.
6 Reading śamantayi with Se Be for text's śamantayi.
7 Mucuna pruriatus.
8 Reading samitt with Se Be for text's samitim.

vāmāto, literally from the left. Compare the auspicious practice of circumambulation by the right e.g. PvA 74 above.
9 Reading parivārenti with Se Be for text's parivārenti.
10 Cp PvA 81.
11 kacchurogena, literally by the kacchu or itching-disease.
12 osadhī - cp PvA 71 above.
13 Literally self-protected - in virtue of its unpleasant nature. Be reads saṇyāṃ bhūti throughout which would mean self-grown of self-dependent.
14 Reading eva with Se Be for text's evam.
15 It should be neuter nominative plural, imāni, agreeing with tān evābhāsapānī, and not ime, masculine, as in the verse.
16 Cp PvA 175 below. This is perhaps a somewhat unusual statement of impermanence in that it is here the impermanence of the possessor that renders the objects possessed impermanent rather than any inherent quality in those objects themselves.
17 kopiṇam, literally the pudenda and by extension both what is shameful (cp Latin pudere, be ashamed) and also loincloth. See also PvA 172 below. Gehman's 'Here is my loincloth' is hardly correct. This sense of kopiṇam is given by Childers but is not listed in PED.
18 Reading rundhaniyyam with Se Be for text's rundhamānaṃ.
19 Reading bhikkhuśāṅghato with Se Be for text's bhikkhuśāṅghato.
20 Reading mamāuddisissati with Se Be for text's mamāuddisissati.
21 Reading pana nam with Se Be for text's pattam.
22 āhāmayā - so Be for text's adityānam; Se reads aditiṣṭhānāštāṃ, fixed place, here. Cp PED as aditiṣṭāna.
23 Reading ādhipatteyya with Se Be for text's adhi.
24 Reading saγgaṃ with Se Be for text's saγga; cp the similar etymology at PvA 9 above.
25 Reading uttāṇam with Se Be for text's vultāṇam.
II.4 EXPOSITION OF THE NANDĀ PETA STORY
[Nandāpetavatthuvaṭṭanā]

'Dark and of hideous appearance are you.' This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning a petī named Nandā.

It is said that in a certain village not far from Sāvatthī there was a lay-follower named Nandasena who had faith and devotion. However his wife, who was named Nandā, had neither faith nor devotion and was mean, quick-tempered and harsh spoken; she lacked reverence for, and was disobedient to, her husband and insulted and abused her mother-in-law with a voice (as loud as) a kettle-drum. She died in due course and arose in the peta-womb staying not far from that same village [90] and one day revealed herself not far from the layfollower Nandasena as he was leaving that village. When he saw her he addressed her with this verse:

1 'Dark and of hideous appearance are you, harsh and horrible to behold. You are red-eyed and have long, protruding (teeth). I do not think you can be human.'

1 Herein dark (kāṭī): of dark complexion; she was similar to burnt cinders in complexion. Harsh (phariśā): rough. Horrible to behold (bhārūdassanā): terrible to behold, frightening. An alternative reading is bhārūdassanā,1 grave-looking,2 meaning unsightly3 due to her hideousness and so on. Red (piṅgalā): red-eyed. Long, protruding (kaḷārā): long, protruding teeth. I do not think you can be human (na taṁ maṇṇāmi māmusin): I do not think you are human, I think you are just a petī4 — this is the meaning.

When she heard this, the petī uttered this verse explaining who she was:

2 'I am Nandā, Nandasena, I was your wife in the past. Having done a wicked deed I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

2 Herein I am Nandā, Nandasena (ahām Nanda Nandasena): my lord5 Nandasena, I am named Nandā. I was your wife in the past (bhariyā te pure ahum): I was6 your wife in my previous birth.

After this is the layfollower’s question:

3 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?'

She then answered him, saying:

4 'I was7 quick-tempered and harsh and I also lacked reverence for
you. Having said ill words of you I have gone from here to the world of the petas."

He spoke once more:

5 "Here, I will give you my cloak: put on this garment. When you have put on this garment then come and I will take you to the house.

6 [91] Clothes, food and drink shall you obtain when you have gone to the house. And you will behold your sons and see your daughters-in-law."

She then spoke these two verses to him:

7-8 "What is given by your hand into my hand is of no benefit to me. But please satisfy with food and drink monks who are endowed with virtue, free of lust and who have heard much and assign that donation to me — then I will be happy and richly endowed with all I desire."

These three verses were said by those rehearsing the texts:

9 "Very well", he consented and dispensed abundant alms — food, drink, hard food, clothing and lodging, sunshades and scents and garlands and various sorts of sandals — to monks who were endowed with virtue, free of lust and who had heard much. Having satisfied them with food and drink he assigned the donation to her.

10 Immediately he dedicated this the result came into being, food, clothing and drink being the fruit of this donation.

11 Thereupon she became pure, clad in fresh, clean clothes, wearing those more fine than those of Kāśi and, bedecked in various clothes and ornaments, she approached her husband.

From here onwards are the verses of the exchange of conversation between the layfollower and the peti:

12 "You who stand with surpassing beauty, devatā, lighting up all directions like the Healing Star,

13 Due to what is such beauty yours? Due to what is this accomplished by you here and that there should arise whatever pleasures your heart holds dear?

14 I ask you, devī of great majesty, what meritorious deed did you do when you were human? Due to what is your shining majesty thus and your beauty radiates in all directions?"

15 "I am Nandā, Nandasena, I was your wife in the past. Having done a wicked deed I have gone from here to the world of the petas; but
now, through the gift given by you, I enjoy myself, having nothing to fear from any quarter.

16 May you live long, householder, with all your relatives, [92] (and may you attain) the abode of the Vasavattis, the place that is free of sorrow and pollution.

17 Behave here in accordance with the Dhamma and give gifts, householder; remove the stain of selfishness, together with its root, and go blameless to the heavenly place.'

9 Herein dispensed abundant alms (dānam vipulam ākiri): inaugurated a great almsgiving as though strewing merit-offering seeds on the field of those worthy of donations.

The rest is just the same as in the immediately preceding story.

When she had thus explained to Nandasena her heavenly excellence and the reason for it she went to her own dwelling. The layfollower raised the issue with the monks and the monks raised it with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

1 So Be; text merely repeats bhīrudyasanā; Se reads bhīrudiṣṭakā. Cp PVA 142 below.

3 Reading bhīrudyasanā with Se for text’s bhārīya.

3 Reading duddassika with Se for text’s duddassikā.

4 Reading petisaca tam with Se for text’s petisacanan.

4 Reading sāmi with Se for text’s sāmi.

4 Reading ahosi with Se for text’s ahosi.

4 Reading c’āsi with Se for text’s c’āsi.

4 Reading sāsana with Se for text’s sāsana.

5 bahussute, the equivalent of being ‘well read’ in a community in which teachings were passed on orally.

10 Reading vattamenaśanāni with Se for text’s vattamenaśanāni.

11 Reading evaśāntauṁubhāvā with Se for text’s bhavā.

11.5 EXPOSITION OF THE MAṬṬAKUNḌALIN PĒTA STORY
[Maṭṭakunḍalinīpetavatthuvāṇṇanā]

‘Adorned, wearing polished earrings.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning the devaputta Maṭṭakunḍalinī. Herein whatever was to be said is exactly as given in the Exposition of the Maṭṭakunḍalinī Mansion Story in the Exposition of the Mansion
Stories (section) of this Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning and should therefore be understood just as already given there.

In this case it is the story of the devaputta Mattakundalin from when he became a vimāna-devatā onwards. (His father) the brahmin Adinnapubbaka had gone to the cemetery through grief for (the loss of) his son and was wandering around his funeral-pyre weeping when (his son) the devaputta, with the purpose of dispelling his grief, abandoned his deva-form and revealed himself as a peta that was overcome with misery and, with arms clasped (in sorrow) was wading, 'Ah, moon! Ah, sun!' Even though it was included in the text of the Mansion Stories his story is to be regarded as also included in the text of the Peta Stories for the reason that anyone who has left the human state may be referred to by the designation 'peta'.

1 The name means 'polished earrings'.
2 VvA 322-330.
3 See Stories of the Mansions pp. 144-147.
4 Reading sokāparattham with Be for text's sokāparī (Se sokāparī).
5 So Be read hariçandanusado, with an application of yellow sandalwood (on the skin), here. Though he is so described at Vv 83 he is also said in the Introductory story immediately preceding this verse to be crying out 'Ah, moon! Ah, sun!' The reading of our text seems preferable given the way in which the story develops, since Mattakundalin pretends to be seeking the moon and the sun as wheels for his chariot. In lamenting not being able to obtain them he is at least seeking what can be seen and Adinnapubbaka thereupon realises his own foolishness in seeking what can no longer be seen, that is, his dead son. See also the following Peta Story.
6 manussattabhāvato apetattā petapariyāyo pi bbbhati eva. It would seem that 'peta' here can mean nothing more than 'departed' yet such an explanation would surely allow the inclusion of any story concerning a deceased person which can hardly be Dhammapāla's intention. Rather it might be supposed that this story had been included since Mattakundalin is said to have assumed the form of a peta. Curiously this is not mentioned in the VvA version where Mattakundalin appears instead as a brahmin youth, adorned, wearing polished earrings and so on and owning a golden chariot.

II 6 EXPOSITION OF THE KANHIA PETA STORY
[Kanhapatavatthuvānānā]

[93] 'Arise, Kanha, why are you lying down?' The Teacher who was staying in the Jeta Grove told this concerning a certain layfollower whose son had died.
It is said that in Sāvatthī the son of a certain layfollower had died. Pierced by the dart of grief he would not bathe, eat, go about his business nor go and wait upon the Buddha. He would only talk in a confused manner, saying, ‘Where are you, my dear young son? Where have you gone so soon, forsaking me?’ and so on. The Teacher, who was surveying the world towards dawn, saw his potential for realising the sotāpatti-fruit and on the following day went to Sāvatthī in search of alms, surrounded by the order of monks. When he had finished his meal, he dismissed the monks and went with his attendant, the elder Ānanda, to the door of his house. The servants informed the layfollower of the Teacher’s arrival and then had the Teacher be seated on the seat they had prepared. Then they looked for the layfollower and led him into the Teacher’s presence. When he saw him seated at one side, he asked, ‘What, are you in mourning, layfollower?’ When he said, ‘Yes, Lord’, he said, ‘Layfollower, the wise men of old heard a tale from the wise men and did not bewail a son who had died,’ and, when begged by him, recounted (that tale) of long ago.

It is said that long ago in the city of Dvāravatī there were ten royal brothers — Vāsudeva, Baladeva, Candadeva, Suriyadeva, Aggideva, Varuṇadeva, Ajjuna, Pajjuna, Ghaṭapāṅḍita and Aṅkura. Of these, the son dear to the great king Vāsudeva died. The King was overwhelmed by grief at this; he neglected all his obligations, made the anjali salutation to his bed and then lay down talking in a confused manner. At that time Ghaṭapāṅḍita thought, ‘Except for me, there is no one who can dispel my brother’s grief. I shall dispel his grief by means of a trick.’ So he assumed the appearance of a madman and, gazing up at the sky, roamed through the entire city, saying, ‘Give me the hare! Give me the hare!’ and the entire city was shaken with the news that Ghaṭapāṅḍita had gone mad. At that time the (king’s) special adviser, named Rohiṇeyya, went to king Vāsudeva and uttered this verse, beginning conversation with the king:

1 ‘Arise, Kanha, why are you lying down? What good does dreaming do you? He who is your own brother, your heart and your right eye, has been overpowered by the winds — he is yearning for the hare, Kesava!’

Herein Kanha (Kanha): he addresses Vāsudeva with his family name. What good does dreaming do you? (ko attho supimaṇa te): what profit indeed is there for you in dreaming? Own brother (sakā bhaṭā): brother by the same mother. Your heart and your right eye (hadaṇīya ca dakkhiṇam) means who is just like your heart and your right eye. Has been overpowered by the winds (tassa vātā baliyanti): the winds of insanity.
continuously arising in him have strengthened, increased and overpowered him. *He is yearning (jappati)*: he is talking in a confused manner, saying, 'Give me the hare!' *Kesava (Kesava)*: it is said he was called 'Kesava' on account of his beautiful hair; he is addressing him with this name.

The Teacher, the one who had become a Perfect Buddha, then uttered this verse elucidating how he arose from his bed when he heard these words:

2. ‘When he heard Rohiṇeyya’s words, Kesava hastily arose, stricken with grief for his brother.’

The king arose and quickly descended from the palace and then went into Gaṇapāndita’s presence, seized him firmly with both hands and, talking with him, spoke these three verses:

3. ‘Why do you, like a madman, mutter, “Hare, hare!” about this whole Dvāraka? What kind of hare do you want?’
4. One made of gold? One made of jewels? One made of copper? One made of silver even? Or one made from precious stones? (No matter,) I will have that hare made for you.
5. There are also other little hares that roam the woods and forest — I will bring you these too. What kind of hare do you want?’

[95] Herein *like a madman (ummattharūpo)*: as one who is mad. *Whole (kevalam)*: entire. *Dvāraka (Dvārakam)*: roaming about this city of Dvāravatī. *Mutter, “Hare, hare!” (sasā sasā-tilāpasī)*: mumble, ‘Hare, hare!’

5. He coaxed Gaṇapāndita with a hare with the intention (of discovering) his need for a hare, saying, ‘Say what it is that you want. Why grieve? There are also other little hares that roam the woods in the forest — I will bring you these, if you will just say, my honourable friend, what kind of hare you want.’

When he heard this Gaṇapāndita uttered this verse:

6. ‘I do not want those hares, hares that inhabit the earth. I want the hare from the moon. Bring that one down for me, Kesava!’


When the king heard this he became dejected, thinking, ‘Without doubt my brother has become as one who is mad’, and uttered this verse:

7. ‘Now, my relative, you will surely throw away your sweet life. You
long for what should not be longed for when you want the hare from the moon.

7 Herein *my relative* (nāṭi): he addresses his younger brother. Now this is the meaning here: 'My dear relative, I think that you will throw away your extremely sweet life if you long for what should not be longed for.

When Ghaṭapandjita heard what the king had to say, he stood there motionless, saying, 'Brother, knowing as you do that there will be a loss of life for one who, longings for the hare from the moon, does not obtain it, why do you bewail a son who has died whom you cannot obtain?', and uttered this verse elucidating this point:

8 [96] If you, Kanha, thus know the manner in which you advise others, then why do you, even today, bewail a son who died in the past?

8 Herein *if you, Kanha, thus know* (evaṁ ce Kanha jānāsti): if you thus know, my brother, great king Kanha, that a thing that is unobtainable is indeed not to be longed for. *The manner in which (you advise) others* (yathā anāśam): and (though) knowing this, yet you do not act in the manner in which you advise others. Why (do you bewail) a son who died in the past? (kasmā pure maṁ putram) means then why do you, even today, bewail a son who died more than four months since? Thus, whilst standing in the middle of the road, he said, 'At least I only long for what can be seen, whereas you grieve for the sake of one who can be seen no longer', and then uttered two verses teaching him Dhamma:

9 'But this cannot be obtained, either by human or non-human, that a son born to me should not die.' Whence can that which is not to be obtained be obtained?

10 Neither by a mantra, by the root of a medicinal herb, by medicines, nor by wealth is it possible to bring back the peta that you bewail, Kanha.

9 Herein *that* (yam) means but this that you long for; that 'A son born to me should not die', cannot be obtained, it is not possible to obtain this, either by human or deva, my brother. So whence might this be obtained, by what means would it be possible to obtain this, since this thing that is unobtainable is not to be obtained.

10 *By a mantra* (mantrā): by means of a mantra, *By the root of a medicinal herb: mūlabhesajjā=mūlabhesajjena* (alternative grammatical form). *By medicines* (osasadhehi): by various kinds of medicines. *Nor by wealth* (dhanena vā: nor even by wealth amounting to a hundred koṭis. This is
what is said: 'It is not possible to bring back, by means of these mantras and so on, the peta that you bewail."

Then showing his brother that it is not possible to prevent this (thing) called death, either by wealth or birth or knowledge, morality or meditation,\textsuperscript{12} Cātapatīrṣa [97] taught the king Dhamma with these five verses:

11 Those of great wealth, great possessions, even kṣatriyas possessing kingdoms — even these, abounding in riches and grain, are not free of old age and death.

12 Kṣatriyas, brahmīns, vaisāyas, sūdras, caṇḍālas and pukkusas — even these and others are not, through their birth, free of old age and death.

13 Those who recite the mantras of the sixfold lore devised by Brahmā — even these and others are not, through that knowledge, free of old age and death.

14 And rishis even, those ascetics who are tranquil and who have the self controlled — even these ascetics must take leave of this body when the time comes.

15 The arahants,\textsuperscript{13} those with self developed, who have done what had to be done and are āśava-free — (even) they have to lay down this body upon exhaustion of their meritorious and wicked deeds.'

11 Herein those of great wealth (mahaddhanā): extremely wealthy on account of the great wealth they have hoarded. Those of great possessions (mahābhogā): endowed with great excellence of possessions similar to the possessions of the devas. Possessing kingdoms (raṭṭhavanto): possessing entire kingdoms. Abounding in riches and grain (pahūtadhanadhaṅnāse): they have boundless riches and grain on account of the riches and grain they have left over for their daily use after laying down (sufficient) to cover their needs for three or four years. Even these are not free of old age and death (te pi no ajarāmarā): even those kṣatriyas of great prosperity such as Mahāmandhātu\textsuperscript{14} and Mahāsuddassana\textsuperscript{15} and so on were not free of old age and death, meaning they have surely entered into the mouth of death.

12 These (ete): the aforementioned kṣatriyas and so on. Others (aṁīne): those who belong to the immediately following class such as Ambaṭṭha and so on.\textsuperscript{16} Through their birth (jātiyā) means they are not free of old age and death on account of their birth.

13 The mantras (mantaṁ): the Vedas. Recite (parivattentī): repeat and intone; or, alternatively, recite (parivattentī): mumble whilst performing the oblations and worshipping (anuparivattentā). Of the sixfold lore (chālangaṁ): connected with the six branches reckoned as phonetics,
rules prescribing ceremonial and sacrificial ritual, etymology, grammar, astronomy and prosody and so on. Divided by Brahmā (brahmacintitaṁ): devised, spoken, by Brahmā for the sake of the brahmmins. [98] Through that knowledge (vijñāya) means that they are not free of old age and death even though they are endowed with knowledge similar to that of Brahmā.

14 Rishis (isayo): they are rishis (isayo) by reason of their striving after (esānā) restraint and self control and so on.17 Tranquil (santā): of a tranquil nature in body and speech. Who have the self controlled (saṁcitattā): who have the mind controlled by the restraint of lust and so on.18 Ascetics (tapassino): they practice austerity (tapo) consisting in mortification (tapana) of the body. Again ascetics (tapassino): those who are restrained.19 This shows that though they have become those who rely on austerity in this way and desire to attain release by means of the body (none the less even) those who are restrained19 and so on must simply take leave of this body. Or, alternatively, rishis (isayo): they are rishis (isayo) by reason of their striving after (esānā) the higher moral virtues and precepts and so on.17 In this sense they are tranquil through the cessation of those wicked states that are opposed to it. They have the self controlled by restricting the mind to one object20 alone. They are ascetics on account of the burning energy they apply to the (four) right efforts.21 They are ascetics on account of their burning up of lust and so on through right application22 — this is how it should be construed.

15 Those with self developed (bhāvittā): those with the mind developed by meditation23 with the Four (Noble) Truths as a meditation subject.24

When he heard this talk on Dhamma by Ghaṭapāṇḍita, the king, relieved of the dart of grief and with devotion in his heart, then spoke the remaining verses in praise of Ghaṭapāṇḍita:

16 'I was truly ablaze, being like a fire fed with ghee; but now all my sorrow has been extinguished as if I had been sprinkled with water.

17 Truly the dart, the grief, that had pierced my heart has been drawn out. You have dispelled that grief, the grief for my son which had overwhelmed me.

18 With dart withdrawn I am become tranquil and cool; since hearing your words I no longer grieve nor weep.

19 Just as Ghaṭa distracted his elder brother from his grief — so act the wise who possess pity.

20 [99] As Ghaṭa followed his elder brother with good advice (so also is) he who has such advisers and attendants (so followed).

19 Herein just as Ghaṭa (distracted) his elder brother (Ghaṭa jeṭṭham va
bhātaram) means just as Chaṭapāṇḍita by skilful means and with a Dhamma talk distracted his elder brother, who was overcome with grief for his son who had died, from that grief for his son, so also do those other wise people who possess pity act in the service of their relatives.

20 He who has such (yassa etādisa honti): this is a verse from the Perfect Buddha. This is its meaning: just as, in the manner in which, Chaṭāpāṇḍita followed (anvesi-anudesi, alternative grammatical form) king Vāsudeva, who was overwhelmed with grief for his son, with good advice with the purpose of dispelling that grief, (so) also is anyone else who has acquired such wise advisers (so followed); how could there be grief for him?

The rest of the verses are of the same meaning as given above.

When the Teacher had recounted this teaching on Dhamma, he said, 'So it was, layfollower, that the wise men of old dispelled their grief for a son when they heard a tale from the wise men. He then explained the (Four Noble) Truths and applied a Jātaka (thereto), at the end of which that layfollower was established in the sotāpatti-fruit.

---

1 Be reads atāni pariṣṭhena, grasped the leg (of the bed).
2 upaṣa; cp Pava 20.
3 sasāṁ, rabbit or hare, which is to be seen – more clearly in the east – on the surface of the moon. See especially the Sasāṇḍita Jātaka (No. 316) where it is said that Sakka painted the image on the moon as an aeron-long tribute to the virtue of the Bodhisattva when once a hare. It is thus equivalent to our saying, 'Give me the man in the moon!'
4 Cp S 51 198 = Sn 331.
5 tassa vātā bāhyantī, literally, the winds have become strong for him, that is, the winds of the body that can cause discomfort, whether physical or emotional. Compare our own past use of the 'vapours'. Here it seems to mean that he has lost his senses. The verse and episode recur at J 4 84ff.
6 Reading sasaṁ with Se Be for text's Ghaṭo.
7 bhaddamukha, literally auspicious-faced; see M ii 53 and KS i 100 n. 3.
8 Reading nūna with Se Be for text's nanda; see Gehman (39 n. 3) and PED sv nanda.
9 Reading apathyāya with Be for text's Se apathyāyam; cp PED sv pattheti.
10 Reading alabhitvā jīvitsakkhayo bhavissat ti jānanto kasmā matam puttam with Se Be for text's alabhitvajīvitsakkhayam patto ti jānanto kasmā tava puttam atam.
11 Reading aṣjā 'pi with Se Be for text's aṣjāpi.
12 bhāvanāya.
13 Reading arahanto with Be for text's Se viharantā; vv 11–15 recur at Vv 63116, 14, 15.
14 Probably a reference to king Mandhātā; see Jāt 258 and DPPN i 444ff.
15 A cakkavattin known for his abundant possessions – see D ii 169ff.; Jāt 95 and DPPN i 575ff.
16 That is, the brahmin class (vāṇa), though there is clearly some irony in Dhammapāla’s choice of Ambaṭṭha as an example since in the Ambaṭṭha Sutta (D 87ff.) the Buddha traces Ambaṭṭha’s ancestry to union with a slave-girl. See also DPPN i 151ff. and 153 where the following appears: ‘Nor were the Ambaṭṭhas
barring some of them were farmers and traders and some even sold their daughters for gold and where a note is added stating that they were called "brahmins" by courtesy, vohāravasena. According to the Mānavadhammaśāstra (sic) they were not sprung from kṣatriya father and a slave (presumably śūdra) mother, as given in the Ambatṭha Sutta, but from a brahmin father and a Vaisya mother. As examples of mixed voppa they would have been considered inferior, especially to the kṣatriya whom the Buddha praisés for having committed incest in order to maintain purity of the line (D 192).

"Cp PVA 163, 265 for similar.
"It is said that Sāriputta makes his 'mind turn according to his wish and turns not by the mind's wish' (A iv 34; cp Mi 214f., S v 70ff.).
"Reading samvarakā with Se Be for text's samvarākā.
"Reading ekāramane with Se Be for text's ekāramana.
"Reading sammappadhāna with Se Be for text's sama; the sixth rung of the eightfold path – see M iii 251 and A ii 15-17.
"sammayoga rāgāśnaṃ santapanena tapassino ti – so Se Be; text omits entirely.
"bhāvanā; cp PVA 139.
"This does not appear amongst the forty mentioned at PVA 42 above.
"upāyahosallena; cp the Mahāyāna notion of upāya-kausalya.
"Reading aññassāpi etādiśa paññātha amaccā paññāthā assu tassa with Se Be for text's aññassa etādiśa paññātha amaccā santi samājanāsasya tassa.
"Reading vuttatthā with Be for text's vuttattā.
"PVA 41f.

II.7 EXPOSITION OF THE DHANAPĀLA PETA STORY
[Dhanapālapetavatthuvaṅgana]

‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning the peta Dhanapāla.

It is said that before the Buddha had arisen there was in the city of Erawaca in the kingdom of the Dasanñas a wealthy merchant named Dhanapālaka who had neither faith nor devotion and who was miserly and held the nathika heresy. His activities are made known by the text. When he died he arose as a peta in a desert wilderness. His body was the size of a palmira trunk. His skin was bloated and rough and he was terrible, hideous and extremely deformed — a quite disgusting sight. Overcome by hunger and thirst and with his tongue sticking out of his parched throat he roamed about this way and that for fifty-five years without getting (so much as) a ball of cooked rice as food or a drop of water (to drink). [100] Then when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was, in due course, staying in Sāvatthi, some traders, who were residents of Sāvatthi, filled as many
as five hundred carts with goods, went to Uttarāpatha, sold their goods (there) and loaded their carts with goods received in return. As they were returning they came at evening time upon a certain dried-up stream. They unharnessed their oxen there and made their camp for the night. Then that peta, overcome by thirst, came in search of something to drink. When he did not get even so much as a drop of water there, he fell prostrate, bereft of hope, like a palmyra cut down at its roots. When they saw him the traders questioned him with this verse:

1 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin one, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, good sir?'

whereupon the peta disclosed his identity:

2 'I, sir, am a peta, gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama; having done a wicked deed, I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

Questioned once more by them about the deed he had done:

3 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?'

he spoke these verses depicting his past, present and future circumstances, from his former place of arising onwards, and giving them an exhortation:

4 'There is a city of the Dasanjas, the famous Erakaccha. I was in the past a wealthy merchant there - as Dhanapala I was known.

5 Eighty cartloads of gold were mine; mine abundant gold and many pearls and precious stones.

6 Though of such great wealth I was not fond of giving. I shut the door before I ate lest beggars should see me.

7 I was without faith and mean, miserly and abusive. I had the habit of obstructing many people whilst they were giving and performing.

8 [101] Saying, "There is no result from giving. From where would come the fruit of self-restraint?" I destroyed lotus ponds and other drinking places, planted pleasure gardens, wayside watering places and bridges at places where it is difficult to cross.

9 I did no lovely deed. I did (only) wicked deeds. When I fell from there, I arose on the peta-plane, tormented by hunger and thirst. For fifty-five years since I died,

10 I am not conscious of having eaten or of having drunk water. He
who was restrained comes to ruin. He who comes to ruin was restrained. It is said that the petas indeed know that he who was restrained comes to ruin.

11 I in the past was so restrained. I did not give though abundant wealth (existed); though meri-offerings were at hand, I made no refuge for myself.

12 I later felt remorse as my own deeds (began to) reach fruition. After four months will come my death.

13 And down to the exceedingly severe and terrible hell will I fall: four-comered and with four gates, it is divided into equal portions, encircled by an iron wall, with a roof of iron above; its incandescent floor is made of glowing iron; all around a hundred yojanas it spreads, forever standing.

15 There for a long time I will experience painful feelings as the fruit of my wicked deeds — for this reason I am exceedingly sorrowful.

16 Therefore I say to you, "My blessings to you, each one of you assembled here. Do not commit a wicked deed either openly or in secret.

17 For if you do or will do a wicked deed there will be no escape from misery for you, even if you fly up and run away.

18 Be respectful to mother, respectful to father; honour the elders in the family; (show reverence for) recluses and brahmins — in this way you will go to heaven".

4 Herein of the Dasanças (Dasanñanam): of the kingdom of the Dasanças or of the kings of that name. Erakaccha (Erakacakham): is the name of that city. There (tattha): in that city. In the past (pure): [102] formerly, in a past existence. As Dhanapala I was known (Dhanapalo ti manam vidu): as the wealthy merchant Dhanapala did they know me. He uttered the verse beginning 'Eighty' showing why this particular name was given to him at that time.

5 Herein eighty cartloads (asiti sakatavahanam): twenty kārī loads are said to equal one cart(load). Eighty of these cartloads of gold and likewise kahāpanas in fact were mine — this is how it should be construed. Mine abundant gold (pahutam me jatapam): abundant gold measuring countless bhāras. it is (to be) connected with (the verb) 'were'.

6 I was not fond of giving (na me dātum piyan ahu): I was not fond of giving gifts. Lest beggars should see me (mā manam yacanakuddasun): I shut the door of the house before I ate thinking, 'The beggars must not see me.'

7 Miserly (kadariyo): extremely mean. Abusive (paribhāsako): when
he saw (people) giving alms he would threaten them with fear. Whilst they were giving and performing (dagantāna karontāna): this is the genitive case with the sense of the accusative — when they were giving alms and performing meritorious deeds. Many people (bahufjanān): many beings. Whilst they were giving and performing, I had the habit of obstructing, I hindered, many people, a multitude of beings, from (doing) that meritorious deed.

8 There is no result from giving and so on — this is a statement of his reasons for his hindering the alms and so on. Herein there is no result from giving (vipāko n'atthi dānassa): there is indeed no fruit from acts of giving. He elucidates that merit alone is merit and that (giving) is just a loss of wealth. Of self-restraint (sanyamassa): the self-restraint of the precepts. From where would come the fruit? (kuto phālaṃ?): from where indeed would the fruit be obtained? Keeping the precepts is quite useless — this is the meaning. Pleasure gardens (ārāmaṇi): pleasure gardens and groves. Wayside watering places (papāyo): sheds with drinking water. At places where it is difficult to cross (dugge): at places where it is difficult to proceed due to water and swamps. Bridges (sākamanāṇi): causeways.

9 When I fell from there (tato cuto): when I fell from the world of men.

Fifty-five: paṭcapanāsā = paṭcapanāṇāsa (alternative grammatical form). Since I died (yato kālaṅkato aham?): from the time that I died onwards.

10 I am not conscious (nābhijānāmi): for all that time I am not aware of having eaten or of having drunk anything. He who was restrained comes to ruin (yo saṃyamo so vināso): that restraint by way of greed and so on of not giving to anyone — [103] that is indeed ruin for such beings in that it is the cause of the great plight of arising as petas in the peta-womb. He who comes to ruin was restrained (yo vināso so saṃyamo): with this he speaks of the certainty of the aforementioned fact. It is said the petas indeed know (petā hi kira jānanti): the word ‘indeed’ (hi) is here used for emphasis and the word(s) ‘it is said’ (kira) indicate that it is from hearsay; restraint, the lack of generosity with merit-offerings, is the cause of ruin. It is said that only petas know of this fact due to their being personally overcome by it. Not so humans. It is not possible for even though humans, like petas, are to be seen being overcome by hunger and thirst and so on, petas however are much better aware of this fact since they are familiar with the deeds they did in their previous existence. For this reason he uttered (the verse) beginning, ‘I in the past was so restrained’.

11 Herein I was so restrained (samyamissan). I myself also exercised restraint in, shrank from, the performance of meritorious deeds such as giving and so on. Though abundant wealth (bahuke dhane): though great wealth was known.
16 Therefore: taṁ=tasmā (alternative grammatical form). To you: vo-tumhe (alternative grammatical form). My blessings to you (bhaddaṁ vo): my blessings, best wishes and good luck to you — this is the rest of the words. Each one of you assembled here (yāvant' ettha samāgataḥ): each one of you, as many as have come together here, should all listen to what I have to say — this is the meaning. Openly (āvi): publicly, being visible to others. In secret (rāho): covertly, being not (so) visible. Do not commit, do not perform, any wicked, despicable, unskilled deed either openly by means of body and speech, such as destroying living beings and telling lies and so on, or in secret by way of covetousness and so forth.\textsuperscript{21}

17 For if . . . a wicked deed (sace taṁ pāpakām kammāṁ): for if you should do a wicked deed now, or if you should do one in the future, then there is indeed no escape, no release, from the misery that is its fruit, such as (arising) in the four states of loss\textsuperscript{22} such as the hells and so on, or, if amongst men, of being short-lived. Even if you fly up and run away (upaccā 'pi palāyatanā) means that there is simply no escape even for those rising up and travelling through the sky. (Some) text(s) also (read) deliberately (upecca): because of the conclusion that it would pursue you whether you run this way or that; there is no escape from that for you even if you run away deliberately, intentionally, [104] meaning that it will simply ripen when there is a conjunction of other necessary conditions of place of destination\textsuperscript{23} and time and so on. This fact is also to be elucidated by this verse:

Neither in the sky nor in the midst of the sea nor by entering into the crests of mountains is there known a place on earth where, stationing oneself, one might escape (the fruit of) one's wicked deeds.\textsuperscript{24}

18 Respectful to mother (matteyyā):\textsuperscript{25} to one's mother's benefit. Be (hotta): perform services and so on for them. Respectful to father (petteyyā): this is to be understood in the same way. Honour the elders in the family: kule jetṭhāpacāyikā=kule jetṭhakānaṁ apacāyanakā (resolution of compound). Recluses (sūmañña): honour the recluses. In the same way brahmīns (brahmañña) means honour those who have cast out wickedness.\textsuperscript{26} In this way you will go to heaven (evam saggam gamissatha) means that after performing those meritorious deeds in the manner already stated by me you will arise in the devoloka.

Whatever has not had its meaning explained here is to be understood exactly as already given in the above Bald-headed Peta Story\textsuperscript{27} and so on.

When they had heard what he had to say, those traders, filled with agitation and pitying him, took a bowl of water, had him lie down and

\textsuperscript{*}Dhp 127 = Miln 150.
then sprinkled it into his mouth. Thereafter the people did this many times but the water that he longed for would not go down his throat due to the fruit of that peta’s wicked deeds. How then might his thirst be quenched? They asked him whether he had not got a little relief. ‘Even were so much as one drop of the water so many people are sprinkling into me so many times to enter my throat, yet there would still be no escape from this peta-womb’, he said. When the traders heard this they were filled with extreme agitation and said, ‘But are there any means by which your thirst can be quenched?’ [105] He said, ‘When this wicked deed is exhausted and alms have been given to the Tathāgata or the Tathāgata’s sāvakas and one dedicates that almsgiving to me, I will be freed from this peta-state.” When they heard this those traders went to Sāvatthi, approached the Lord and raised the issue with him. They took the Refuges and the Precepts and for seven days gave a great almsgiving to the order of monks with the Buddha at its head and assigned this to the peta. The Lord took that matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the four assemblies and the people abandoned the stain of selfishness and greed and so on and took delight in meritorious deeds of giving and so forth.

1 Cp DFPN 1 1064...
2 Literally the “there-is-not-inst” heresy. Such a doctrine is attributed at D i 55 to Ajita Kesakambala and amounts to a denial of many tenets central to Buddhism, for example a denial that there is any benefit to be got from almsgiving (the theme of this text), that good and bad deeds bear any fruit, that there is a world beyond and that there are those who have gained liberation. See A. K. Coomaraswamy, ‘Some Pali Words’, Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies IV, 2, 1939 pp. 149ff.; cp PvA 215, 244ff. and verses IV 32–27.
3 pālito, the canonical verses below. See note at PvA 112 below.
4 Borassus flabelliformis.
5 PED or kanyha cites this as appearing at PvA 260 and that which appears at PvA 260 as appearing here.
6 See note at PvA 111 below.
7 Reading sukhanam with Se Be for text’s rukkhamūlam.
8 Reading bindumattam pāṇīyam alabhavitā vigatāso chinnamūlo viya tālo chinnapādo pati with Se Be for text’s bindumattam pāṇīyam alabhavitā ravi. Tato so chinnamūlo viya tālo chano pati. I have rendered chinnapādo pati as ‘fell prostrate’ though this means more literally ‘fell, cut down at his feet’, in parallel with the palmTrees being cut down at its roots.
9 Reading dhanassā ‘pi with Se Be for text’s dhanassāmi.
10 Part of the nathika heresy – see IV 311 below.
11 Reading attakammadphalūpago with Se Be for text’s phalupeto.
12 Reading upacā ‘pi with Se Be for text’s upacāhipi: cp S 1 209; Thig 248 and note at EV ii 109.
13 Reading vā rājūnamp with Se for text’s vararājūnamp; Be reads simply rājūnamp and gives its name, both here and in the verse, as the Paññas.
14 Dhanapāla means ‘guardian of wealth’.
15 So Se Be; text reads simply sakaṭavāhanaṃ.
A measure, usually of grain, of unknown quantity. At Av 173 = Sn p 126 mention is made of a Kosalan khāri load and it may have varied accordingly.

Reading asthī hiratissa tathā kahāpaṇassa ca with Se Be for text’s asthīna kahāpaṇassa. The kahāpaṇa was a coin, usually of gold, but also of silver or copper.

A measure of gold: 1 bhūra = 20 tulās = 2000 palas (SED 753). This sense is not listed in PED.

Reading santajako with Se Be for text’s santajito.

Text mispunctuates and should read with Se Be: na manussā ti. Nayyidam yatam manussānām pi.

Cp the verses of Piyākara’s mother at Si 209.

apāya – birth in hell, as a peta, an asura or an animal.

gati.

Cp note at PVA 148 below.

Text mis-spells metteyyā.

That is, the arahant; see especially Dhp 383–423.

1.10 above.

Reading adhogalām with Se Be for text’s udhogalām.

Reading kācīl with Be for text’s Se kā pi.

That is, the sotāpanna, sakadāgāmin, anāgāmin and arahant and those on the respective paths, categories which extend to include laymen and devas as well as monks. They are sāvakas, or hearers, in the sense that they have acquired right view by means of the Dhammacakkhu through having heard a teaching on the Four Truths. See M i 380 and KhP A 183 and my doctoral thesis (University of Lancaster). As such they comprise the Ariyasaṅgha of PVA 1, 110 and are to be distinguished from the order of monks even though some monks may be included.

Reading petattato with Se Be for text’s petato.

II.8 EXPOSITION OF THE CŪLASEṬṬHI PETA STORY
[Cūlaseṭṭhipetavatthuvāṇṇanā]

“You who have gone forth are naked and emaciated, sir.” This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning the peta Cūlaseṭṭhi.

It is said that in Benares there was a householder named Cūlaseṭṭhi who had neither faith nor devotion and who was mean and miserly and who had no respect for the performance of meritorious deeds. When he died he arose amongst the petas, his head shaven, without clothes and with a body devoid of flesh and blood that was mere bone, sinew and skin. His daughter Anula, however, who was dwelling in her husband’s home at Andhakavinda¹ prepared² some alms materials such as rice and so on with the desire of feeding some brahmins on behalf of her father. When he learned of this, the peta, travelling there full of hope through the sky,
reached Rājagaha at the time at which king Ajātasattu was walking up and down on the upper storey of the royal palace, being unable to sleep because of an uneasy conscience and unpleasant dreams after having taken, incited by Devadatta, the life of his father. When he saw that peta travelling through the sky [106] he questioned him with this verse:

1. ‘You who have gone forth are naked and emaciated, sir. Where are you going by night and for what reason? Tell me this — we should be able, I might present to you possessions with all.’

1. Herein who have gone forth (pabbajito): who are a recluse. It is said that the king said, ‘You who have gone forth are naked and emaciated’ and so on thinking him to be a naked recluse on account of his nakedness and shaved head. Herein for what reason? (kissa heṇī): on what account? I might present to you possessions with all (sabbena vissā paṭipādaye tuvām): I might present to you, I might procure for you, in accordance with your wish, possessions that are means of support for your comfort, along with all usable items or, alternatively, with all (possible) endeavour; surely we should be able to act in this way. Therefore tell me this (ācikkha me tam) means explain to me the reason why you have come.

   Questioned thus by the king, the peta spoke three verses explaining his situation:

2. The city of Benares is renowned from afar; I was a householder there, prosperous but mean. I did not give and had a mind that craved enjoyment. Through bad conduct I have reached Yama’s realm.

3. I am exhausted by the needle because of these; for this very reason I go amongst my relatives for the sake of something to eat but they lack the virtue of generosity and do not believe that there is any fruit of giving in the next world.

4. Yet my daughter mutters constantly, “I will give alms for my fathers and grandfathers”. [107] The brahmins are being served what she has got ready and I am going to Andhakavinda to eat."

2. Herein renowned from afar (dīrāghuṭṭham): acclaimed from afar by way of praise for its qualities, meaning well-known and famous everywhere. Prosperous: adhako=adhā (alternative grammatical form), meaning of great prosperity. Mean (dīno): small minded, of a disposition not to give. For this reason he said, ‘I did not give.’ I had a mind that craved enjoyment (gedhitamano āmisasmīm): I was bent on craving with my thought set on sensual enjoyment. Through bad conduct I have reached Yama’s
realm (dussīlana Yamavisayamhi patto): through deeds of bad conduct done by me I have reached Yama's realm, the world of the petas.

3 I am exhausted by the needle (so sūcikāya kilanito): I am exhausted, I am being pierced continually, by hunger which has acquired the name 'the needle' due to its similarity to a needle in the matter of piercing. Alternatively the reading is in fact 'exhaustion' (kilamatho). Because of these (tehi): by reason of these aforesaid wicked deeds of having been mean and so on. As the peta recalled those wicked deeds he became extremely dejected and therefore spoke in this manner: for this very reason (ten' eva): because of this same misery of hunger. I go amongst my relatives (ātītsu yāmi): I go, I make my way, to the presence of my relatives. For the sake of something to eat (āmisakiṇīhetu): on account of some small amount of food, meaning longing for some food. But they lack the virtue of generosity and do not believe that there is any fruit of giving in the next world (adānastā na ca saddahanti, 'dānaphalam hoti paramhā loke'): as with me, so also in that same way do other people lack the virtue of generosity and do not believe that there is for sure any fruit of giving in the next world. Because of this, like me, they too will become petas and experience great misery – this is the meaning.

4 Mutter (lapate): talks. Constantly: abhikkhaṇaṁ=abhiphaṁ (alternative grammatical form), repeatedly. What did she mutter? She said, 'I will give alms for my fathers and grandfathers.' Herein for my fathers (pitunnaṁ): for my parents, or for my father's younger and elder brothers. For my grandfathers (pitāmahānaṁ): for my grandfathers and great grandfathers. What she has got ready (upakkaṇaṁ): what she has prepared. Are being served (parivisayanti): are being fed. To Andhakavinda (Andhakavindaṁ): to the city of that name. To eat: bhottam bhujijitam (alternative grammatical form).

[108] From here onwards was said by those rehearsing the texts:

5 The king said to him, "After you have partaken of that you should return quickly; I too will pay honour. Tell me if there is any condition for we will listen to any statement of conditions that is credible."

6 "So be it", he said and departed. But those who ate the food there were not worthy of the donation. So he went back once more to Rājavahga and appeared before the lord of men.

7 Seeing that the peta had come back again, the king said, "What should I give? Tell me if there is any condition through which you could be happy for a long while to come."

8 "When you have served the Buddha and the Saṅgha with food, drink
and robes, your majesty, then assign that donation for my benefit. In this way I could be happy for a long while to come."

Therefore the king descended and straightway gave with his own hand alms beyond compare to the Saṅgha; he reported the affair to the Tathāgata and assigned the donation to that peta.

Thus honoured and extremely radiant, he appeared before the lord of men and said, "I am now a yakkha possessed of the highest psychic power. No humans are similar or equal to me in psychic power.

Behold this unlimited splendour of mine dedicated by you after you had given beyond compare to the Saṅgha. [109] I will be satisfied, continually and always, with plenty and I will go about happy, O deva amongst men."

Herein the king said to him (tam avoca rājā): king Ajātasattu said to the peta who remained standing after speaking in that way. After you have partaken of that (anubhāvyaṁ tam pi): after you have partaken of the alms that have been got ready by your daughter. You should return (eyyāsi): you should come back. Will pay: karissam=karissāmi (alternative grammatical form). Tell me if there is any condition (ācikkha me tam yadi atthi hetu): tell me, explain to me, if there are any means. That is credible (saddhāyitaṁ): that is to be believed. Any statement of conditions (hena vaco): any statement concerned with conditions, meaning make a statement together with the means (thereto), such as, 'It will be of benefit to me when a gift is made at such and such a place and in such and such a manner.'

'So be it,' he said (tathā ti vatvā): 'Very well,' he said. There (tattha):12 at Andhakavinda, the place where (the food) was being served. But those who ate the food were not worthy of the donation (bhujīṁśu bhattaṁ na ca pana dakkhiṇārahaṁ): those who ate the food were brahmans of bad conduct, meaning those who ate it were not virtuous and worthy of the donation. Once more: punāparam=puṇa aparāṇ (resolution of compound), he went back in turn to Rājagaha.

What should I give? (kim daṇḍikā): the king asked the peta, 'What sort of gift should I give you?' Through which you (yena tuvāṃ): by means of which you. For a long while to come (cirataram): for a long time. Happy (piṁito): (how) you could be contented, meaning please explain this.

When you have served (parīvāsyaṁ): when you have fed. Your majesty (rāja): he is addressing Ajātasattu. For my benefit (me hitāya): for the sake of my benefit, for (the sake of) release from this state of being a peta.
9 Therefore (tato): for this reason, because of that statement; or, alternatively, thersfrom (tato): from the palace. Descended (nipatitvā): came out. Straightway (tāva-d-eva): just then, at the time that the sun was rising. (The king) gave alms on the very same morning on which the peta went back and revealed himself to the king. [110] With his own hand: sahatthā= sahatthena (alternative grammatical form). Beyond compare (āṭulam): immeasurable, finest,15 choicest. Gave to the Saṅgha: dadiśvā saṅgha= saṅghassa datvā (alternative grammatical form). He reported the affair to the Tathāgata (ārocayi pakaṭīṃ Tathāgatatass): he reported news of the affair to the Lord saying, 'This gift, Lord, has been made with reference to a certain peta'. And when he had reported this, he assigned (ādisittha= ādisi, alternative grammatical form) the donation to that peta in the very same way in which that gift was of benefit to him.16

10 He (so): the peta. Honoured (pājito): honoured with the donation that was being given. Extremely radiant (atīviya sobhamāto): extremely brilliant with heavenly splendour.17 He appeared: pāturahosī=pātubhavi (alternative grammatical form); he revealed himself before the king. I am now a yakka (yakkha hanaḥ asmi): released18 from the state of being a peta, I have become a yakka, I have attained the state of a devatā. No humans are similar or equal to me in psychic power (na mayham iddhisamāsakā manussā): there are no humans who are similar to me in this excellence of possessions or who are equal to me in this excellence of splendour.19

11 Behold this unlimited splendour of mine (passānubhāvan aparimittant mamayidam): showing his excellence personally to the king he says, 'Behold this unlimited heavenly splendour of mine.' Dedicated by you after you had given beyond compare to the Saṅgha (tayānudīṭham atulam dadiśvā saṅgha): after you had given the finest alms beyond compare to the Ariyasaṅgha20—they were dedicated by you out of pity for me. I will be satisfied, continually and always, with plenty (santappitato satataṃ sadā baḥūhi): I will be satisfied, I will be happy, continually, without interruption, and always, at all times, for so long as life lasts there even, on account of your satisfying the Ariyasaṅgha with plenty of merit-offerings such as food, drink and clothes and so on. I will go about happy, O deva amongst men (yāmi aham sakkho manussadēva): he begged leave of the king saying, 'Therefore I am happy now, O deva amongst men, O great king, and I will go to whatever place I please.'

[111] When the peta had gone after begging leave in that way, king Ajātasattu raised the matter with the monks. The monks approached the Lord and raised it (with him). The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. When they
heard this, the people abandoned the stain of selfishness and took delight in meritorious deeds of giving and so forth.

1 A village just outside Rājagaha.
2 Reading ḍāṇūpākaraṇāṇī sājēsī with Se Be for text’s dāṇūpākaraṇī nīśājēsi; cp PVA 278.
3 Reading sampādeyyam with Se Be for text’s sammā deyyam; Se Be read paṭipādaya in verse, but paṭipādeyyam in cty.
4 Reading app’ eva nama with Se Be for text’s app’ eva.
5 Reading bhottun ti with Se (Be bhottun ti) for text’s bhottun’ ti ti.
6 Reading kāṃnāmise lāggacitto with Se Be for text’s kāṃnāmiselāggacitto.
7 Reading cūjakitumahāpīṭṭhānaṃ with Be (Se culla-) for text’s cūjakita mahāpīṭṭhānaṃ.
8 ayyakapayyskānaṃ; cp SED sv āryaka which is said to have been a ceremony for the manes, that is, the petas.
9 Reading hetuvace with Se Be and IV 11 below for text’s hetuvaca.
10 Reading paccāgamī with Se Be and cty below for text’s paccāgamī.
11 Reading bāyānudīṭṭhānaṃ here and in cty with Be So (Se cty udd-) for text’s tāyānudīṭṭhānaṃ.
12 Reading tathā ti with Se Be for text’s Tathā bhunjīṃsu ti.
13 Text mispunctuates and should read with Se Be . . . parivesanaṭṭhāne, Bhunjīṃsu.
14 Reading eva with Se Be for text’s evaṃ ca.
15 Reading uḷāraṃ with Se Be for text’s uḷāraṃ.
16 Reading arocetvā ca yathā tām dānāṃ tassa upakappati evam tassa ca petassa dakkhiṇāṃ ādīsīthā ādīsi with Se Be for text’s arocetvā ca yathā uḷāraṃ panṛtan dānāṃ datra tām dānāṃ petassa upakappati evam tassa dakkhiṇāṃ ādīsīthā ādīsi.
17 Reading dibbānubhāvena with Se Be for text’s dibbābhāvena.
18 Reading mutta with Se Be for text’s mato.
19 Reading ānubhāva- with Se Be for text’s anubhāvā-.
20 See note at PVA 105 above.

II.9 EXPOSITION OF THE ĀNKURA PETA STORY
[Ānkurapetavatthuvaṃṭhanā]

'That purpose for which we were going.' The Teacher who was staying at Sāvatthī told this concerning a peta named Ānkura. In this case Ānkura is happily no peta but on account of his activities being connected with a peta this is therefore called the Ānkura Peta Story. Here is the story in brief.

In the city1 of Asitaṭṭhana in the Kamsabhoga region of Uttarāpatha2 there were born to Upāsāgara, son3 of king Mahāsāgara, ruler of Uttaramadhu,4 and to Devagabbhā, daughter of Mahākamsaka (the following
children: a daughter) Añjanadevi and her ten brothers Vāsudeva, Baladeva, Candadeva, Suriyadeva, Aggideva, Varunadeva, Ajjuna, Pajjuna, Ghatapanjita and Aṅkura — in all eleven kṣatriyas. Beginning with the city of Asitañjana, Vāsudeva and his brothers, by the discus, brought to their death all the kings in the sixty-three thousand cities of this entire Jambudīpa, ending at Dvārakā. Whilst dwelling at Dvārakā they divided the kingdom into ten parts. However they had forgotten their sister Añjanadevi and, when they remembered her again, they said, 'We should divide it into eleven parts', but Aṅkura, the youngest of them all, said, 'You can give her my share. I will make a living by trade and you can send me taxes from your respective provinces.' 'Very well', they agreed and having given his share to their sister the nine kings lived on in Dvārakā. Aṅkura, however, engaged in trade and constantly gave great alms to the poor. Now he had a [112] slave who was keeper of his stores and who had his interests at heart. With devotion in his heart Aṅkura procured a daughter of good family and gave her (in marriage) to him. He died just as his son was being born and Aṅkura, at the birth, gave him the food and remuneration he was to have given to his father. Then when the youth came of age the question arose amongst the royal family as to whether he was a slave or not. When Añjanadevi heard about this she cited the example of the cow and freed him from his slavery saying, 'The son of a freewoman is himself a freeman.' But the youth, through shame, could not bear to live there and went to the city of Bheruva where he took (as his wife) the daughter of a tailor and earned his living by the art of tailoring. There was at that time in the city of Bheruva a wealthy merchant named Asayhamahāsetūṭhi who gave great alms to the poor, recluses and brahmans, indigents, tramps, wayfarers and beggars. The tailor, full of joy and happiness, would raise his right arm and point out the Asayhaseṭṭhi residence to those not knowing the wealthy merchant's house saying, 'Go there and get whatever is available.' His deeds are recorded in the text. In due course he died and arose in the desert as a terrestrial devatā in a banyan tree with a right hand that granted desires. Now in that same Bheruva there was a man who superintended Asayhaseṭṭhi's alms but who himself had neither faith nor devotion and who was of wrong view and disrespectful about the performance of meritorious deeds. When he died he arose as a peta not far from the dwelling place of that devaputta. The deeds that he did are recorded in the text. When Asayhamahāsetūṭhi died, however, he went into companionship with Sakka, king of the devas, in the realm of the Thirty-three.

Now after some time Aṅkura took his goods on five hundred carts, as did a certain brahmin also on five hundred carts. With these one thousand carts the two men entered upon a road in the desert wilderness and lost
their way. After wandering around there for many days they exhausted their grass, water and food. Aṅkura had messengers on horseback search for water in the four directions. Then that yakkha with the hand that granted desires saw the plight they had got into and [113] recalling some service Aṅkura had rendered him in former days thought, ‘Well now, I must help him’, and showed him the banyan tree in which he lived. It is said that that banyan tree was full of twigs and branches, with thick foliage giving dense shade and with countless thousands of new shoots (so that it stood) one yojana in length, breadth and height. Aṅkura was overjoyed on seeing it and pitched camp underneath it. The yakkha raised his right hand and at first satisfied all the people with water, thereafter giving to anyone whatever it was that he wanted. When those people had been satisfied with as many different kinds of food and drink and so on as they desired and were recovering from the fatigue of the journey, that brahmin trader, reasoning improperly, thought thus; ‘When we have gone from here to Kamboja in search of wealth, then what shall we do? But if we were to seize this yakkha now by means of some trick and put him on a cart we could then just go back to our own city.’ With this in mind he uttered two verses informing Aṅkura of his plan:

1. That purpose for which we seekers of wealth were going to Kamboja can be satisfied by this yakkha that grants desires. Let us take this yakkha!

2. When we have taken this yakkha, either with his consent or by force, and put him on a cart we can go quickly to Dvāraka.


2. With his consent (sādhukena): by begging him. By force (pasayha): having overpowered him with the use of force. On a cart (yānaṃ): on a comfortable cart. To Dvāraka (Dvārakaṃ): to the city of Dvāravatī. This is the meaning here: we want to go from here to Kamboja for a purpose. That purpose, to be realised by that journey, can be accomplished right here. This is a yakkha that grants desires. [114] Therefore we will beg this yakkha and (proceed) with his consent or, if he is not won over, then we will put him on a cart with the use of force, tie him to the hind part in the cart and then quickly go with him from here to the city of Dvāravatī.

However when the brahmin had spoken in this way Aṅkura, steadfast
in the Dhamma of the worthy man, uttered this verse opposing what had been said:

3 'One should not break the branches of the tree in whose shade one would sit or lie, for injuring a friend would be wicked indeed.'

3 Herein one should not break [na bhaṇjeṣyā]: one should not cut off. Injurying a friend: mittadubbho=míttesu dubbhanam (resolution of compound); causing them harm. Would be wicked (pāpako): injuring a friend would be inauspicious. The tree whose cool shade dispels the fatigue of the man overpowered by the heat — one should not even think of wickedness towards it, so how much less living beings? Now this devaputta is a worthy man who has been of great service and who obliged us by relieving our misery. One should not think of doing anything harmful towards him. Surely he is rather to be honoured — this is what he is pointing out.

When he heard this the brahmin, relying on the well established principle that doing away with hypocrisy is the basis of success, uttered this verse setting himself in opposition to Aṅkura:

4 'One would cut down the trunk even of the tree in whose shade one would sit or lie if such were one's need.'

4 Herein if such were one's need (attho ē tādiso sīyā): if one's need should be for such a collection of timber, then one would cut down the trunk of that tree even, so how much more its branches and so on — this is the meaning.

When the brahmin had spoken in this way Aṅkura uttered this verse upholding the Dhamma of the worthy man alone:

5 'One should not harm the leaves of the tree in whose shade one would sit or lie, for injuring a friend would be wicked indeed.'

5 [115] Herein one should not harm the leaves (na tassa pattan himṣeyya): one should not cause even so much as one leaf of that tree to fall, so how much less the branches and so on — this is the meaning.

Once more the brahmin uttered a verse upholding his own viewpoint:

6 'One would pull it up together with its roots even, (pull up) that tree in whose shade one would sit or lie if such were one's need.'

6 Herein one would pull it up together with its roots even (samūlam pi tam abbhuya): one would pull it up there, that is, lift it up, together with its roots even, accompanied by its roots even. When the brahmin had spoken in this way Aṅkura spoke these three verses wishing to render it meaningless:
‘A man should not plan a wicked deed even in his mind against him in whose house he has stayed for one night even and where he has obtained food and drink — gratitude is extolled by worthy men.

He should not plan a wicked deed even in his mind against him in whose house he has stayed and (by whom) he has been served with food and drink — the hand not given to injury burns the one who injures a friend.19

He to whom formerly a lovely deed was done and who later harms (his benefactor) with a wicked deed is a clean-hand-destroyed man — he will not behold good fortune.’

Herein whose (yassa): the person whose. For one night even (ckarattim pi): in (whose) home he has stayed for so little as but one night even.20 Where he has obtained food and drink (yatth ‘annapāmaṇ puriso labhetha): in whose presence anyone has obtained food and drink or any nourishment. [116] (A man) should not plan a wicked deed even in his mind against him (na tassa pāpaṇ manasā ‘pi cetaye): (a man) should not think of, should not long for, bad luck or misfortune for that person even in his mind, so how much less in body and speech. Why so? Gratitude is extolled by worthy men (kataññutā sappurisehi māṇītā): gratitude is indeed praised by Buddhas and so on, the foremost amongst worthy men.

Has been served (upaṭṭhito): has been served with food and drink, has been waited upon with the words, ‘Please take this, please eat this.’

The hand not given to injury (adubbhapāmi): the hand not given to harming, the hand that is restrained. Burns the one who injures a friend (dahate mittadubbbhīmy): it burns, it destroys, the person who injures a friend. An offence committed against persons who are endowed with good intentions and without fault by another brings ruin for this same other without exception. As regards its practical import21 the person who is without fault indeed burns him. For this reason the Lord said, ‘He who wrongs a man who is without fault, a man who is cleansed and without blemish, upon that same fool does that wicked deed recoil, like fine dust thrown against the wind.’*

He to whom formerly a lovely deed was done (yo pubbe katakalyāna): the person to whom some good was done, some service was rendered, by anyone virtuous. And who later harms (his benefactor) with a wicked deed (pacchā pāpena himsatii): and who at some future occasion afflicts with a wicked deed, with bad luck and misfortune, that one who obliged him. Is a clean-hand-destroyed man (allapāṇihato poso): he is destroyed, he is afflicted, in the aforesaid manner by the performance of

*Dhp 125.
that service with a clean hand, by the one who obliged him, (doing so) with a clean hand, with a washed hand. Or, alternatively (his own) clean hand is destroyed, it is destroyed\textsuperscript{22} by his afflicting the one who obliged him; he is an ungrateful man. \textit{He will not behold good fortune (na so bhadra\textit{vat} passati): the person stated will not behold, that is, will not find, will not obtain, happiness either in this world or the next.}

[117] The brahmin, defeated thus by An\textkura upholding the Dhamma of the worthy man, said nothing further and became silent. The yakkha, however, having heard this exchange of conversation between the two of them and though angry with the brahmin thought, ‘Let it be for now – I will decide later what is to be done with this wicked brahmin’, and then uttered this verse showing the extent of his inability to be overcome by anyone:

10 ‘Not by deva nor man nor dominion am I easily subdued\textsuperscript{23} – a yakkha am I, attained to the highest of psychic powers, far-ranging and endowed with beauty and strength.’

10 Herein \textit{by deva (de\textit{vena): by any deva. By man (manussena \textit{va}): just the same is to be applied here also. Nor by dominion (issariyena \textit{va}: neither by dominion over devas nor by dominion over men – in this connection ‘dominion over devas’ means the divine potency\textsuperscript{24} of the Four Great Kings, Sakka, Suyāma\textsuperscript{25} and so on whilst ‘dominion over men’ means the potency stemming from meritorious deeds of a wheel-turning (monarch)\textsuperscript{26} and so on. Therefore by ‘dominion’ are included those of great majesty amongst devas and men. Even devas of great majesty are not able to overcome men who are sustained by the fruit of their meritorious deeds and when there is no failure of those means,\textsuperscript{27} so how much less others. \textit{Ham} (untranslated) is a particle denoting inability. \textit{Not easily subdued} (na supparāshyo): indestructible. A yakkha am I attained to the highest of psychic powers (yakkho \textit{ham asmi paramiddhipatto): by way of my own meritorious deeds I have entered the state of a yakkha. There is none who is equal to the yakkha.\textsuperscript{28} Moreover I have attained to the highest of psychic powers, I am possessed of the highest, the utmost, psychic power of the yakkha. \textit{Far-ranging} (dūrangamo): able to go to far off places in an inkling. \textit{Endowed with beauty and strength} (vannabalupannāno): endowed with,\textsuperscript{29} possessed of, beauty and physical strength. By means\textsuperscript{30} of this three-worded mantra he shows his own invincibility. Perfect in appearance, he is revered by others; because of his possession of that beauty [118] he is not to be confounded even by the unusual. His possession of that (good) appearance is said\textsuperscript{31} to be the reason for his invincibility.
From here onwards there is an exchange of conversation in fifteen verses between Ankhura and the devaputta:

11. ‘Your hand is all golden, a five-bearer, and flows with honey; juices of various flavours trickle (from it) — I think you must be Purindada.’
12. ‘I am no deva nor gandhabba nor even Sakka Purindada; as a peta you should know me, Ankhura, who am come here from Bhenuva.’
13. ‘What was your conduct, what your behaviour, previously when you were in Bhenuva? By what (aspect of the) Brahma-faring (came) the meritorious deed that resulted in this hand?’
14. ‘I was previously a tailor in Bhenuva; at that time I suffered great hardship and led a very hard life. I had nothing to give,
15. But my workshop was quite close to Assayha, a man of faith and a master in the practice of giving, a man of conscience who performed meritorious deeds.
16. Beggars would come there and wayfarers of a variety of clans and they would ask me for the Assayha residence saying, “Blessings to you! Where should we go — where are the alms given out?”
17. So questioned I would raise my right arm and point out the Assayha residence to them saying, “Blessings to you! You should go there — the alms are given out there at the Assayha residence.”
18. For this reason my hand grants desires, for this reason my hand flows with honey, by this (aspect of the) Brahma-faring (came) the meritorious deed that resulted in this hand.’
19. ‘It is said that you did not give alms to anyone with your own hand but that rejoicing at the alms of another you raised your hand and showed (the way).
20. For this reason your hand grants desires, for this reason your hand flows with honey, by this (aspect of the) Brahma-faring (came) the meritorious deed that resulted in this hand.
21. The pious man, sir, who gave those alms with his own hand — when he left the human body to which quarter did he go?’
22. ‘I do not know the going and coming of Aṅgṛasa, the one who endures what is beyond endurance, but I have heard in the presence of Vessavana that Assayha has gone into companionship with Sakka.’
23. ‘It is sufficient to do lovely deeds and to give alms as is fitting. After seeing this hand that grants desires, who would not perform meritorious deeds?
24. When I have gone, then, from here and have got back to Dvāraka I will provide alms which will bring me happiness.”
25 I will give food and drink, clothing and lodging, wayside watering places, wells and bridges at places where it is difficult to cross.'

11 Herein your hand (pāṭi te): your right hand. Is all golden (sabbasowoyo): is all over the colour of gold. A five-bearer (paricadhāro): (it is said to be) a 'five-bearer' since with its five fingers it has bearers of things that are desired by others. Flows with honey (madhuussavo): is flowing with sweet juices. For this reason he said, juices of various flavours trickle (from it) (nānārasa paggharanti), meaning many different sorts of juices — sweet, bitter, astringent and so on — flow (from it). When a yakkha's hand that grants desires is dispensing various hard and soft foods that are full of such flavours as sweetness and so on it is said that it 'flows with honey'. I think you must be Purindada (maññe han tam Purindadana): I think you must be Sakka Purindada, meaning I think you must be Sakka, king of the devas, who is of such great majesty.

12 I am no deva (n' amhi devo): I am no well known deva such as Vessavanā and so on. Nor gandhabba (na gandhabbo): I am not even a deva belonging to the company of gandhabbas. Nor even Sakko Purindada (na pi Sakko Purindado): I am not even Sakka, king of the devas, who has acquired the name Purindada through having previously (pure) — provided alms (dānassa) in a former existence. What was he then? He said, as a peta you should know me, Aṅkura (petam Aṅkura jānāhi): you should know me as one who has arisen as a peta, Aṅkura my good sir, you should take me to be a peta of great psychic power. Who am come here from Bheruka (Bheruvanā idhāgatam): who, after falling from the city of Bheruka, am come here by way of my appearing in this banyan tree here in the midst of this desert wilderness, meaning who am arisen here.

13 What was your conduct, what your behaviour, previously when you were in Bheruka? (kimśto kiṃśamācāro Bheruvasmaṇṇa pure tuvaṇḥ): earlier, in a former existence, when you were dwelling in the city of Bheruka, what was your conduct, what your behaviour? After adopting what kind of conduct that was characteristic of your turning back from wicked deeds, because of behaviour that was characteristic of your having turned towards the performance of meritorious deeds, of what kind of behaviour, meaning of what kind of behaviour were you with respect to skilled behaviour such as giving and so on? By what (aspect of the) Brahmasthāning (came) the meritorious deed that resulted in this hand? (kena te brahmasthāninga puṇināṃ puṇinhi ijjati): by means of what aspect of the excellent Brahmasthāning is there such fruit of a meritorious deed as this that now ripens and takes effect in your hands, meaning please tell me this. By 'meritorious deed' was meant the fruit of a meritorious deed,
through an elision of the second word (of the compound). For it was certainly this that was called ‘merit’ in; ‘It is by the acquisition of skilled states in this way, monks, that this merit increases’; and so on.

14. A tailor (tunnavāyo): a needle worker. I led a very hard life: sukicchavutti=suṭṭhu kicchavattiko (resolution of compound); I had a life of extreme misery. I suffered great hardship (kapāṇo): I was poor, meaning I was in a wretched state. I had nothing to give (na me vijjati dātave): I had nothing that was worthy of being given, nothing to give to tramps, recluses and brahmmins, though I did have thoughts of giving alms – this is the meaning.

15. Workshop (āvesanā): house, or a room for doing work. Quite close to Asayha (Asayhassa upantike): near the house of the great wealthy merchant Asayha. A man of faith (saddhassa): possessed of faith in the fruition of deeds. A master in the practice of giving (dānapatino): as regards the practice of giving he was a master through overcoming greed and through an excellence of generosity that continued without interruption.43 Who performed meritorious deeds (katapuṇñassa): who performed deeds of good conduct in the past. A man of conscience (lajino): one who was by nature disgusted by wicked deeds.

16. There (tattha): to that workshop of mine. Beggars would come (yācānaka yanti): beggar-folk would come desiring to beg something from Asayhaseṭṭhi. Of a variety of clans (nāgottā): of many different clans and regions. Wayfarers (vanibbakā): those who sing one’s praises (vaṇṇadīpaka): who wander around. Declaring their state of need with a mouthful of praise and so on for the virtues of, and for the fruits of, the meritorious deeds and so forth of him who gives. And they would ask me (te ca maṃ tattha pucchanti): tattha (untranslated) is a mere particle; those beggars and so on would ask me for the residence of Asayha, the wealthy merchant. The versifiers require two patients in such places.46

[121] Blessings to you! Where should we go – where are the alms given out? (Kathā gacchāna bhaddan vo kattha dānān padhyati): this shows the way in which they asked. This is the meaning here: Blessings be to you! We have come after hearing that alms are given out here by Asayhaseṭṭhi. Where are the alms given out? Or where should we go – by going where will we be able to get them?

17. So questioned I would point out (tesāhan puṭṭho akkhāmi): when questioned in this way by those travelling-folk about the place where they could receive (the alms) I would respectfully† raise my right arm and tell them of the Asayhaseṭṭhi residence thinking, ‘Through not having performed meritorious deeds in the past I am now unable to give anything

* D iii 58; also quoted at PvA 8.
to such as these. However I may produce much merit even by so little as joyfully\(^48\) telling them of the means of obtaining these by showing them the house where the alms are given out. For this reason he said, 'I would raise my right arm' and so on.

18. For this reason my hand grants desires (tena pāṇi kāmadado): on account of making known the alms of another, because of mere rejoicing with due respect at gifts made by another, my hand now grants desires like the wish-granting tree, like the santāna-creeper,\(^49\) it grants desires bestowing whatever is wanted. For this reason my hand flows with honey (tena pāṇi madhusavo): it has come to dispense pleasant things.

19. It is said that you did not give alms (na kīra tvam aḍā dānaṁ): 'it is said' (kīra) is a participle denoting hearsay. It is said that you did not give away your own property, that you did not give any alms whatsoever to anyone, whether recluse or brahmin, with your own hand, by your own hand. But that rejoicing at the alms of another (parassa dānaṁ anumodānā): but that you stayed merely rejoicing at gifts made by others for the sake of others thinking, 'Oh, what a great almogiving you are bestowing!'

20. For this reason your hand grants desires (tena pāṇi kāmadado): for this reason this hand of yours grants desires in this way. Oh, how wonderful indeed is the destiny of meritorious deeds! — this is the meaning.

21. The pious man, sir, who gave those alms with his own hand (yo so dānaṁ aḍā bhante pasanno sakapāṇṭhi): through respect he addresses the devaputta as 'sir'. [122] For merely\(^50\) rejoicing at gifts made by another, sir, such is the fruit, such the majesty, that (has come) to you. But it was Asayha, the great wealthy merchant,\(^51\) who gave that great almogiving and who became devoted in heart at the time that he bestowed that great almogiving with his own hand. When he left the human body (so hitvā mānasam dehaṁ): when he forsook this human state here. To which (kim): to which one of the. Nu so (untranslated): nu is a mere particle. Quarter did he go? (disatam gato): (in which) direction, (to which) place, did he go; he asked about the fate of Asayhasitthi in the world to come saying, 'What sort of destiny did he end up with?'

22. The one who endures what is beyond endurance (asyayasāhino): he is one who endures what is beyond endurance on account of his enduring the responsibility\(^52\) of the worthy man in matters of generosity\(^53\) and so on which would not be able to be endured, to be borne, by others who are mean and overcome by greed. Of Āṅgiras (Āṅgirasas): of (him) from whose limbs (āṅga) brightness emanates, rasa\(^54\) being a metaphorical expression for 'brightness'. It is said that when he saw beggars coming the highest joy and happiness would arise in him and his complexion would become bright. He spoke in this manner having seen this for himself.\(^55\)
The going and coming (tāthāgatārātā vā): I do not know the going, that is, that he has gone from here to such and such a destiny, nor the coming, that is, that he has come here from that place at such and such a time – this is not within my power. But I have heard in the presence of Vessanā (सुतोऽव वेस्सनासः सत्तकेः): nevertheless I have heard this in the presence of the Great King Vessana whilst in attendance upon him. That Asayha has gone into companionship with Sakka (सक्कसः सह सत्तकेः gato Asayho): that Asayha has entered into companionship with Sakka, lord of the devas, meaning he has arisen in the realm of the Thirty-three.

23. It is sufficient to do lovely deeds (ālam eva kātaṃ kalyāṇaṃ): it is proper and seeming to do whatever is a lovely, skilled and meritorious deed. However to show that there is in this connection that which is easy and open to all, ‘And to give alms as is fitting’ was said. It is sufficient to give alms in accordance with one’s power and means. Then he mentioned the reason: after seeing this hand that grants desires (पञ्चकावलदानं दिवाः): inasmuch as by the mere telling of the way to the dwelling of a master in the practice of giving after previously rejoicing at the meritorious deeds done by another this hand that grants wishes is seen. After seeing this [123] who would not do those meritorious deeds? (ko puññāṇa karaṇaṃ): who like me would not perform meritorious deeds that would be one’s support (in the life to come)? Having shown his esteem for the performance of meritorious deeds in this vague fashion he now utters the two verses beginning: ‘When I have gone from here’ showing his self-commitment.

24. Herein I: so-so aham (alternative grammatical form). Hi (untranslated) is an emphatic particle. Then (muna) is a particle of reflection. When I have gone from here (प्रकटत्वाः): when I have left this desert region. And have got back to Dvārakā (anupattivāna Dvārakāṃ): and have got back to the city of Dvārakā. I will provide (पातिहापयिस्वामि): I will bestow.

The yakkha was overjoyed when Aṅkura thus vowed that he would give alms and encouraged him in acts of charity saying, ‘You should give alms freely, my good sir. I will assist you by arranging things in such a way that your merit-offerings will not become exhausted.’ (Turning to the brahmin he continued) Whilst you, brahmin trader, do not know your own measure when you say that you wish to carry off one such as me with the use of force, and, after causing his goods to disappear, terrified him, threatening to harm him with the attack of a yakkha. Aṅkura then pleaded with him in many ways and pacified him by making the brahmin apologise and (thereby) brought about the restoration of all his goods. As
night approached he dismissed the yakkha and, whilst continuing on his way, saw not far from him a certain peta that was an extremely disgusting sight. He uttered this verse enquiring about the deed he had done:

26 ‘For what reason are your limbs distorted and your face contorted; and (why) do your eyes trickle? What wicked deed was done by you?’

26 Herein distorted (kuṇā): bent, crooked, not straight. Contorted (kuṇālīkatam): distorted, deformed, with a grimace. Trickle (paggharani): flow with impurities.

The peta then spoke three verses:

27 [124] I was in charge of the gifts in the almshouse of Āṅgiras, that home-loving householder and a man of faith.
28 When I saw beggars there who were come in need of food I stepped to one side and contorted my face.
29 For that reason my limbs are distorted and my face contorted; (this is why) my eyes trickle — this was the wicked deed done by me.

27 Herein of Āṅgiras (Āṅgirasassa) and so on: he praises Asayhaseṣṭhi with these (attributes). Home-loving (gharam ‘esihā): one who stays at home, residing in a house. In the almshouse (dānavissage): in the house where the alms are given out, at the place of distribution. I was in charge of the gifts (dāne adhikato ahum): I was placed in charge of administering the almsgiving, of the distribution of the merit-offerings.
28 I stepped to one side (ekamanim apakkanaṁ): when he sees beggars who are come in need of food the man who superintends the gifts should not leave the house where those gifts are given out. He should stay at that very place and, full of joy and happiness and with a clear complexion, should give the gifts with his own hand or have them given out properly by others. I, however, did not act in this way — when from afar I saw beggars coming I stepped to one side and kept out of sight. Having stepped (aside) I contorted my face, I distorted and screwed up my face.
29 For that reason (tena): since, in the period during which I had been appointed by the master to administer the almsgiving, I became afflicted with meanness when the time came to serve the gifts and left the house where the gifts were given out, I have attained, this crookedness of foot; (since) I failed to give what I should have given with my own hands, I have attained, this crookedness of hand; (since I failed to have) the clear features that I should have had, I have attained, this crookedness of face; (whilst since by my failure to look on) with the loving eyes with which I should have looked on, I gave rise, this dimness of vision.
Therefore my fingers [125] and toes have become bent and distorted, my face contorted, of unsightly appearance and screwed up, and my eyes trickle with impure, foul smelling, loathsome tears—this is the meaning.

For this reason he said:

30 'For that reason my limbs are distorted and my face contorted; (this is why) my eyes trickle—this was the wicked deed done by me.'

When he heard this Ankura uttered this verse reproaching the peta:

31 'It serves you right, you wretched man, that your face is contorted and that your eyes trickle, since you contorted your face at the gift of another.'

31 Herein it serves (you) right (dhammena): it is with quite fitting cause. You: te=tava (alternative grammatical form). You wretched man (kāpurisa): you despicable man. Since: yam=yaśma (alternative grammatical form). At the gift of another: parassa dānassa=parassa dānasmin (alternative grammatical form), or, alternatively this alone is the reading.

Ankura once more uttered a verse reproaching that wealthy merchant, that master in the practice of giving:

32 'How could one rely on another when giving a gift of food and drink, hard food, clothing and lodging?'

32 This is the meaning: when giving a gift how indeed could a man rely on another, have it carried out and effected by another? He himself should attend to it in person and should give it with his own hand alone. He should himself be superintendent in this. Otherwise his merit-offering might come to ruin in an inappropriate place, whilst those worthy of donations would waste away with hunger.

[126] When he had thus reproached him he uttered two verses showing the line of action he was about to take:

33 'When I have gone, then, from here and have got back to Dvāraka I will provide alms which will bring me happiness.

34 I will give food and drink, clothing and lodging, wayside watering places, wells and bridges at places where it is difficult to cross.'

The meaning is just as already given.

These four verses were then inserted by those rehearsing the texts to show how Ankura acted:

35 'When he had turned back from there and had got back to Dvāraka Ankura provided alms which would bring him happiness.'
He gave food and drink, clothing and lodging, wayside watering places, wells and bridges at places where it was difficult to cross.

“Who is hungry? And who is parched? Who will put on these clothes? Whose oxen are exhausted? — They may harness a draught bullock from these. Who wants a sunshade? And perfume? Who flowers? Who some sandals?” —

So did barbers, cooks and scent-sellers always cry out, both morning and evening, there at Aṅkura’s dwelling.’

Herein from there (tato): from that desert wilderness. When he had turned back (nivattitvā): when he had turned back again. And had got back to Dvāraka (anuppatvāna Dvārakān): and had got back to the city of Dvāravatī. Aṅkura provided alms (dānam parīhayi Aṅkuro): Aṅkura established a great almsgiving of everything necessary for the road from a store-house that was kept completely full by the yakṣa. Which would bring him happiness (yaṁ taṁ assa sakhāvaham): which would produce happiness for him in both the present and the future.

Who is hungry? (ko cūto): let whoever wants to eat come and eat what he likes — this is the meaning and is to be applied to the rest too. Parched (tasito): [127] thirsty. Will put on (paridāhissati) means will dress in and wear. Are exhausted (santāni): are in a state of fatigue. Oxen (yoggāni): draught bullocks yoked to chariots. They may harness a draught bullock from these (ito yojentu vāhanān): they may take whenever draught bullock they like from this collection of oxen here and harness it. Who wants a sunshade? (ko chatt’ icchati): let whoever wants a sunshade of the sort made from rushes and so on take this — this is the meaning and is to be applied to the rest too. Perfume (gandharvā): perfumes made from the four perfume ingredients and so on. Flowers (mālam): flowers of the sort that are knotted together and those that are not so knotted. Some sandals (upāhanān): sandals of the sort that have heel coverings and so on.

So (iti su): su (untranslated) is a mere particle. (They cried out) just so, meaning: ’Who is hungry? And who is parched?’ and so on. Barbers (kappakā): bath attendants. Cooks (sūdā): those who prepare meals. Scent-sellers (Māgadhā): those who deal in scents. Always (sādā): all the time, day in, day out, both morning and evening, did they cry out, call out, there at Aṅkura’s dwelling — this is how it should be construed.

As time went on with this great almsgiving thus being bestowed that house where the gifts were given out became (only) sparsely and occasionally (visited) by travelling-folk on account of their satiation. When Aṅkura saw this he became dissatisfied due to his lofty intent to give
alms and summoned the young man named Sindhaka, whom he had appointed in connection with his almsgiving, and uttered two verses:

39  "Aṅkura sleeps easily" — so the people believe of me; I sleep with difficulty, Sindhaka, since I see no beggars.

40  "Aṅkura sleeps easily" — so the people believe of me; (but), Sindhaka, I sleep with difficulty, the wayfarers being so few.

39  Herein 'Aṅkura sleeps easily' — so the people believe of me (sukham supati Aṅkuro iti jānati mani jano): 'The noble Aṅkura who is endowed with fame and wealth, a master in the practice of giving, due to his attainment of wealth and successful almsgiving sleeps easily, [128] he falls asleep with ease and wakes up easily' — in this way the people esteem me. I sleep with difficulty, Sindhaka (dukkhaṁ supaṁti Sindhaka): but I sleep only with difficulty, Sindhaka. Why? Since I see no beggars (yaṁ na passāmi yācakē): since I do not see as many beggars receiving my merit-offerings as I had wished, meaning it is because of this.

40  The wayfarers being so few (appake su vanibbake): the wayfaring-folk being so few and far between, I sleep with difficulty — this is how it should be construed. Su (untranslated) is a mere particle, the meaning being when there are so few wayfaring-folk.

When he heard this Sindhaka, desiring that he make more clear his lofty inclination towards giving, uttered this verse:

41  'If Sakka, lord of the Thirty-three and of all the world, were to grant you a boon, when choosing, what boon would you choose?'

41  This is the meaning: if Sakka, lord of the devas of the Thirty-three and also of all the world, were to grant you, should grant you, a boon saying, 'Choose whatever boon your heart longs for, Aṅkura', when choosing, when wishing, what boon, what kind of boon, might you choose?

Aṅkura then spoke two verses truly declaring his intent:

42-43 'If Sakka, lord of the Thirty-three, were to grant me a boon I would choose that boon from Sakka thus: that when I get up at sunrise there should appear heavenly foods and virtuous beggars, that whilst I am giving they should not be exhausted, that after I have given I should feel no regret and that my heart should be devoted as I give.'

42-43 Herein when I get up (kāhetthitassa me sato): when I arise in the early morning full of energy and vigour for honouring and waiting upon those who are worthy of a donation and in need. [129] At sunrise (surya-yuggamanam pati): at the moment the sun comes up. There should appear
heavenly foods (dībbā bhakkhā pātnabhaveyyaṁ): there should arise food that belongs to the devaloka. And virtuous beggars (sīlavanto ca yācakā); and that there should be virtuous beggars who are of a lovely nature. Whilst I am giving they should not be exhausted (dadañ me na khīye the): whilst I give to all-comers my merit-offerings should not be exhausted, should not come to an end. After I have given I should feel no regret (dātvā mānuttappeyyāhan): after I have given alms that should be given I should feel no regret when I find that someone was unworthy (of those alms). My heart should be devoted as I give (dadañ cittan pasādeyyaṁ): my heart should be devoted whilst I am giving, I should give only when there is devotion in my heart. I would choose that boon from Sakka thus (evañ Sakkavarnārī vare): I would choose a fivefold boon from Sakka, lord of the devas, thus: the blessings of good health, of merit-offerings, of those worthy of donations, of unlimited merit-offerings and of being their donor. In this connection by ‘when I get up’ (is meant) the blessing of good health; by ‘there should appear heavenly foods’ the blessing of merit-offerings; by ‘and virtuous beggars’ the blessing of those worthy of donations; by ‘whilst I am giving they should not be exhausted’ the blessing of unlimited merit-offerings; and by ‘after I have given I should feel no regret and that my heart should be devoted as I give’ the blessing of being their donor. These five things are wished for on account of their being boons;87 they are to be understood.88 in short, as being for the purpose of those meritorious deeds consisting in giving being lofty.

When Aṅkura thus declared his intent a man named Sonaka, who was seated there and who was well versed in prudent behaviour, spoke two verses wishing to prevent him from giving to excess:

44 ‘One should not bestow all one’s possessions on another; one should both give alms and protect one’s wealth. Therefore there is better than giving — families cease to exist through giving to excess.

45 Neither the failure to give nor giving to excess are praised by the wise. Therefore wealth is better than giving; one should proceed with moderation — this is the way of the resolute.’

Wishing to put him to the test89 Sindhaka afterwards uttered once more90 (the verses) beginning: ‘(One should) not (bestow) all one’s possessions’.

44 Herein all one’s possessions (sabbavittāni):91 all one’s possessions and means of both an animate and an inanimate variety, meaning one’s articles of wealth. On another: pare-paramhi (alternative grammatical form), meaning on behalf of another (parassa). One should not bestow (na pavecche): one should not give thinking, ‘Those worthy of donations are
available', and not retain anything, meaning one should not make a sacrifice of all one's property. One should both give alms (dadeyya dānān ca): one should not make everything an item for almsgiving; moreover one should give alms in accordance with one's means after assessing one's income and expenditure. And protect one's wealth (dhanān ca rakkhē): one should look after one's wealth by obtaining what has not been obtained, by guarding what has been obtained and by securing what is protected; or alternatively one should protect one's wealth in the following way, this being the basis of almsgiving:

- 'One (quarter) of one's possessions should one enjoy; two (quarters) should one put to work; whilst the fourth part should one put aside or else one will be in trouble.'

Indeed these three paths are to be pursued with mutual modification say the lawgivers. Therefore (tasma): since when protecting one's wealth and when making gifts one is acting for one's benefit in both worlds and since giving is based on wealth, therefore wealth is better than, is superior to, giving, and giving to excess is not to be practised — this is the meaning. For this reason he said, families cease to exist through giving to excess (atippadānena kulā na honti): families cease to exist, no longer continue (to exist), meaning they are annihilated; through an attachment to giving to excess when one does not know the extent of one's wealth upon which such giving is dependent. Now establishing the fact that this is praised by the wise [131] he uttered the verse (beginning:) 'Neither the failure to give nor giving to excess.'

45 Herein neither the failure to give nor giving to excess (aṭṭānaṃ atidānān ca): neither the total failure to give even a handful of rice or a ladleful of food nor giving to excess, the so-called generosity in which the limits are exceeded, are praised, are applauded, by the wise who possess insight and in whom wisdom has arisen. By the total failure to give one is indeed excluded from well being in the next world whilst by giving to excess one's family line cannot continue in this very life. One should proceed with moderation (samena vatteyya): wise in the ways of the world one should follow, un reproached, a middle path avoiding both extremes. This is the way of the resolute (sa dhiradhammo): in the aforementioned matter of giving (to excess) and the failure to give this is the way of the resolute, of those who are endowed with steadfastness and who are skilled in right conduct and good behaviour — he elucidates that this is the way trodden by them.

When he heard this Ankura declared the line of action that he would

*D iii 188.
take with these four verses (attempting) to make him change his mind:

46. ‘Truly, sir, I would rather that I should just continue to give and that true and worthy men should associate with me — as a cloud filling up the lowland would I satisfy all wayfarers.

47. When one sees beggars one’s complexion becomes clear and when one has given one is delighted — this is happiness for the one who dwells at home.

48. When one sees beggars one’s complexion becomes clear and when one has given one is delighted — this is the successful performance of the sacrifice.\(^{98}\)

49. Just before the gift one should be happy, when giving one’s heart should be devoted, whilst when one has given one is delighted — this is the successful performance of the sacrifice.’

46. Herein truly I would rather (aha vata): truly it were well. Sir (re) is a form of address. That I should just continue to give: aham eva daijam= aham daijam eva (alternative grammatical form). This is the meaning in brief here: [132] even if, as they say, this is the view\(^ {99}\) of those skilled in properties, that wealth is better than giving, I would still prefer that I should just continue to give. And that true and worthy men should associate with me (santo ca ma isnappiris bhajeyya): and that on the occasion that I give true, tranquil and virtuous worthy men of (good) conduct in body, speech and mind should associate with me, should approach me. As a cloud filling up the lowland (megho\(^ {100}\) va ninnam paripuratayanto): and truly I would rather that I should satisfy them, fulfilling\(^ {101}\) the wishes of all wayfarers like a great cloud pouring down on the lowlands, on the low-lying places.

47. When one sees beggars (yassa yacanake diva): when he sees beggars the complexion of the home-loving person becomes clear and faith arises as he thinks, ‘Waiting upon them at the earliest possible moment will truly be a merit-field for me’, whilst when he has given alms to them in accordance with his means he is delighted, his heart is seized with joy and happiness. This (tam):\(^ {102}\) this sighting here of the beggars, this devotion of heart at seeing them and this being delighted after having given alms as is fitting.

48. This is the successful performance of the sacrifice (es asyarihassa sampada): this is the accomplishment, the fulfilment, of the sacrifice, meaning its completion.\(^ {103}\)

49. Just before the gift one should be happy (pubbe va danah samano): just before (the gift), from the preparation of the alms materials onwards, one should be happy, one should become full of happiness at the intention of delivering\(^ {104}\) (the gift) thinking, ‘I will lay down a hoard that will
follow me as the foundation of my excellence in the next world. When giving one's heart should be devoted (dādam cittan pasādyate): when giving, when placing the merit-offering in the hand of one worthy of donations, one's heart should be devoted thinking, 'From wealth that is worthless I am making a gift of value.' Whilst when one has given one is delighted (datvā attamano hoti): whilst when one has given out the merit-offerings to those worthy of donations, one is delighted, very pleased, full of joy and happiness at the thought, 'I have carried out what was ordained by the wise. Oh, this is good, this is excellent!' This is the successful performance of the sacrifice (esa yañassa sampādā): the fulfilment of the three intentions which are happily held and accompanied by a belief in the fruition of deeds – the intentions before, during and after delivering the gift – this is the successful performance of the accomplishment of the sacrifice; it is not otherwise – this is the meaning.

When Aṅkura had thus declared the line of action he was to take he day in, day out, maintained a great almsgiving, his intent on giving being all the more increased. Because of this the whole kingdom at that time put its work aside for the festivities. When that great almsgiving was in progress the people who had received all the necessary means of existence abandoned their respective labours and roamed about at pleasure. Due to this the royal treasuries became empty and the kings thereupon sent a messenger to Aṅkura to say, 'On account of your alms, sir, our economy has been ruined and our treasuries have become empty. You should learn the proper (extent to which alms should be given).

When he heard this Aṅkura went to Dakkhināpatha and in the Tamil region had a large number of alms-halls built at a place not far from the sea and, maintaining great almsgivings, remained there for the rest of his life, arising at the breaking up of the body after dying in the realm of the Thirty-three. Those rehearsing the texts spoke these verses showing the glory of his gifts and his heavenly arising:

50 Sixty thousand cartloads of food were given constantly to the people at the residence of Aṅkura who had an eye towards meritorious deeds.
51 Three thousand cooks, adorned with jewelled earrings, who superintended the gifts for the sacrifice owed their livelihood to Aṅkura.
52 Sixty thousand men, young men adorned with jewelled earrings, chopped firewood at Aṅkura's great almsgiving.
53 [134] Sixteen thousand women, all adorned and bejewelled, prepared the various (ingredients) at Aṅkura's great almsgiving.
Sixteen thousand (women), all adorned and bejewelled, stood ready with ladle in hand at Aṅkura’s great almsgiving.

This kṣatriya gave much to many, he gave for a long while, thoughtfully, with due care and with his own hand, again and again.

Aṅkura maintained his great almsgiving for a long period, for many fortnights and months, (for many) seasons and years.

After Aṅkura had thus given and performed sacrifices for that long period he quit the human body and reached the Thirty-three.'

Herein sixty thousand cartloads: satthivāhasahassāṇī=vrāhanāṃ satthhisahassāṇī (resolution of compound); food, sixty thousand cartloads-full of fragrant husked rice and so on, was given constantly, day in, day out, to the people, to groups of beings, at the residence of Aṅkura who had an eye towards meritorious deeds, who was intent on giving, who was inclined towards giving — this is how it should be construed.

Three thousand cooks (tisahassāṇī sūdā hit): as many as three thousand cooks to prepare the meal. And these referred to (here) are only the head cooks — it should be understood that each one of these had countless others to do his bidding. Some read tisahassāṇi sūdānam here (alternative grammatical form). Adorned with jewelled earings (śmuttamaniikāsālā): wearing variously jewelled and ornamented earings. But this is truly an example for they were also adorned, wearing bracelets and girdles and so on. Owed their livelihood to Aṅkura (Aṅkurān upaśīvanti): they lived dependent upon him, meaning they were dependent upon him for their living. Who superintended the gifts for the sacrifice (dāne yañānasa vyāvājā): [135] who entered eagerly upon superintending the gifts, upon the sacrificial act, for the sacrifice, for that Great Sacrifice112 so called.

Young men chopped firewood (katthaṃ phālenti mānañā): young people who were dressed and adorned chopped, split, firewood for cooking the various exquisite foods both hard and soft and so on.

The various (ingredients) (vidhā): those spices that are recommended as suitable additions to food. Prepared (pinjenti): mixed by grinding together.

With ladle in hand (dabbigāhā): with spoon in hand. Stood ready (upatthiā): they went and stood at the place where the meals were served.

Much (bahum): a great deal, an abundance. To many (bahūnaṃ): to a countless number. Care (pādāsi): gave in various ways. For a long while (cirā): for a long time; he had arisen when the human life-span was twenty thousand years,123 giving much to many for all that long time. To show the manner in which he gave ‘with due care’ and so on was said. Herein with due care (sakkaccam): with respect,114 with that which is
wanted and without contempt. With his own hand: sahaతha=sahaతhena (alternative grammatical form); not merely by means of a command. Thoughtfully (cittiత kane): he honoured (them) with his thoughts given over to respect and esteem. Again and again (punappunaమ): many times; he did not do it once or on a few occasions, he gave on countless occasions — this is how it should be construed. Now it was to clarify just what he did again and again that they spoke the verse (beginning:) 'Aṅkura maintained his great almsgiving for a long period,) for many (fortnights and) months.'

56 Herein for many months (bahumāse): for many and countless months, beginning with the month of Citta, Fortnights (pakkhe): for many fortnights, the dark and bright halves (of the month). [For many] seasons and years (itiyām vacchārāni ca): for many seasons such as spring and summer and so on and for many years, each beginning with the month of Citta; this is throughout the accusative case in the sense of a continuous period of time. For a long period (dīgham antaram): for a long period of time. After having already explained that 'he gave for a long while' referred to his maintaining that almsgiving for a long time, (this verse) beginning: '(Aṅkura maintained his great almsgiving for a long period,) for many (fortnights and) months' was repeated to emphasise that he maintained this without interruption — [136] this is how it should be regarded.

57 Thus (evaమ): in the manner stated. Had given and performed sacrifices (datvā yajitvā ca): these are one and the same in meaning; had given by way of giving out merit-offerings to those who were worthy of donations (and), again, performed sacrifices by way of the Great Sacrifice, giving to all in need as much as they desired in the mānīrī stated, that is, that 'this kṣatriya) gave much to many'. He quit the human body and reached the Thirty-three (so hitvā mānuసam deham Tāvatīṁsīpago ahū): at the end of his life Aṅkura gave up the human state and reached a group of devas of the Thirty-three by way of rebirth. Whilst he was enjoying heavenly excellence after thus arising amongst the Thirty-three there was, in the time of our Lord, a young man named Indaka who, with devotion in heart, had spoon-alms dealt to the venerable elder Anuruddha as he wandered about in search of alms. He died in due course and arose, by means of the majesty of that meritorious deed that had gone to the field, amongst the Thirty-three as a devaputta of great majesty and great psychic power, shining brilliantly and surpassing the devaputta Aṅkura in the ten attributes of heavenly appearance and so on. For this reason it was said:

58 'After giving a spoonful of food to Anuruddha Indaka quit the human body and reached the Thirty-three.'
In ten ways Indaka outshone Aṅkura: in appearance, voice, taste, fragrance and touch (all) pleasing to the mind,

In length of life and fame, in complexion, happiness and sovereignty — (thus) Indaka outshone Aṅkura.

Herein in appearance (rūpe): in the matter of appearance, meaning with respect to his excellence of appearance. Voice (sādāc) and so on: the same is to be applied to these too.

In length of life (āyudā): in life-span. But is not the life-span of the devas said to be of a definite length? That is true but only as a general rule for, indeed, death comes to some devas prematurely due to the failure of the means and so on. Indaka, however, will complete a full three kojjas and sixty thousand years besides. For this reason it was said that he outshone in length of life. In fame (yasāsā): [137] in his excellence of a large rethrae. In complexion (vajjena): in his excellence of physical form. This blessing of the condition of his appearance could be indicated just by the phrase ‘in appearance’ (in the preceding verse). In sovereignty (adhipaccetena): in supremacy.

Whilst Aṅkura and Indaka were enjoying heavenly excellence after arising thus amongst the Thirty-three our Lord, in the seventh year following his supreme enlightenment, performed the Twin Miracle on the night of the full moon in the month of Āśāluḥ at the foot of the Gaṅgāmbha tree near the gate to the city of Sāvatthi. He went in due course, taking three steps, to the realm of the Thirty-three and seated himself on the Pañčakambala Rock at the foot of the Coral Tree in order to teach the Abhidhamma. Shining brilliantly like the sun that is newly arisen on the Yugandhara mountains he outshone with the radiance from his own body the brightness of those companies of devas and Brahmās who had assembled there from the ten thousand world systems. He saw Indaka seated close by and Aṅkura seated twelve yojanas distant and uttered this verse with the aim of explaining (the importance of) the successful attainment of those worthy of donations:

‘A great almsgiving was given by you, Aṅkura, for a long period. You are seated too far away — come into my presence.’

When he heard this Aṅkura said, ‘Lord, I gave out many merit-offerings for a long time and though I maintained a great almsgiving, because of the absence of any successful attainment of those worthy of donations, there was, like seed sown in a field of barren soil, no rich fruit (therefrom). But for Indaka, though he (gave but) a gift of spoon-alms, because of his successful attainment of one worthy of donations, there is produced, like
seed sown in a field of fertile soil, this extremely rich fruit. Those rehearsing the texts spoke these verses illustrating this point:

61 'When the Buddha, the noblest of men, was staying on the Paññākambala Rock at the foot of the Coral Tree in the Thirty-three, The devatās assembled in the ten (thousand) world systems and paid homage to the Buddha as he sojourned on top of the Mount. No deva outshone the Buddha in appearance — excelling all those devas the Buddha alone shone brilliantly.

64 [138] At that time Aṅkura was twelve yojanas away whilst Indaka, outshining him, was close to the Buddha. The Buddha, looking at both Aṅkura and Indaka, spoke these words paying honour to those worthy of donations.

66 "A great almstowering was given by you, Aṅkura, for a long period. You are seated too far away — come into my presence."

67 Prompted by the one with self developed Aṅkura replied saying, "Of what use are those gifts to me? They were devoid of any worthy of donations,

68 Whereas this yakkha Indaka gave some trifling gift and outshines us as does the moon the host of stars.

69 Just as, when even much seed is planted in a field of barren soil it yields no abundant fruit nor pleases its cultivator,

70 Even so do many gifts, when established amongst those of poor conduct, yield no abundant fruit nor please their donor.

71 And just as, when little seed, even, is planted in a field of fertile soil and suitable showers are bestowed, the fruit pleases its cultivator,

72 Even so is there great fruit when even the slightest meritorious action is done with respect to those of such a nature as to possess virtue and good qualities."

61 Herein in the Thirty-three (Tāvatiṃse): in the realm of the Thirty-three. On the Paññākambala Rock (silāyāṃ paññākambale): when the Buddha, the noblest of men, was staying on the rock throne named the Paññākambala — this is how it should be construed.

62 The devatās assembled in the ten (thousand) world systems (dasasu lokadhātusā sannipatītvāna devatā): the devatās of the sphere of sense-desire and the devatās of the Brahmā(-worlds) assembled together in the ten thousand cakkavālas, the so-called field of rebirth, to pay homage to the Buddha, the Lord, and with the aim of hearing the Dhamma. For this reason it was said: 'And paid homage to the Buddha as he sojourned on top of the Mount', meaning on top of Sineru.
64 [139] *At that time Aṅkura was twelve yojanas away (yojanānī dasa
dve ca Aṅkuro 'yaṃ tadā alu): at that time, at the time that he faced the
Teacher, Aṅkura of the aforementioned conduct was twelve yojanas dis-
tant, meaning that he was seated at a place twelve yojanas distant from the
place where the Teacher was seated.
67 Prompted by the one with self developed (codito bhāvitattena):
prompted by the Perfect Buddha, by the one with the mind developed
through cultivation of the ariyan paths and training in the (ten) perfec-
tions. The verses beginning: ‘Of what use are those (gifts) to me?’ were
spoken by Aṅkura in reply to the Teacher. Herein they were devoid of any
worthy of donations (dakkhiṇeyyena suhīhatam): ‘Since my gifts at that time
were devoid, empty, lacking, of any worthy of donations, of what use there-
fore are those gifts to me?’ he says, scorning his meritorious deeds of giving.
68 Yakkha (yakkho): devaputta. Gave: dassa=damā (alternative gram-
matical form). Outshines us (aṭṭocati amite hi): he shines brilliantly
exceeding that of those like me; hi (untranslated) is a mere particle. It
means he shines brilliantly, outshining and surpassing us. As does what did
he say? As does the moon the host of stars.
69 Of barren soil (ujjārāgale): that is an extremely hard piece of ground;
some say it means ‘saline’. Is planted (ropitaṁ): is sown; or is sown, dug
up and replanted. Nor pleases (na pi toseti): nor delights; or there is no
joy produced through its scanty fruition.
70 Even so (taḥ' eva) means just as, when even much seed is planted in
a field of barren soil it yields no abundant fruit, no rich fruit, nor pleases
its cultivator thereby, even so do even many gifts, when established amongst those of poor conduct, amongst those lacking morality, yield no
abundant fruit, no great fruit, nor please their donor thereby.
71 And just as (when little seed), even, (is planted in a field) of fertile
soil (yathā pi bhuddake): the meaning should be construed as the reverse
of what has been said of the two (preceding) verses — this is how it should
be understood. Herein and suitable showers are bestowed (sammādhirām
paveçchante): and rain showers are properly sent forth, meaning when the
(sky-)deva pours down every five, ten or fifteen days.
72 As to possess good qualities (guṇavantesa): as to apply themselves
to good qualities such as the jhānas and so on. To those of such a nature
(tādisu): [140] to those who have attained such characteristics as are
agreeable and so on. Action (kāraṁ) is given with a distortion of gender, meaning a service. What kind of service did he say? A meritorious one.

These verses were inserted by those rehearsing the texts:
73 ‘Gifts are to be given with discrimination — then what is given is of
great fruit. When gifts have been given with discrimination their donors go to heaven.

Giving with discrimination is praised by the Sugata.\(^{143}\) That which is given to those who are worthy of donations here in this world of the living is of great fruit as is seed sown in a field of fertile soil.'

Herein with discrimination; viceyā-vidnitvā (alternative grammatical form); when one has ascertained by means of wisdom that (the proposed recipient of the gift) is a merit-field. The rest is quite self-evident throughout.

Beginning with (the verse:) 'A great almsgiving was given by you', this Aṅkura Peta Story was raised by the Teacher\(^{143}\) in the realm of the Thirty-three before the devatās of the ten thousand cakkavālaś with the aim of explaining (the importance of) the successful attainment of those worthy of donations. When he had taught the Abhidhamma there for three months for the sake of the Mahāpavaraṇa ceremony\(^{144}\) that Deva of Devas\(^{145}\) descended from that devaloka, surrounded by troops of devas\(^{146}\) to the city of Saṅkassa.\(^{147}\) In due course he reached Sāvatthī and, whilst staying in the Jeta Grove, taught in detail in the midst of the four assemblies with the aim of explaining (the importance of) the successful attainment of those worthy of donations, beginning with 'That purpose for which we were going'\(^{148}\) and brought the teaching to a climax with a discourse on the Four (Noble) Truths. At the conclusion of the teaching insight into the Dhamma\(^{149}\) arose to countless thousands of koṭis of beings.

---

1 Reading Asitañjanañāgare with Se Be and below for text's nāgame.
2 Literally, the North Road, 'the great northern route now known as the Grand Trunk Road or as Rāh-i-Azam connected the principal capitals and trading centres like Tāmralipiś, Campā, Pātaliputra, Vāsāpi, Kauśambi, Kānyakubja, Mathurā, Hastinapura, Srugna, Sākala, Takṣasā, Pugkalavatī, Kāpiśa, Bāmyan, Bāhikā and Kambojā. Probably it was the greatest overland route in Asia along which numerous caravans plied throughout the year', V. S. Aghawala in The Bhakti Cult and Ancient Indian Geography (ed. D. C. Sircar), Calcutta 1970, p. 144. In time, however, the term came to denote 'the whole of Northern India, from Afgā in the east to Gandhāra in the north-west, and from the Himalaya in the north to the Vindhāya in the south. The chief divisions included in this territory are ... Kāshmir-Gandhāra and Kambojā' (DPPN i 363). Gandhāra and Kambojā approximate to modern Kashmir and the North-West Frontier; cp B. N. Chaudhury, Buddhist Centres in Ancient India, Calcutta 1969, Chapter 2.
3 Reading puttaṁ with Se Be for text's puttaṁ.
4 Madhura, or Mathura, is frequently called Uttramadhu, northern Madhura, to distinguish it from Madurai in Tamil Nadu. Mathura is an important centre for the followers of Kṛṣṇa. This story should be read in conjunction with the Ghaṭa Jātaka
which is an interesting variant of some of the material later welded into the Kyopa legend—the Vāsudeva of our story being Kyopa—mixed up with some of the details of II 6.

1 Text mis-spells Dvārāvalīyam here.
2 Reading bhandagāriko with Se Be for text’s bhandagāriko.
3 Literally, Asayha the wealthy merchant; cp PvA 3.
4 Reading kapaniddhika- with Se Be for text’s kapaniddhika; cp PvA 78.
5 Reading vanibbaka- with Se Be PvA 78 for text’s Be vanibbaka-.
6 Pāliyam, the canonical section and here presumably the verses below although at PvA 2 Dhammapāla more than suggested that the introductory story should also be seen as having originated with the Buddha himself; cp PvA 99.

Reading vyāvajato with Se Be and text prior to Hardy’s emendation to ‘vyāvajato at PvA 303.

Reading assadūti with Se Be for text’s asa dūti.

Khandhavā, usually the halting place of a caravan; Pāli ev speculates on whether this might be the origin of the English term.

Reading ayoniso manasi karonto with Se Be for text’s ayoniso ummujjanto.

Reading tena gamanena sādhetabbo athto with Se Be for text’s tena dhanena sādhetabbā ti athto.

Sappurisa, usually a technical term and synonymous with arīya and sāvaka; cp Mi i 8 and cty on v 7 below.

Reading dukkhanupādako bahūpakāro with Se Be for text’s dukkhanupādakadano bahūpakāro.

Reading samulam pi sahamūlana pi with Se Be for text’s saha mūlena samulam pi.

This verse, together with v 3 above, recur at J vi 310.

Reading ekaratimattam pi kevalam with Be for text’s ekaratimattam na kevalam (Se ekaratimattam pi, na kevalam).


Reading hato allapāhato nāma with Se Be for text’s hato allapāṁnā.

Suppassayo; pasayha was rendered ‘by force’ in v 2.

Iddhi, usually rendered ‘psychic power’.

These are the rulers of the various devakas of the kamāvacara and are said to surpass the devas of their realms in the ten ways mentioned at vv 59–60 below; cp A iv 247.

The wheel-turning monarch, or cakkavattin, forms the subject of the Cakkavatti-Sānāda Suttanta (D iii 58–79); see also Di ii 172–177. His treasures are discussed in detail at M iii 172–177 where his happiness, the ultimate in human happiness, is said not to count when set beside that of the devas.

Reading payogavipattiyam with Be (Se-ttiyā) for text’s vipattiyam.

Reading yakkho ‘va samāno na yo vā so vā with Se Be for text’s yakkho vasamāno nayo vasso vā.

Reading upapanno with Se Be and verse for text’s uppanno.

Reading mantappayogādhi with Se Be for text’s mantayogādhi; cp PvA 96.

Reading vuttā. Ito paraṁ with Se Be for text’s Vutta ito paraṁ.

A heavenly musician, usually belonging to the realm of the Four Great Kings. They are under the sway of Dhatarañjha, Great King of the eastern quarters (D ii 257, iii 197) but dwell in the fragrance of root-wood, in the fragrance of heart-wood, in the fragrance of pith . . . bark . . . sap . . . in that of leaves . . . flowers . . . savours . . . scents’ (KS iii 197).

Asayhasahino, of the one who endures (sañno) what is beyond endurance (asayha), a play on the proper name Asayha; the whole expression—asayhasahino Angisāsas— is usually an epithet of the Buddha, e.g. 11 32; Thag 336 etc.
Vessavana, another name for Kubera, encountered at 14. He is one of the
Four Great Kings, who rules over the northern quarter with the aid of his troops of
yakkhas to which this yakkha no doubt belongs.

Reading madhurasa-vissankaco with Se Be for text's-visissandako.
Reading madhuraskapokasa-vissandako with Se Be for text's-katuka-vissandako.
Reading vissandani with Se Be for text's-visissandani.
Cp the alternative accounts given at MLS ii 52 n. 3.
Reading ahosi tī with Se Be for text's ahosi tī.
Reading samādāya with Se Be for text's samadāya.
Reading simātā with Se Be for text's simātā.
Reading simūtā with Se Be for text's simūtā.

Readings vary somewhat here. I follow Be (or Se) dāne nirantarappavattāya
paricāgasa-pattiyā lohassa ca abhibhavasa patihūtassa for text's dāna nirantarapavattāya
paricāgasa-pattiyā lohassa cāga-abhibhavasa patihūtassa.
So Se Be for text's vanadi-pakā.
Reading pavo-dentā with Se Be for text's pavo-dento.
That is, the verb here takes two patients, both in the accusative: (they) would
ask me (mā) for the residence (nivesanām).
Sārabhāvaṃ uppādātā, literally having given rise to thoughts of esteem,
estee, that is, for the principle itself that gifts to the spiritually worthy result in
merit.
Reading pūjā uppādento with Se Be for text's pi uppādento.
Perhaps a celestial tree in Sakka's heaven — cp SED sv santana. PVA 176 states
that Sakka's Nandana Grove contains the wish-granting tree and so on and B. Walker's
Hindu World, London 1968, f 211 names five trees to be found there: (1) mandaśa:
(2) pārījata; (3) samātana; (4) chandaśa; and (5) kalpa-vṛkṣa, or the wish-granting
tree. The third of these, the santana, is said to ensure progeny and the continuation
of one's line forever if its leaves are chewed.
Reading tāva with Se Be for text's tava.
Reading Assayamahāśeṣṭhī with Be (or Se Assayamahāśeṣṭhī nāma) for text's
Assayamahāśeṣṭhīnā.
Reading appurisa-dhura-sa with Se Be for text's appurisa-sa madhurasā.
Reading pariṣadā with Se Be for text's pariṣadā.
So Se Be for text's rassa. Cp cty on Fāy 836 at Ev i 207f. Rasa usually has the
meaning of taste, flavour and so on.
Following Se Be, text should have a full stop, not a colon, after evam āha.
Reading gato ti gati vā with Se Be for text's gato ti vā.

Cp PVA 282.
sahāyakiccam karissāmi, literally I will do what a friend should do.
Reading yakkha-vihimsakāya with Se Be for text's yakkha-vihimsakāya.
A gull; it might also be taken as fingers and toes but the cty on v 29 suggests
otherwise.
All texts disagree here. Text reads sakunittaṃ (vī samkunittaṃ); Be reads
samkunittaṃ and Se sakucitaṃ; PVA sv kūpālin recommends reading sakucitaṃ. The
meaning is little affected.
Reading asucīn (Se asucī) vissandanti with Se Be for text's asuci vissandanti.
Reading ūpādā with Se Be for text's ūpādi.
Reading bhavitsābhā with Se Be for text's bhavitsābhā.
Reading uppādāsim with Se Be for text's uppādesi.
Reading virūparūpaṃ with Se Be for text's virūparūpaṃ.
Reading asucidduggandha with Se Be for text's asuci duggandha.
Cp PVA 286.
ājñāc; cp PVA 277, above for a definition.

Reading chāñena with Se for text's sālēna, Be dāñena; cp chāto also in v 37.

Reading dassento with Se Be for text's dento.

Reading paridahissati with Be for text's Se parivassati; cp PED sv paridadati.

Magadhā, literally people from Magadhā.

Reading sampati with Se Be for text's sampati.

Reading nivāsissati pārupissati ca with Be for text's paridadissati nivāsissati pārupissati va (Se paridadissati nivāsissati pārupissati ca).

Reading ratha- with Se Be for text's rathā-.

PED sv catur gives these as saffron, jasmine, Turkish (tarukkhā) and Greek (yavana) incense but cites no authority; cp Milinda's Questions ii 213 n. 3.

Reading ganthitāganthitabhedaṃ with Se Be for text's gaṅgākādibhedam, (flowers) of the gaṅgākā variety and so on. The gaṅgākā appears as the gaṅgākā at Vv 35°, VvA 161 identifying it as the red bandhu-jivakā flower – cp M ii 14; D ii 111, Vism 174. Stories of the Mansions p. 74 n. 4 states this is the hibiscus whereas PED, SED sv both take it as the Pentapetes phoenicea, SED adding that 'it is a plant with a red flower which opens at midday and withers away the next morning'. Mālā, here rendered flowers in accordance with the adopted reading, often means a garland and the cty thus explains mālā as either flowers knotted into a garland or flowers in general.

khallabhādibhedam; see B of Disc iv 246 n. 6 and Vin Texts ii 15.

naḥapakā; barbers seem to have had the dual role of hairdressing and preparing baths.

Se virāḷam, Be virāḷam; text omits.

niyuttam, similarly used in the cty to v 29 of the man appointed by Asayhaseṭṭhi and a practice criticised by Ankura in v 32.

rāja; he was of course a prince but does not seem to have fulfilled any royal duties.

Se Be add devānaṃ here.

Reading patthayamāṇā with Se Be for text's paṭṭhayamāṇa.

Reading attā varabhāvena with Be for text's attāvarabhāvena; Se reads attāva-

Reading vedittabba with Se Be for text's veditabbaṃ.

Reading vimāṃsitukāmo with Se Be for text's vimāṃsi ukāmo.

Reading puna with Se Be for text's pana.

So Se Be; text wrongly has na sabbavittāni.

Cp Dial iii 180 n. 3 where it is stated that according to Buddhaghosa almsgiving and other personal expenditure are to come from the first quarter, those to be enjoyed.

Reading ubhayalokahitiya with Se Be for text's ubhayathā lokahitiya; this world and the world to come are meant.

Reading pasamāsīyaveṭṭham with Se Be for text's pasamāsīyapī tam evavatham.

agarahitena; Be alone reads samāhiten, composed or collected in mind and thus perhaps 'balanced', here.

avisanena, literally not unevenly, and a gloss on samena, with moderation, and therefore 'not lacking moderation'; the extremes are the failure to give and giving to excess.

Reading yathāvuttā with Se Be for text's yathāvuttā.

Reading yañhassa sampadaṃ here and in the following verse with Be for text's Se paññassa sampadaṃ. Yañhā-sampaṭdam appears at D i 128 in a similar context, the re-

Reading vādo ti ye vadanti pi with Se for text's vādo vadanti te; Be reads vādo
tava hotu.

Text mis-spells mego here.

paripūrento; this same verb was rendered 'filling up' when applied to the cloud.
in the verse and the translation obscures the intended parallel somewhat.

102 Reading tan ti with Be for text’s tamhi (Se tam hi).
103 Reading nippattih with Se Be for text’s nibbatti.
104 Reading muñcanctanāya with Se Be for text’s muñcanam cetanāya.
105 Cp PVA 253.
106 Reading dakkhippuyahatthe with Se Be for text’s dakkhinya hatthe.
107 Reading kammaphalasaddhanugatānām with Se Be for text’s kammaphalaladdha.
108 Reading unnanāgalāni with Se Be for text’s dunnangalāni.
109 Like the Uttarāpatha discussed above, this seems originally to have denoted the road leading to the south but in later time the area lying between the south bank of the Ganges and the Godāvarī. By the time of this text its denotation has been extended so as to include the whole of peninsular India in that the Tamil region is said to be part of it. It is also from this term that the more familiar Deccan is derived. See DPPN I 1050 and B. N. Chaudhury, op. cit., pp. 225 ff.
110 Reading tisahasānāi sādha hi with Se Be for text’s janā tisahasā sūdā.

111 pinjenti, literally made into a pinja, the lump of food in the shape of a small ball that was given as food for the pitta in Brahmanic ritual as well as in almsgiving generally. They usually consisted of meat or flour.

112 Mahāyāga, the four Brahmanic sacrifices of the asamedha, horse sacrifice, purisamedha, human sacrifice, sammāpasa, throwing of pegs, and vajapeyya, soma-offering — see e.g. S i 76; A i 42; Sn 303; and discussion at KS i 102 n. 1 and GS ii 50 n. 1 etc. PED sv yajati states that in the Pali literature it refers (with yaññā, sacrifice) either (when critical) to the Brahmanic rites of sacrificing to the gods according to the rules initiated in the Vedas and Vedic literature; or (when dogmatized) to the giving of alms to the bhikkhus. In the latter sense it implies liberal donation of all the necessities of a bhikkhu.” However it should not be forgotten that charity and hospitality towards the brahmin was also understood as a sacrifice, as Ankura’s pre-Buddhist charity here confirms, and such charity was often given on behalf of the deceased (cp PVA 271f.). It is moreover precisely this pre-Buddhist, Brahmanic concept of sacrifice to the almsworthy that the Peta-thathu is seeking to redirect, away from the barren soil of the brahmin and towards the merit-field of the Sāvakasangha, the members of which are said to be “worthy of alms, worthy of hospitality, worthy of offerings, worthy of reverence” (all qualities hitherto assumed by the brahmin) and thus “the world’s unsurpassed merit-field” (e.g. D iii 227; M i 37; S ii 69f.; A i 222 etc.). See R. Amore, The Concept and Practice of Doing Merit in Early Theravāda Buddhism, University Microfilms, Ann Arbor, Michigan 1971, and J. Gonda, Likas: World and Heaven in the Veda, Amsterdam 1966.

113 For the variation in the human life-span cp especially D iii 58-79.
114 Reading sūdāram with Se Be for text’s sādāram.
115 Reading anāpaviddham with Se Be for text’s anāviddham; cp M iii 22; MLS iii 72 n. 3; GS iv 262 n. 6.
116 On this expression see also M iii 22, 24; A iii 171f., iv 392; MLS iii 72 n. 2, where these four, sakkaccaṁ, cittim karvā, sahaṭṭhā and anāpaviddham are combined with āgamanadīṭṭhika, (giving) with regard to the future, that is, believing in the fruition of deeds.

117 Reading bhumāsī ti cittamāsādike with Se Be for text’s bhumāsa ti cittamāsa ti cittamāsādike. Citta, Skt Citta, is March–April and first month of the year.
118 Reading Pakkhē ti with Se Be for text’s tatthāpi.
119 Reading atthato ekam eva with Se Be for text’s atthato.
120 Cp Vin i 55, Thag 934 and note at B of Disc iv 72 n. 2.
121 Reading nanu ca devānāṃ with Se Be; text has nanūpadevānam, but it is not (the life-span) of the minor devas. This would seem to be the only occurrence of the term upadeva and perhaps suspect given the lack of support from Se Be.
See A 1213 ff. for details of the life-spans of the devas of the kāmaloka heavens.

132 antarā, literally in between, midway, during etc.; cp the similar (Theravādin) interpretation of the antarā-parinibbāyaṁ as one who attains parinibbāna before half the life-span usual to the heaven in which he has appeared has passed.

133 Cp Pāv 117.

134 In all 30,060,000 human years. According to A 1213 ff. the life-span of those in the Thirty-three is 36,000,000 human years.

135 Reading mahābhūṣaṁ with Se Be for text’s mahatī.

136 This is said to be performed at Sāvatthī by all Buddhas. In response to a challenge by some heretics the Buddha announced his intention of performing this miracle at the Gāpḍamba tree. The heretics uprooted all the surrounding mango (amba) trees but Gandha, the royal gardener, gave the Buddha a ripe mango as alms-food. This the Buddha ate and then handed the seed to Ānanda for the gardener to plant, whereupon a tree instantaneously appeared. The Buddha created a jewelled walk in the air by the side of the tree and standing thereon performed the Twin Miracle, ‘so called because it consisted in the appearance of phenomena of opposite character in pairs — e.g. producing flames from the upper part of the body and a stream of water from the lower, and then alternatively. Flames of fire and streams of water also proceeded alternatively from the right side of his body and from the left. From every pore of his body rays of six colours darted forth, upwards to the realm of Brahmi and downwards to the edge of the Cakkābaḷa.’ (DPPN ii 682 ff., which see for further details.) The episode is said to have lasted sixteen days during which he preached to those present.

137 Skt Aśātha, June-July.

138 Reading anukkamaṇa tipadavikkamaṇa with Se Be for text’s vitikkamaṇa. According to Vism xii 72, he stood with one foot on the surface of the Earth, and placed the second on Mount Yugandhara. Then again he lifted his first foot and set it on the summit of Mount Sin eru. The Thirty-three is located on this summit. Legend has it that on a visit to Ceylon the Buddha similarly departed by stepping on Siripāda, or Adam’s Peak, to which an annual pilgrimage winds its way to visit the impression left by his foot. Compare the three strides of Vippu a e.g. RV vii 99\(^*\), 100\(^*\), viii 13\(^*\) etc.

139 This is the throne of Sakka, lord of the Thirty-three. It is said to be made of stone, the colour of the Jayasumana flower (DA 482) and from time to time it glows with heat as an indication to Sakka that a righteous person needs his protection (J i 92), that a deed of the Buddha requires his assistance (J i 330, iv 315ff.) or that virtuous deeds have been performed (J iv 401ff., vi 278ff.).

139 Each world has its own special tree (S v 237ff.), that of the Thirty-three being the Pāṇicchattaka, Erythrina indica, the Coral or Umbrella tree (see n. 49). It is said to have shed its flowers onto the deathbed of the Buddha (D ii 137). Cp Vv 22\(^*\), A iv 117ff. and GS iv 78 n. 1-4.

140 He went to teach this to his mother who had been reborn there.

141 Buddhist cosmography conceived a world that had at its centre an incredibly high mountain, known as Meru or Sin eru, that was completely surrounded by an ocean. This ocean was in turn surrounded by a circular mountain chain known as the Yugandhara mountains, half the height of Meru, and themselves surrounded by an ocean. This pattern repeated itself, Meru being encircled alternately by seven concentric oceans and mountain chains, each of the latter being half the height of its predecessor. Beyond the seventh chain lay the Mighty Ocean in which were situated the four continents, one at each of the cardinal points, that in the south being Jambudīpa, or India. Finally a further wall of mountains encircled this Mighty Ocean marking the horizontal limits of this world. The heaven of the Four Great Kings extended from the earth’s surface (hence the inclusion of terrestrial devas such as those in banyan trees) to the summit of Meru, above which was situated the realm
of the Thirty-three. The sun travelled clockwise around Meru near the summit of the Yugandhara mountains, that is, at half the height of Meru and it was thus as a result of the sun disappearing behind Meru that night (Meru’s shadow) was cast over a portion of the earth’s surface. The newly ‘arisen’ sun was really the reappearance of the sun from behind Meru at its constant height of the Yugandhara mountains. Beyond the realm of the Thirty-three lay a further four heavens of the kāmāvacara, or sphere of sense desire. Above this lay the sixteen Brahmālokas of the rūpāvacara, or sphere of form, surmounted in turn by the four worlds of the arūpāvacara, or sphere of formlessness. The horizontal system of concentric mountain chains and oceans is usually referred to by the term cakkavāla, Cp A i 227f.

The cakkavāla together with its heavens and subterranean hells was considered the basic cosmological unit though varying numbers of cakkavālas were believed to exist adjacent to one another. Originally only ten seem to have been conceived, perhaps one in each of the ten directions (cp D i 139). More common, however, is reference to the thousandfold world system (D i 146 = A i 276; A i 227, 281f.; M i 213, 328; S v 175f.) whilst on occasion mention is made of Brahmās who are in charge of world systems that are one, two, three, four, five and even ten thousandfold (M iii 101; cp D i 261), the ten thousandfold world system also appearing at D ii 12 etc. It may be that on occasion by ‘world system’ was meant but a single cakkavāla; whilst on others a group of one thousand such cakkavālas, in which case ‘ten world systems’ would mean ten systems each of one thousand cakkavālas, one in each of the ten directions. This seems to be the way in which Dhammapāla has understood it in the city below. A somewhat different arrangement of multiple world systems can be found at A i 227f.

Reading asidūre with Se Be and v 66 for text’s avidiūre.

Reading sambhāvento with Be for text’s pabhāvento.

Reading ujāngale with Se Be for text’s ujjāngale.

Reading pīropitam with Se Be for text’s viropitan.

Cp KS v 328 n. 5.

The ariyān paths are the supermundane paths of the sotāpanna, once-returner, non-returner and arahant. See the Cariyāpiṭaka (passim); Vism ix 124; and I. B. Horner, Ten Jākata Stories, London 1957, each illustrating one of the ten perfections.

Reading pattiṣṭhapitaṁ with Se Be for text’s pattiṣṭhapitam.

As though neuter (after puññam) instead of masculine.

Reading sugatappasāṭṭhaṁ with Se Be for text’s -ppasāṭṭhaṁ; Sugata is an epithet of the Buddha.

Reading Tayidām Ankarapattavatthu. Satthārā with Se Be for text’s Tayidām Ankarapattavatthu, Satthā.

The ceremony marking the end of the three months' retreat of the rainy season.

An epithet of the Buddha.

This episode is a favourite subject in Buddhist art. Cp Vism xii 79: “The Blessed One descended by the middle flight of stairs made of crystal; the deities of the six sense-sphere heavens by that on the left side made of gold; and the deities of the Pure Aboles, and the Great Brahmā, by that on the right made of silver. The Ruler of Gods held the bowl and robe. The Great Brahmā held a three-league-wide white parasol. Suvāma held a yak-tail fan. Five-crust the son of the gandhabba descended doing honour to the Blessed One with his bilva-wood lute measuring three quarters of a league. On that day there was no living being present who saw the Blessed One but yearned for enlightenment” (Path of Purification, p. 429f.); cp DPPN ii 974.

So Se Be for text’s Sakkha.

The opening words of v 1 but also quoted at the very beginning of the story, it is therefore impossible to know which Dhammapāla had in mind here, though given his remarks at P̄va 2 it may well have been the latter.

Cp P̄va 9.
II.10 EXPOSITION OF THE UTTARA’S MOTHER PETA STORY
[Uttaramātupetavatthuvaññāna]

'A monk who had gone for his midday rest.' This is the Uttara's Mother Peta Story. Here is the explanation¹ of its meaning.

When the First Council had been inaugurated at the Teacher’s Parinibbāna, the venerable Mahā-Kaccāyana [141] was staying together with twelve monks in a certain forest-haunt not far from Kosambi. Now at that time a certain special adviser of king Udena, who had formerly managed his affairs in that city, died. So the king sent for his son, a young man named Uttara, and appointed him to that position of management saying, 'Now you must administer those affairs that were managed by your father.' 'Very well', he agreed² and went one day to the forest taking some carpenters along in order to get some timber for repairs in the city. Whilst there³ he approached the dwelling place of the venerable elder Mahā-Kaccāyana and saw the elder seated there alone and wearing robes made of rags from the dust heap. Becoming devout at (the sight of) his posture alone, he saluted him, extending a friendly greeting, and then sat down at one side. The elder then expounded Dhamma to him. When he heard Dhamma he became full of devotion to the Three Jewels⁴ and, having been established in the Refuges,⁵ invited the elder, saying, 'Please accept out of pity my invitation, sir, to you and the monks for the following day’s meal.' The elder consented by his silence. He then left that place, went to the city and informed other layfollowers, saying, 'I have invited the elder for the following day. You, too, should come to my house where the gifts are to be given out.' Early the next day he had the choicest hard and soft foods prepared, had it announced that it was time and then went out to meet the elder who was approaching with the twelve monks. He saluted them and had them enter the house in front of him. When the elder and the monks were seated on seats spread with suitable and costly coverings, he honoured them with scent, flowers, incense and lamps and satisfied them with the choicest food and drink. Full of devotion and with his hands clasped in the aṇḍali⁶ salute he listened to their appreciation. When the elder was going, after appreciation for the meal had been shown,⁷ he took his bowl and following him left the city. Having him turn back he begged him, 'You should visit my house permanently, sir,' and returned after learning of the elder’s acceptance. Waiting thus upon the elder, he became established in his exhortation [142] and reached the sotāpatti-fruit. He had a vihāra built and made all his relatives find faith in the Teaching. His mother, however, had a heart possessed by the stain of selfishness and she abused him thus, 'May this food and drink that you
thus give to recluses against my wishes turn out to be blood for you in the next world!’ She did, however, allow one spray of peacock tail feathers to be given on the Great Day of that vihāra. When she died she arose in the peta-womb and due to her approval of that gift of the spray of peacock tail feathers her hair was black, sleek, curled at the ends, fine and long. When she went down to the water of the river Ganges thinking, ‘I will drink’, that river became full of blood. For fifty-five years she roamed about, overcome by hunger and thirst. Then one day she saw the elder Kaṅkhārevatā seated on the bank of the Ganges taking his midday rest. She approached him after covering herself with her hair and begged him for some water. With reference to this (the following) was said, these two initial verses having been inserted here by those rehearsing the texts:

1. ‘That pettī who was hideous and horrible to behold approached a monk who had gone for his midday rest and who was seated on the bank of the Ganges.

2. Her hair was extremely long and hung down as far as the ground. Covered by her hair she addressed the recluse thus:’

1. Herein horrible to behold (bhūtrudassanā): terrible to behold, looking very angry. An alternative reading is ‘looking like Rudra’ (ruddadassanā), meaning looking disgusting and grave.10

2. Hung down as far as the ground: yāva bhummāvalambare=yāva bhūmi tāva olambanti (resolution of compound in alternative grammatical form). Firstly ‘monk’ and afterwards ‘recluse’ are both said with reference to the elder Kaṅkhārevatā.

The pettī approached the elder and, begging him for water, uttered this verse:

3. ‘For fifty-five years since I died [143] I am not conscious of having eaten or of having drunk water. Please give me some water, sir – I am parched for want of water.’

3. Herein I am not conscious of having eaten (nābhijānāmi bhuttam vā): throughout that long interval of time I am not conscious of having eaten food or of having drunk water, meaning I have not eaten or drunk. Parched (tasitā): thirsty. For want of water (pāniyāya): ‘Please give me some water, sir, since I have been wandering about in search of water’ – this is how it should be construed.

From here onwards are the verses of the exchange of conversation between the elder and the pettī:

4. ‘This cool water of the Ganges flows down from the Himālaya – you can take some from here and drink. Why beg me for water?’
5 'Sir, if I myself take water from the Ganges it turns into blood for me. That is why I beg for water.'

6 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind?
As a result of which deed does the Ganges become blood for you?'

7 'My son, Uttara, sir, had faith and was a layfollower; against my will
he bestowed on recluses robes and almsfood, requisites and lodging,

8 But I, vexed by selfishness, abused him saying, "May the robes and
almsfood, the requisites and lodging, that you bestow on recluses
against my will,

9 May this become blood for you in the next world, Uttara!" It is as
a result of that deed that the Ganges becomes blood for me.'

4 Herein from the Himālaya (Himavantato): from the king of moun-
tains that has acquired the name 'the Himālaya' on account of its vast
amounts of snow (himassa). Flows down (sandalī): proceeds from. From
here (erto): from this, from the mighty Ganges. Why? (kim): he points
out, 'For what reason do you beg me for water?' Go down to the river
Ganges and drink as much as you like:

5 [144] It turns into blood for me (lohitam me parivattati): because
of a wicked deed the water, as it flows, becomes blood for me, turns into,
changes into, blood. The water becomes blood as soon as she has taken
hold of it.

7 Against my will (mayham akāmaya): against my wishes. Bestowed

9 This (etaṃ): 'May the requisites, such as robes and so on, that you
bestowed on, that you gave to, recluses — may this become blood for you
in the next world, Uttara!' It is as a result of this, the wicked deed done
by way of this curse — this is how it should be construed.

Then the venerable Revata gave some water to the order of monks on
behalf of that peti, went in search of alms and gave the food he had
gathered to the monks. He gathered rags from rubbish heaps and so on,
washed them and made them into cushions and carpets and gave them to
the monks. And in this way that peti gained heavenly excellence. She went
into the presence of the elder and showed the elder the heavenly ex-
cellence she had acquired. The elder explained the issue to the four assemblies
that had come into his presence and then gave a talk on Dhamma. The
people, full of agitation, thereby became free of the stain of selfishness
and took delight in skilled states such as the virtue of giving and so on.

This Peta Story is to be regarded as having been included in this collec-
tion at the Second Council.
ll.11 EXPOSITION OF THE THREAD PETA STORY
[Suttapetavatthuvaŋgana]  

"In the past I (gave) to a monk, to one gone forth.' This is the Thread Peta Story. How did it originate?

It is said that more than seven hundred years before our Teacher had arisen there was in a certain village not far from Sāvatthī a young man who supported a Pacceka-buddha. When he came of age his mother fetched on his behalf a certain daughter of good family from a clan of equal standing but on the very day that he was to be married the young man, who had gone with some friends to bathe, was bitten by a snake and died. They even say that it was because he was possessed by a yakka. Although he was in the position of having done many skilled deeds on account of his support for that Pacceka-buddha yet because of his attachment to that
girl he arose as a vimānapeta but of great psychic power and majesty. Desiring to fetch the girl to his mansion he wondered, ‘Now by what means might she perform a deed to be experienced in this very life and enjoy the pleasures of love with me here?’ Whilst he was considering how she could experience the excellence of heavenly enjoyment he saw a Paccekabuddha making robes. He went in human form and saluted him and asked, ‘Do you have any need of thread, sir?’ ‘We are making robes, layfollower’ (he replied). He pointed out the home of the girl, saying, ‘Well then, you should go and beg some thread at a place such as that.’ The Paccekabuddha went there and stood at the door of the house. When she saw the Paccekabuddha standing there, she realised that the worthy one was in need of some thread from her and, with devotion in her heart, gave him a ball of thread. Then that non-human in human form went to the house of the girl, begged her mother and dwelt with her for a few days. To help her mother he filled all the vessels in their home with money and gold and wrote above his name on them all, saying, ‘This wealth that has been given by the devas is not to be taken by anyone’, and then took the girl and went to his mansion. Her mother, having acquired this abundant wealth, gave to her own relatives and to indigents and tramps and so on and also made use of it herself. As she was dying she told her relatives, ‘If my daughter comes show her this wealth’, and then died.

Then seven hundred years later when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was in due course staying at Sāvatthi, dissatisfaction arose to that woman who was dwelling with the non-human. She spoke to him saying, ‘My lord, please take me back to my own home’, and then spoke these verses:

1  ‘In the past I gave to a monk, to one gone forth, the thread for which he came and begged me. [146] As a result of that abundant fruit is received and many kotis of clothes have appeared for me.

2  Your mansion is strewn with flowers and delightful, it has countless paintings and is attended by men and women. I make use of it and clothe myself yet the abundant possessions are still not exhausted.

3  Accordingly, as the result of that same deed, happiness and pleasure are received here. When I have gone once more to (the world of) men I am determined to do meritorious deeds. Please take me, my lord.’

1  Herein to a monk, so one gone forth (pabbajitassa bhikkhuno): this is said with reference to the Paccekabuddha. He is one gone forth in the highest sense on account of his having renounced the stains of sense desire and so on in his own heart, leaving no remainder. He is worthy of being
called ‘monk’ (bhikkhu) on account of his having destroyed the defilements (bhinnakilesattā). The thread (suttaṃ): the cotton thread. He came (upagamman): he approached my home. Begged me (yācitā): he begged me by going about for alms employing the recognised bodily posture that intimidated⁸ that “The ariyans stand (merely) indicating — this is the ariyans’ begging.”⁹ Of that (tassa) of that gift of thread. As a result abundant fruit is received (vipāko vipulaphal’ūpalabbhati): as a result abundant fruit of the highest yield, the greatest yield, is now received, is now experienced. Many (bahū): countless. Koṭis of clothes: vatthakoṭiyo = vatthanam kotiyo (resolution of compound), meaning countless hundreds of thousands of different sorts of clothes.

2. [147] It has countless paintings (anekacittam): it has various kinds of painted works or¹⁰ it is decorated with countless jewels such as pearls and gems and so on. Is attended by men and women (naranārītevītā): is served by men and women as attendants.¹¹ I make use of it (sāhaṃ bhūjāmi): I enjoy the use of this mansion. Clothe myself (pārūpāmi): dress myself, put on, whatever I desire amidst the countless koṭis of clothes. The abundant possessions (pāhūtabītā): the abundant possession of the necessities of life, of great wealth and great prosperity. Azā still not exhausted (na ca tāva khyati): yet those possessions are not exhausted, do not diminish, do not come to an end.

3. Accordingly, as the result of that same deed (tass’ eva kammassā vipākam anvayā): accordingly, by means of, by reason alone of that same meritorious deed of a gift of thread, the resulting happiness and pleasure consisting in what is agreeable and honey-like are received here, in this mansion. Have gone once more to men (gantrā puṇa-m-eva mānusam): have reached once more the world of men. I am determined to do meritorious deeds (kāhāmi puṇṇāni): I will do meritorious deeds that will yield exceptional happiness for me; or those from which this excellence has been obtained by me — this is the meaning. Please take me, my lord (naya’ ayyaputta māṃ) means please take me (naya = nehi, alternative grammatical form) to the world of men, my lord.

When he heard this, that non-human, unwilling to go both out of pity and also because of his attachment to her, uttered this verse:

4  ‘It is seven hundred years since you came here. You will be old and advanced there and all your relatives will have died. What will you do when you have gone to that place from here?’

4. Herein seven (satta): this is an attribute with an omission of inflexion, or a peculiar expression¹² in the ablative case. Hundred years: vassasatā = vassaratato (alternative grammatical form); it is upwards of seven
hundred years since you came here, since you came to this mansion, meaning it is seven hundred years since you came here. [148] You will be old and advanced there (jīrṇā ca vudāhā ca tahiṃ bhavissasi): you have kept your youthful appearance for all this time by means of the majesty of that deed by which you are sustained here with heavenly food and temperature. But when you have gone from here, due to the exhaustion of that deed and on account of the food and temperature of men, you will be old aged and advanced in years there in that world of men. And all your relatives will have died (sabbe ca te kālokatā va añātakā): in such a long time has gone by, all your relatives will have died. Therefore what will you do when you have gone to that place, to that world of men, from here, from this devaloka? Stay here, spend the rest of your life right here — this is the meaning.

When he had thus spoken, she again spoke, disbelieving what he had said, and uttered this verse:

5 'It is just seven years since I came here endowed with heavenly happiness. When I have gone once more to (the world of) men, I am determined to do meritorious deeds. Please take me, my lord.'

5 Herein it is just seven years since I came here (satt' eva vassāni idhāgatāya me): my lord, it seems to me that only seven years have passed since I came here. She spoke in this way not realising that much time had gone by due to having been endowed with heavenly happiness for seven hundred years. When she had thus spoken that vimānapeta gave her advice in a number of ways, 'You will not live there upwards of seven days from now. There is some wealth given by me and set aside by your mother. Give this to recluses and brahmins with the wish that you might arise right here.' When he had said this he took her by the arm and set her in the middle of her village, telling her that she should exhort the other people who also came there to perform meritorious deeds as their means allowed, and then departed. For this reason it is said:

6 [149] He took her firmly by the arm and led her back, elderly and feeble, saying, 'You should tell other people who have also come here, “Perform meritorious deeds then happiness will be received.”'

6 Herein he (so): the vimānapeta. Her (tam): the woman. Took firmly by the arm (gahetvāna pasayha bāhāyaṇa): took her by the arm as if by force. Led her back (paccānayitvāna): took her once more to the village in which she had been born and had grown up. Elderly (therim): as an elderly woman, meaning old and advanced (in years). Feeble (sudubbalam): feeble on account of her age and decrepitude. It is said that immediately she left that mansion she became old, advanced (in years), stricken in years, had lived her span and was at the close of her life. [17] You
should tell: rajasī-vādeyyaśī (alternative grammatical form). To show her the sort of thing she was to say, ‘Other people (who have) also’ and so on was said. This is the meaning: ‘You, my dear, should perform meritorious deeds and you should tell, other people who have also come here to see you, saying, ‘My honourable friends, even if your head or clothes be ablaze you should ignore this and perform meritorious deeds such as the virtue of giving and so on, for when meritorious deeds are performed the happiness that is their fruit will certainly be received — there is to be no doubt as regards this’.”

When he had said this and had gone from there, the woman went to the dwelling place of her relatives and made herself known to them. She took the wealth that they presented and, giving alms to recluses and brahmans, exhorted all those coming into her presence with this verse:

7 ‘Prasas, and human beings likewise, were seen by me as they came to grief through not having done what is good, [150] as well as devas and men, the race set firm in happiness, after doing deeds that were to be experienced as happiness.’

7. Herein through not having done (ākatena): through not having brought about, through not having themselves accumulated. What is good (sādhana): skilled deeds. This is the instrumental case with the sign of modality. As they came to grief (vihāraṇeti): as they met with distress. That were to be experienced as happiness (sukhavedanīyam): meritorious deeds resulting in happiness. Set firm in happiness (sukhe īḥita): established in happiness; an alternative reading is ‘borne along in happiness’ (sukhedhita), meaning they grow and prosper, accompanied by happiness. This is the meaning here: just as prasas, and human beings likewise, were seen by me coming to grief, meeting with the distress of hunger and thirst and so on and undergoing great misery through not having done what is skilled and through having done what is not skilled, (so also) the race belonging to devas and men was seen by me set firm in happiness after doing deeds that were to be experienced as happiness — through having done skilled deeds and through not having done deeds that are not skilled. This (was seen by me) with my own eyes. Therefore be intent on the performance of meritorious deeds, keeping far away from wickedness.

Having thus exhorted them, she inaugurated a great almsgiving for recluses and brahmans that lasted seven days. On the seventh day she died and arose in the Thirty-three. The monks raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. He explained in particular the great advantage and the great fruitfulness of alms inaugurated with respect to
Paccekabuddhas. When they heard this the people became free of the stain of selfishness and took delight in meritorious deeds such as giving and so on.

1 Reading yakkhagāhena ti pl with Se Be for text’s yakkha-gāhena ti.
2 Reading upāṭṭhānena bahum with Se Be for text’s upāṭṭhāne na bahum. The meaning here is the very opposite of that suggested by Gehman which missed the point that attachment for a member of the opposite sex at the time of dying tended to lessen any kammic reward to which one would have otherwise been entitled—not such a theme recurs from time to time, beginning with the first story; see PvA 5 above.
3 Cp PvA 242.
4 Reading kapanaddhikādaśa ca with Se Be for text’s kapani; cp PvA 78.
5 Reading adāsiṁ with Se Be for text’s adāsi.
6 Reading tassa, with Se Be, as the first word of the third line of the verse rather than, with text, as the last word of the second line.
7 That is, renounced the world.
8 Reading vuttāya kāyavihinātti with Se Be for text’s vuttakāya vihinātti.
9 uddissa ariyā tiṣṭhanti ca ariyānaṃ yācanā ti. This recurs at J i ii 354 and Mīl 230; it is quoted at SnA 318 and a similar passage can be found at Mv ii 419, 420. According to the Jātaka cty the ariyans are said to stand motionless and speechless. They do not gesture by altering the posture of their bodies nor do they break their silence in order to attract attention. Rather they remain motionless and speechless, merely indicating their need of alms. Cp the discussion on Miln’229f.
10 Se Be both add vä here.
11 Reading paricārakabhūtehi with Se Be for text’s parivāraka; cp PvA 205.
12 paccattavacanam, more usually the accusative case.
13 utu, temperature, one of the four causes (paccaya) of the elements (bhūta), the cause of material form (rūpa), the others being kamma, citta and āhāra (food, as here). See CPD sv utu for further details.
14 For the role that wishing or choice can play in determining one’s next birth see M i 289f., iii 99ff.
15 Reading gāmamajhe ṭhapetvā with Se Be for text’s gāmam ajjhoṭhapetvā.
16 Reading thāvarin jināṇam with Se Be for text’s thāvarijināṇam.
17 This is stock — see M i 182; Vin ii 88, iii 2 etc.
18 Reading bhadramukhā with Se Be for text’s -mukkha; cp n. 7 at PvA 95 above.
19 Reading celen with Se Be for text’s colam.
20 This imagery recurs fairly frequently — cp S i 108, iii 143, v 440. A ii 93, iii 308, iv 320, v 93ff. etc.
21 Reading upalabhāti with Se Be for text’s upalabhati.
22 That is, with an ablative inflexion.
23 So Se Be for text’s sukhē diṭṭā.
24 Reading phīta with Se Be for text’s ṭhīta.
25 Reading devamanussapariyāpannā with Se Be for text’s manussāpariyāpannā.
26 Reading desesi with Se Be for text’s dassesi.
II.12 EXPOSITION OF THE KANNAMUNḌA PETA STORY

[Kaṇṇamunḍapetaṭavatthuvaṇṇana]

'The steps of your stairway are golden,'1 This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning the Kaṇṇamunḍa petī.

It is said that long ago, [151] at the time of the Buddha Kassapa, there was in the city of Kimbila a certain layfollower who was a sotāpanna and who was of one faith with five hundred other layfollowers. He pursued meritorious deeds such as planting pleasure-groves, compacting causeways and building bridges and so on and whilst staying there he had a vihāra built for the Saṅgha and would go with them from time to time to that vihāra. Their wives were also layfollowers and whilst going to the vihāra from time to time in harmony with one another and with perfumes, garlands and ointments and so on in their hands they would rest on the way in pleasure-groves and rest-houses and so forth before continuing. Then one day some rogues, who were seated together in one of those rest-houses, noticed their beauty as they left after having rested there and became attracted to them. When they realised that they were endowed with the quality of virtuous conduct they began to talk amongst themselves (wondering), 'Who could breach the virtue of anyone of these?' 'I could', said one of them. They made a bet saying, 'We bet a thousand. If you do it we must give you a thousand but if you do not do it you must give us a thousand.' Trying2 in countless ways, out of greed (for the money) and fear (of losing the bet), he played a seven-stringed vīṇa,3 producing sweet notes, as they came to the rest-house. Singing songs of an erotic nature4 with a sweet voice he caused, by means of the sound of that song,5 a certain woman amongst them to breach her virtue, committed adultery with her and won the thousand from those rogues. Those who lost the thousand to him reported (the matter) to her husband. Not believing him she asked her, 'Are you such as these men say?' 'I know of nothing like that', she objected. When he did not believe her she pointed to a dog standing nearby and made an oath saying, 'If I did such a wicked deed as this, may that shorn-eared black dog devour me wherever I am born!' [152] Though the other five hundred women knew the woman to be an adulteress, when asked, 'Did she or did she not commit a wicked deed like that?', they lied saying, 'We know of no such thing', and made an oath saying, 'If we do know of this then may we be her slaves in all our (future) existences!'

Now that adulterous woman wasted away due to her heart being tormented by an uneasy conscience and, not long afterwards, died. She arose as a vimānapetī on the shore of Lake Kaṇṇamunḍa, one of the seven Great
Lakes on the Himalaya, the king of mountains, and on all sides of her mansion there arose a lotus pond suitable for her to experience the results of her deeds. When the remaining five hundred women died they arose as her slaves on account of making that oath. Through the fruit of the meritorious deeds done previously she enjoyed heavenly excellence there during the day but at midnight, urged on by the force of her wicked deeds, she rose from her bed and went to the edge of the lotus pond. When she got there a black dog the size of a young elephant, terrific in appearance, with shorn ears, with long and protruding, sharp, cruel fangs, his eyes wide open and resembling the burnt embers of acacia wood, his tongue striking out like an uninterrupted succession of flashing lightning, with sharp and cruel claws and hideously long, shaggy hair, thereupon came and threw her to the ground, violently devouring her like one overcome by extreme hunger. When he had made a mere skeleton of her, he took her by his fangs, cast her into the lotus pond and then disappeared. When thrown therein she immediately reverted to her normal form and, after climbing out to her mansion, lay down on her bed. The others however just underwent the misery of slavery to her. They continued to live there in this way until five hundred and fifty years had elapsed whereupon they became dissatisfied as they continued to enjoy heavenly excellence in the absence of any men. Now there was there a river that issued from lake Kannamunda and that flowed into the river Ganges after passing through a mountain cleft. [153] Near their dwelling place was a wooded region that was like a pleasure-grove and embellished with heavenly fruits, mango trees, jack and breadfruit trees and so on. They thought thus, 'Now if we were to throw these mango fruits into that river surely some man would see that fruit and come here out of greed for (such) fruit and then we could amuse ourselves with him.' And they did just this. Some of the mango fruits they threw in were seized by ascetics, some by foresters and some of them adhered to the bank. One however reached the current of the Ganges and in due course reached Benares. Now at that time the king of Benares was bathing in the waters of the Ganges in an enclosure of copper-netting and that fruit, carried along by the current of the river, went in due course and adhered to that copper-netting. When the king's men saw that huge heavenly mango fruit that was full of colour, fragrance and flavour they presented it to the king. The king took a portion and, in order to test it, gave it to a robber, who was being kept in the prison awaiting execution, to eat. When he had eaten it he said, 'Your majesty, never before have I eaten such a mango; this must, I think, be a heavenly mango fruit.' The king gave him a further slice and when he had eaten it his grey hair and wrinkles disappeared and he became extremely captivating in appearance,
like one still in his youth. When the king saw this he was filled with wonder and amazement, ate the mango fruit and obtained elegance in body. He asked his men, 'Where are such mango fruits to be found?' 'It is said on the Himalaya, the king of mountains, your majesty', the men said and, when asked, 'Is it possible to fetch them?', they said, 'The foresters will know, your majesty.' The king sent for the foresters, told them of the matter and then consulted them. He gave a thousand kāḥaṇas to a forester in a wretched state and sent him forth [154] saying, 'Go quickly and fetch this mango fruit for me.'

He gave the thousand kāḥaṇas to his wife and children, took his provisions for the journey and followed the Ganges upstream in the direction of lake Kaṇṇamūṇḍa. When he had passed beyond the ways of men he saw an ascetic at a spot sixty yojanas below lake Kaṇṇamūṇḍa. Going along the route described by him he again saw an ascetic at a spot thirty yojanas (further on). Going along the route described by him he again saw another ascetic at a place fifteen yojanas (further on) and told him of the reason for his journey. The ascetic advised him saying, 'From here onwards you should leave this mighty Ganges and follow this small river upstream until you see a mountain cleft when you should take a firebrand and enter at night. As the river does not flow at night this is therefore a fit (time) for you to proceed. When you have gone on a few yojanas you will see the mangoes.' He did just this and at sunrise he reached that extremely captivating mango grove that resounded with the song¹⁴ of flocks of birds of many varieties and that was embellished with clusters¹⁵ of trees whose spread out branches were bent low under the weight of the fruit they bore,¹⁶ the area being resplendent with a network of rays from a variety of jewels. When those non-human women saw him coming in the distance they ran up to him saying, 'This man belongs to me! This man belongs to me!' As soon as he saw them,¹⁷ however, he was frightened as he was not one who had done meritorious deeds that would entitle him to enjoy heavenly excellence there with them and, crying aloud, ran off and reported the incident to the king when he reached Benares. When the king heard this he was filled with a desire to see those women and to eat those mango fruits, so he entrusted his kingdom to his special advisers and, on the pretext of going on a hunting trip, armed himself with bow and quiver, put on his sword and then went along the road indicated by the forester accompanied by a small retinue of men. He stationed his men at a place a few yojanas distant and continued taking just the forester and in due course he sent him back from there too [155] and entered the mango grove as the sun was rising. When the women saw him like a newly arisen devaputta they went out to meet him. When they realised he was the king they were
filled with affection and esteem. They bathed him with due care and beautifully adorned him with heavenly clothes, ornaments, garlands, scents and ointments and led him up to their mansion where they fed him heavenly foods of the choicest flavours and waited on him according to his wishes.

Then after one hundred and fifty years had gone by the king arose at midnight and, whilst seated, saw that adulterous pet going to the edge of the lotus pond. He followed her, desiring to discover where she could be going at that time (of night), and saw her being devoured by the dog when she got there. He pondered (the matter) for three days without understanding what it was all about, then decided it must be her enemy and took (the dog's) life, shooting it with a sharp arrow. He then plunged the woman into the pond and, when he saw that she had regained her former appearance, he questioned her about the incident with these verses:

1  "The steps of your stairway are golden and strewn with sands of gold; the white water lilies there are lovely, sweetly fragrant and pleasing to the mind;

2  Covered with various trees and pervaded with all kinds of scents; covered with various lotuses, overspread with white lotuses;

3  Entrancing, they waft a lovely fragrance around when fanned by the breeze; resounding with the cries of swans and herons, ringing with the sound of the ruddy goose;

4  Crowded with flocks of various birds and full of the various songs of those flocks; the trees bearing a variety of fruits and woods bearing a variety of flowers;

[156] — The like of such a city as this is not (found) amongst men. And you have many palaces made of silver and gold; (6) dazzling, they shine forth throughout the four directions.

5  These who are your maid-servants, (these) five hundred slaves of yours, (7) they wear bracelets and bangles and their heads are adorned with chaplets of gold.

6  Many couches are yours, made of silver and gold (8) and covered with (hides of the) kadali antelope, well prepared and strewn with long-haired woollen fleeces.

7  When you have gone to rest thereon you are richly endowed with all you desire, (9) yet when midnight arrives you rise from there and go out;

8  You go to the pleasure-ground and (10) you stand on the bright green grassy edge that completely surrounds that lotus pond.

9  Whereupon a crop-eared dog devours you limb by limb (11) and
when he has devoured you and made a skeleton of you, you then plunge into the lotus pond and your body becomes just as it was before.

(12) Then with limbs restored, beautiful and lovely to behold, you put on clothes and come into my presence.

(13) Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed does that crop-eared dog devour you limb by limb?

1 Herein the steps of your stairway are golden (sovanaṣopānaphalakā): the steps of your stairway are made of gold. And strewn with sands of gold (sovanaṣavālukasathatā): and strewn all around with sands made of gold. There (tattha): on the lotus pond. White water lilies: sogandhiyā-sogandhihā (alternative grammatical form). Lovely (vāgga): beautiful, gleaming. Sweetly fragrant (sucigandhā): with a lovely fragrance.

2 Pervaded with all kinds of scents (nānaṃgandhasamṛtā): pervaded throughout with scented winds because of the many kinds of entrancing scents. Covered with various lotuses (nānāpadumasañcchannā): with the surface of the water covered with many and various red lotuses. Overspread with white lotuses (puṇḍarikasamottātā): besprinkled with white lotuses.

3 Entrancing, they waft a fragrance around (surabhī sampavāyanti): the lotus pond as a whole emits a lovely scent — this is the meaning. Resounding with the cries of swans and herons (hamsakoṣṭcābhīrūdā): filled with the cries of swans and herons.

4 Crowded with flocks of various birds (nāṇādījagaṇākīṃṇā): full of flocks of various birds. And full, of the various songs of those flocks (nāṇāsaaraṇāyutā): and filled with the combined resonance of many varieties of birds. The trees bearing a variety of fruits (nāṇāphaladharā): bearing many kinds of fruits, having branches that are continually bent by the weight of the various fruit. And woods bearing a variety of flowers (nāṇāpuṇpahadharā vanā) means and woods that bestow many kinds of entrancing blooms; ‘woods’ (vanā) is given with a distortion of gender.

5 The like of a city is not amongst men (na manussesu īdisam nagaram): the like of such a city as this (one) of yours is not found amongst men, meaning it is not known in the world of men. Made of silver (ruṇiyāmayā): made of silver coin. Dazzling (daddalhamāṇā): extremely brilliant. They shine forth (ābhenti): they blaze forth. Throughout the four directions: samanta caturu disā=samantato catasso pi disā (alternative grammatical form).
6 These who are your: yā temā=ya te imā (resolution of compound). Maid-servants (paricārikā): those who perform services. They (tā): those maid-servants. Wear bracelets and bangles (kambukāyuraṇārāṇī): are decorated with armlets and bangles of conch-shell. Their heads are adorned with chaplets of gold (kañcañāvejābhūṣītā): tufts of their hair are decorated with golden hangings.42

7 Covered with kadall antelope (kadalamigaṇaṇāhāna): spread over with coverings of kadall antelope hides. Well prepared: sajjā=sajjītā (alternative grammatical form); fit for sleeping on. Strewn with long-haired woollen fleeces (goṇakasanathā): strewn with a long-haired fleecy rug.

8 Thereon (yatthā): on that couch. When you have gone to rest: vāsūpagatā=vāsam upagatā (resolution of compound), meaning when you have lain down to sleep. When midnight arrives (sampattāya aḍḍharattāya): when midnight has come. From there (tato): from that couch.

9 That lotus pond: pokkharānī=pokkharaniyā (alternative grammatical form). [158] Green (harite): blue-green.44 Grassy (saddale): covered with young grass. Bright (subhe): clean; or, alternatively, it is a form of addressing her — ‘My bright one’. You go and stand, and remain, my dear, on the green grassy edge that completely surrounds that lotus pond — this is how it should be construed.

10 Crop-eared (kaṇḍamūndo): with torn ears, with shorn ears. He has devoured you: khaṇḍitā āsī=khādītā ahosi (alternative grammatical form). Made a skeleton of you (aḍḍhisasīkhālī katā): made a mere skeleton of you. Just as it was before (yatthā pure): like it was before being devoured by the dog.


When questioned thus by the king, the petī uttered five verses relating her story to him from the very beginning:

13 (14) ‘In Kimbilā there was a householder, a layfollower with faith; I was his wife but of bad conduct and adulterous.

14 (15) My husband said this (to me) whilst being thus adulterous, ‘This is not fitting nor seeming — that you should be adulterous against me in this way.’

15 (16) I told a terrible lie when I made that oath saying, ‘I have not been adulterous against you either in body or in thought.

16 (17) If I have been adulterous against you either in body or in thought, then may that crop-eared dog devour me limb by limb.”
(18) It is both as a result of that deed and due to the fact that I lied that for seven hundred years since I have undergone being devoured limb by limb by that crop-eared dog.

[159] Herein in Kimbilā [Kimbilāyāṇa]: in the city of that name. Adulterous (aticārīnt): when a wife has transgressed against her husband she is called adulterous because of her conduct.

My husband said this to me whilst I was being adulterous — this is how it should be construed. This is not fitting, and so on shows the manner in which he spoke. Herein this is not fitting (n'etam channam): this is not proper. This is not seeming (n'etam paśīrūpan) is just a synonym for this. In this way (yam): in that act of succumbing. Should be adulterous: aticarasi=aticarast (alternative grammatical form); or, alternatively, this (latter) is alone the reading, meaning that you should be adulterous against me in this way, your adultery on that occasion — this is not fitting nor is this seeming.


If I: sacāham=sace ahām (resolution of compound). Against you: tam=(vam (alternative grammatical form).

Of that deed (tassa kammassa): of that wicked deed, of that deed of bad conduct. And due to the fact that I lied (musāvādassa ca): and due to the fact that I lied with the aforesaid ‘I have not been adulterous.’ Both (ubhayam): as a result of both. I have undergone (anubhūtam) means I have been undergoing. Since (yato): since (I did) that wicked deed.

When she had thus spoken she uttered two verses praising the service he had rendered her:

(19) ‘And you, your majesty, came here for my sake and have been of great service; I am well rid of the crop-eared one and am without sorrow, having nothing to fear from any quarter.

(20) I bow before you, your majesty, and beg you with the añjali salute: enjoy these non-human sensual pleasures, your majesty, amuse yourself with me.

Herein your majesty (deva): she is addressing the king. Of the crop-eared one: kaṇṭhamundassa=kaṇṭhamundato (alternative grammatical form): this is the genitive case in the sense of the ablative.

Then the king tired of living there and made known his intention to leave. When she heard this that pet, because of her attachment to the king, [160] uttered the verse (beginning:) ‘I bow before you, your majesty’, begging him to stay right there. But the king, resolute in his desire to leave, uttered the concluding verse, announcing his intention:
20. (21) 'I have enjoyed these non-human sensual pleasures and amused myself with you. My fortunate one, I beg you, please take me back quickly.'

20 Herein I (beg) you: tāhan-tam aham (resolution of compound). My fortunate one (subhage): you who are connected with fortune. Please take me back (pajinayāhi mān): please take me back to my city. The rest is clear throughout.

When the vimānapetī heard what the king had to say she was unable to endure their separation. With a heart perplexed and sick with grief, her body trembling, even though she pleaded in various kinds of ways, she could not persuade him to stay there. She took the king to the city with many jewels of great value and led him up to the palace and, after she had wept and wailed, she returned to her own dwelling place. Now when the king saw this, full of agitation, he performed meritorious deeds such as giving and so on and became bound for heaven. Then when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was in due course staying at Sāvatthī, the venerable Mahāmoggallāna when wāndenāg one day in the mountains saw that woman with her retinue and asked her about the deed she had done. She related everything to the elder from the very beginning. The elder raised the issue with the Lord who took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. The people, having received this agitation, gave up wicked deeds, performed meritorious deeds such as giving and so on, took delight in Dhamma and became bound for heaven.

1 Text's sovanasapānaphalakā should be amended to read sovanasopāna with verse.
2 Reading vāyamāmāno with Be for text's Se gāyamāno.
3 One of India's classical instruments, somewhat similar to the lute. See A. K. Coomaraswamy, 'Some Pali Words', Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies IV, 2, 1939, p. 167.
4 Reading kāmapatīsamyyuttāgitiṇi with Be for text's Se kānāmatī.
5 madhura, rendered throughout as sweet, has underlying connotations of intoxication and flattering and so on. It was therefore no doubt the lure of the music rather than the melody alone that enticed her to act in the way she did.
6 The others are Anottata, Shappatha, Rathakāra, Kupāla, Chaddanta and Mandākini; see D i 54; A iv 101; I ii 92; cp DA 164 for a different set.
7 Cp PvA 228.
8 bhavavāpūra, like Bhairava in appearance. Bhairava, like Rudra (PvA 142), was associated with a terrific aspect of Śiva and is particularly ferocious. Bhairava is the national deity of Nepal.
9 Reading suvipphālita for text's suvippahalita; cp PED sv. Se reads suvippuḥita-khadirangaprapānasadasadasanayo (Be suvippuḥita-).
10 Reading nirantarapavattavijulatasa ghatasadasajvaho with Se (Be-vijulatā) for text's nirantarapavattavijulatasa ghatasadasajvaho.
Reading *panasalabujādhi* with Be for text's *pana salabujadhi*, that is, *pana*, the jackfruit tree, *Artocarpus integrifolia*, and *labuja*, the breadfruit tree, *Artocarpus lacucha* or *incisa*; the suggestion that we should read *salāja- at PED* sv *labuja* should probably be deleted.

Reading *tenu* with Se Be for text's *tehl*.

Reading *vajhacorassa* with Se Be for text's *vajhacorasa*; PED sv *vajha* does not notice.

Reading *īpakujitām* with Se Be for text's *īpakujitaṃ*.

Reading *tarugaṇaparabhitām* with Se Be for text's *tarugaparābhitāṃ*.

Reading *phalabhārvanatā* with Se Be for text's *phalabhārvanata-ā*.

Se Be adds *tā* here.

Se Be reads *oṣāvetvā*, made her go down, for text's *oṣāhetvā*, I follow our text since this reading accords better with *oṣāhati of v 11* upon which all texts agree. Be adds here that he made her go down after he had beaten her.

Reading *santā* with Be for text's *sa-santhītā*.

Reading *sogandhiyā*, literally pleasant smelling; the *Nympheae* lotus. Not listed by PED which gives only *sogandhika*.

Cp Dhāp 58.

Reading *paduma*, *Netumbium speciosum*; they can be either red, white, blue, yellow or pink.

Reading *samottā* with Be for text's *samajātā*; Se reads *samogatā*. Cp Vv 44 11, 81 8.

Reading *puṇḍarīka*; according to Chikitsa it may also denote a fragrant kind of mango.

Reading *kṣaṇa*, swan or goose, the king of birds and thus by extension applicable to the *araṇānt*, the 'king' of men — Sn 220c, 1134; Dhāp 91, 175. It is also the *vāhana*, or steed, of *Brahmā* and is usually interpreted as a symbol of purity when it appears in Buddhist architecture.

Reading *cakkavāka*, *Anas Casarca*.

Reading *dhārā* with Se Be for text's *tādā*.

The first four verses are to be understood as all describing the *vimānapetā's* residence, the like of which is not to be found in the world of men. The ordering of the various epithets contained in these verses, as they have come down to us, is rather muddled. As already noted (n. 25) 2 c d and 3 a b appear twice in Vv as a single verse and it is a prominent feature of these verses that they begin a topic half way through a verse and continue it in the first half of the following verse. This strongly suggests that they have either become muddled or that one or more half verses have at some time got lost. Be attempts to rectify this by taking 6 a b as 5 c f and then continuing half a verse behind, so to speak. This is adopted here and numbers in brackets are inserted to indicate the numbering of our text. One may feel that it would have been better had Be instead read 5 a b as 4 c f. On the basis of context it would seem plausible to reconstruct these verses as follows: 2 a b 4 c d > 1 a b c d for these trees are those of her mango grove and the pond is surely not to be understood as being covered by trees, as Gehrmann suggested; then 1 a b c d > 2 a b c d; 2 c d 3 a b > 3 a b c d; and 3 c d 4 a b > 4 a b c d with perhaps the addition of 5 a b as 4 c f, since it is possible that the missing half verse belonged to v 5.

Reading *sovaṇṇarupiyāmayā* with Be for text's *rúpiyamayā* (Se *rupiyāmayā*), similarly in v 7 where text reads *rúpiyamayā* and Se correctly *rupiyāmayā*.

Reading *kañcanaśālabhūsītā* with Se Be for text's *keśalabhūsītā*; cp III 91 and Vv 36 3.

Reading *sajjā gonaśasanṭhātā* with Se Be for text's *sanṭhītā*.

Reading *kañcana*; cp Isaka *kañcana* above which may be understood as meaning 'with blunt corners'.

Reading *sa-santhītā* with Be and verse for text's *sa-santhītā*. 
II.13 EXPOSITION OF THE UBBARĪ PETA STORY

[Ubbarīpetavatthuvaṇṇanā]

There was a king, Brahmadatta. The Teacher, who was staying in the Jeta Grove, told this Ubbarī Peta Story concerning a certain layfollower.

It is said that at Sāvatthī the husband of a certain female layfollower had died and that she, sick with misery at their being separated, would go mourning for him to his funeral pyre and weep. When the Lord saw that she possessed the potential for realising the sotāpatti-fruit his heart was stirred with compassion and he went to her home and sat down on the appointed seat. The layfollower approached the Lord, saluted him and then sat down at one side. The Teacher then asked her, 'Are you in mourning, layfollower?' When she said, 'Yes, Lord, I mourn being separated from a loved one', he recounted (an incident) of long ago, desiring to dispel her grief:

Long ago, in the city of Kapila in the kingdom of Pañcāla, there was a
king named Cūlani-Brahmadatta. He abandoned the ways of going astray and was given to working for the welfare of the people in his realm, governing his kingdom without violating the tenfold code of a king. Desiring on one occasion to hear what was being said in his kingdom, he took the guise of a tailor, left the city unaccompanied and wandered from village to village, from district to district. When he saw that the whole kingdom was free of thieves and unoppressed and that men were living on friendly terms — indeed, that they even left the doors of their houses open — he turned back joyfully. As he was coming towards the city, he entered the house of a widow who led a miserable existence in a certain village. When she saw him she said, 'Now who are you, sir, and from which place have you come?' 'I am a tailor, madam, and I wander about doing tailoring jobs for a fee. If you have any tailoring jobs then give me some food and some remuneration and I will do them for you too.' 'We do not have any jobs that need doing,' nor food and remuneration. You will have to work for another, sir,' she said. Whilst dwelling there for a few days he saw her daughter who was endowed with a sign of future good fortune and merit and asked the mother, 'Is this daughter already married to anyone or is she still unmarried: If she is not married to anyone then give her to me for I am capable of providing you with the means for a life of comfort.' 'Very well, sir,' she, replied and gave her to him. He dwelt with her for a few days and then gave her a thousand kahāpanas, saying, 'I will return in just a few days, my love; do not despair,' and went to his city. He had the road between the city and that village levelled and decorated and then went there in great royal splendour. He stood the girl on a pile of kahāpanas, bathed her with gold and silver water pots, conferred on her the name of Ubbari and appointed her to the position of queen-consort. He gave the village to her relatives and led her to the city in great royal splendour. Enjoying the pleasures of love with her he experienced a reign of comfort as long as he lived and died at the end of his natural span. When he died and his funeral rites had been performed, Ubbari, her heart pierced by the dart of grief at their being separated, went to his funeral pyre where she paid honour for many days with scents and flowers and so on, praised the king’s virtues and thereafter circumambulated his funeral pyre by the right, weeping and wailing like one driven to distraction.

Now at that time our Lord was the Bodhisatta and he had gone forth in the life of a rishi and had attained both the jhānas and the abhinīnas. Whilst staying in a certain forest haunt in the neighbourhood of the Himālaya he saw by means of his deva-like vision Ubbari pierced by the dart of grief. He travelled through the air and then, making himself visible,
remained in the air and asked people who were stood here and there, 'Whose funeral pyre is this? And for the sake of whom does this woman weep, wailing, "O Brahmadatta, O Brahmadatta"?' When they heard this those people said, 'This, sir, is Ubbarī, wife of Brahmadatta, who ever since he died has gone to his funeral pyre and wept, wailing and calling out his name "Brahmadatta".'

Those rehearsing the texts inserted these six verses elucidating the matter:

1. 'There was a king, Brahmadatta, a bull amongst the Pañcālas’ charioteers; then after many days and nights that king died.
2. His wife Ubbari went to his funeral pyre and wept; seeing Brahmadatta no (more) she wept, "O Brahmadatta!"
3. [163] Now a rishi came there, a sage of perfect moral conduct and he there questioned those who were met there, saying, "Whose is this funeral pyre that is pervaded with all kinds of scents? Whose this wife that weeps for a husband gone far from here, who seeing Brahmadatta no (more) weeps, 'O Brahmadatta!'?
4. And those there explained, those who were met there, saying, "Brahmadatta's, O blessed one; Brahmadatta's, good sir.
5. His is this funeral pyre that is pervaded with all kinds of scents and his this wife that weeps for a husband gone far from here, who seeing Brahmadatta no (more) weeps 'O Brahmadatta!'"

1. Herein there was: ahu=ahosi (alternative grammatical form). The Pañcālas' (Pañcālānam): of the inhabitants of the Pañcāla kingdom; or merely of the Pañcāla kingdom, for though it is only one country it is denoted by the plural expression 'the Pañcālas' which has come about on account (of its being the name) of the royal princes that belong to that country. A bull amongst charioteers (rathesabho): like a bull amongst charioteers, meaning a mighty charioteer.
2. To his funeral pyre (tassa āfāhanam): to the place where the body of the king had been cremated.
3. Rishi (īṣi): he is a rishi (īṣi) by reason of his striving after (esānā) accomplishments such as the jhānas and so on. There (tatthā): to the place where Ubbari was standing, meaning to the cemetery. Āgačchī=agamāsi (alternative grammatical form). Of perfect moral conduct (sampannacarana) means that in moral conduct he is perfect, he is possessed of, and perfect in, these fifteen accomplishments classed under moral conduct. He is accomplished in virtue, has control over the doors of his senses, knows moderation in eating, is intent on vigilance, (is possessed of) the seven excellent things and (can attain) the four jhānas of
the sphere of form. A sage (muni): a sage is one who is sagacious (munāti), who knows what is to his own benefit and what is to the benefit of others. And he there questioned those (te ca tattha āpucchittha): he asked those people who were in that place. Who were met there (ye tattha su samāgata): those people who were met here and there in that cemetery. Su (untranslated) is a mere particle. An alternative reading is 'who were met there' (ye tatthāsum samāgata), where were: āsum=ahesum (alternative grammatical form).

4 [164] That is pervaded with all kinds of scents (nānāgandhasamāraṁ): that is pervaded throughout and perfumed by many kinds of scents. From here (ito): from the world of men. Gone far (diagram): he refers to the fact that he is gone to the world beyond. Weeps, 'O Brahmadatta' (Brahmadattā ti kandati): she invokes him by wailing and proclaiming his name thus: 'O Brahmadatta'.

5 Brahmadatta's, O blessed one, Brahmadatta's, good sir (Brahmadattassabhaddante Brahmadattassamārśa): O great sage of sound mind and body, this is the funeral pyre of king Brahmadatta and this is the wife of that same king Brahmadatta. May Brahmadatta receive your blessing, O blessed one, for it is through a regard for their welfare of great rishis like you that there is welfare and happiness for those stationed in the world beyond — this is the meaning.

When the ascetic heard their words he went out of pity into Ubbari's presence and uttered this verse with the purpose of dispelling her grief:

7 'Eighty-six thousand with the name of Brahmadatta have been cremated on this funeral pyre. For which of these do you mourn?'

7 Herein eighty-six thousand (chaśṭrisahassāni): in number eighty thousand plus six hundred more besides. With the name of Brahmadatta (Brahmadattassanāmakā): of that name 'Brahmadatta'. For which of these do you mourn? (tesan kāṁ anusocati): he asks, 'For which Brahmadatta of these eighty-six thousand Brahmadattas do you mourn? On account of which has your grief arisen?'

When she had been thus questioned by the rishi, Ubbari uttered this verse showing the Brahmadatta she meant:

8 'The king who was the son of Cūjani, a bull amongst the Pañcūlas' charioteers, it is for him that I mourn, sir, my husband who granted all my desires.'

8 Herein the son of Cūjani (Cūlaniputto): the son of the king of that name. [165] Who granted all my desires (sabbakāmadam): who was one
to give me everything whatsoever it was I wanted; or, alternatively, who would give all beings what they wanted.

When Ubbart had thus spoken the ascetic once more uttered two verses:

9  'All were kings with the name of Brahmadatta; all were sons of a Cūjani and bulls amongst the Pañcālas' charioteers.

10  To all in turn did you act as queen-consort; why do you forsake those previous ones and mourn (only) this last one?'

9  Herein all were (sabbe 'va hesuṇ): all of those that number eighty-six thousand were kings with the name of Brahmadatta, were sons of a Cūjani and bulls amongst the Pañcālas' charioteers; these conditions of being a king and so on had amongst them no peculiar distinction, even on a single point.

10  Did you act as queen-consort (mahesittām akārayi): and to all of them in turn did you act in the office of chief queen and consort, meaning you attained (that office). Why? (kasmā): he asks, 'Amongst all those people, none of whom were distinguished either in their role as husband or in their personal qualities, why, for what reason, do you abandon those previous kings and mourn only this last one?

When she heard this Ubbart, filled with agitation, once more uttered a verse to that ascetic:

11  'Was I myself a woman for that long time, good sir, I of whom you speak as having been a woman often in saṃsāra?'

11  Herein myself: ātume=attani (alternative grammatical form). Was I a woman? (iṭṭhibhūtāya): did I go into existence as a woman? For that long time: dhigarattāya=dhigarattam (alternative grammatical form). This is the meaning here: was I myself a woman, was I only a woman for all that time or did I also go into existence as a man? I of whom (you speak) as having been a woman: yassā me iṭṭhibhūtāya=yassā mayham iṭṭhibhūtāya (alternative grammatical form); I of whom you speak, that is, you relate, great sage, as having been a woman thus, of having been queen-consort so often in saṃsāra. An alternative reading is 'Oh, I myself remember that I was a woman' (ātumo itṭhibhūtāya). Herein Oh, I remember (ā) is a particle denoting recollection. Myself (tumo): by myself (sayam); this is recollected, known, by me. That I was a woman (iṭṭhibhūtāya): that I went into existence as a woman [166] — there was continual arising thus for me for so long a time. Why? Since (it is) I of whom you speak, great sage, as having been a woman often in saṃsāra (saying), 'To all in turn did you act as queen-consort' — this is how it should be construed.

When he heard these words the ascetic then uttered this verse showing
that there is in samsāra no such law that a woman is only a woman and a
man only a man.36

12 'You were a woman, you were a man, you also went to womb of
cattle. The limit of this long past is thus not to be seen.'

12 Herein you were a woman, you were a man (ahu itthi ahu puriso):
at times you were a woman and at times you were also a man. But it is not
solely a question of being just a woman or a man for, moreover, you also
went to womb of cattle — at times you also went37 into being as cattle and
you also went to the womb of other animals.38 The limit of this long past
is thus not to be seen (evam etam attānāṁ pariyaṁta na dissati): the limit
of this long past of existences — this aforesaid being a woman, being a man
and being an animal and so on that you went into — is thus not to be seen,
even to those looking very strenuously with the eye of knowledge. But this
does not apply solely to you: indeed the limit of the existence of all beings
who are wandering about in samsāra is not to be seen, is not revealed. For
this reason the Lord said, 'Inconceivable, monks, is the beginning of this
samsāra; the earliest point is not revealed of the running on, of the
samsāra, of beings hindered by ignorance and fettered by craving.'39

When she had thus heard Dhamma taught by that ascetic in which he
made clear the influence of deeds39 and the absence of any limit to
samsāra, with agitation in her heart with respect to samsāra and with devotion
in her heart for Dhamma, she came to lack the dart of grief and
uttered these three verses making known her devotion and her lack of
grief:

13 'I was truly ablaze, being like a fire fed with ghee; but now all my
sorrow has been extinguished as if I had been sprinkled with water.
14 [167] Truly the dart, the grief,31 that had pierced my heart has been
drawn out. You have dispelled that grief, the grief for my husband
which had overwhelmed me.
15 With dart withdrawn I am become tranquil and cool; since hearing
you, great sage, I no longer grieve nor weep.'

The meaning of these is just as that given above.42

The Teacher then spoke four verses showing the behaviour of Ubbari
who now had agitation in her heart:

16 'When she heard these words of his, the well-spoken utterance of
that recluse, she took robe and bowl and went forth into the home-
less life.

36 S 178 = iii 149 = 151 = v 226.
And she, being one gone forth from home into the homeless life, cultivated a mind of friendliness leading to birth in the Brahmaloka. Wandering from village to village, to market towns and royal cities; Uruvelá was the name of the village in which she died. Having cultivated a mind of friendliness for the sake of arising in the Brahmaloka and having put aside a woman’s thoughts she reached the Brahmaloka.  

Herein of his (tassa): of that ascetic. Well-spoken utterance: subhāsi- 
tam\textsuperscript{44}=suttlu bhāsita (resolution of compound), meaning the Dhamma. One gone forth (pabbajitā): one gone into the homeless state. Being: santā=samānā (alternative grammatical form); or, after having become one gone forth, she is calmed (santā) in body and speech.\textsuperscript{45} A mind of friendliness (mettacittan): a mind accompanied by friendliness. He speaks of the jhānas (attained by) friendliness which come under the heading of mind. For the sake of arising in the Brahmaloka (brahmalokūpapitīyā): and in cultivating that mind of friendliness she did so for the sake of arising in the Brahmaloka, not with the purpose of establishing a basis\textsuperscript{46} for insight (meditation).\textsuperscript{47} Indeed, before the Buddha arose, ascetics and those gone forth who were cultivating the Brahmavihāras\textsuperscript{48} and so on did so only in so far as for the sake of attaining an excellence of existence.\textsuperscript{49} From village to village (gāmā gāmān): from one village to another village. Having cultivated (ābhāvetvā): having developed, having made to grow; some read abhāvetvā, the t-prefix-letter a being a mere particle for them. Having put aside a woman’s thoughts (itticittan viśājetvā): having done away with the thoughts, dispositions and desires of womanhood\textsuperscript{50} her mind became detached from femininity.\textsuperscript{50} She reached the Brahmaloka (brahmalokūpogā): she was one who reached the Brahmaloka by way of rebirth. The rest is quite self-evident since it has already been explained above. When the Teacher had recounted this teaching on Dhamma and dispelled the grief of that layfollower, he afterwards gave her the Teaching on the Four (Noble) Truths at the end of which the layfollower became established in the sotāpatti-fruit. That teaching was (also) of benefit to the company assembled there. The Exposition of the Ubbarī Peta Story is concluded — thus the exposition of the meaning of the second, Ubbarī, chapter, that is adorned with thirteen stories in this Peta Stories of the Khuddaka Nikāya is concluded.\textsuperscript{51}
The kingdom of Paścāla was divided into a northern region (Uttara-Paścāla) and a southern one (Dakkhina-Paścāla). It was situated between the Kuru country and Kosala and ‘Paścāla may be roughly identified with the tract north and south-east of Delhi from the foot of the Himalayas to the Chambal covering Budaun, Farukhabad and adjoining districts’, B. N. Chaudhury, *Buddhist Centres in Ancient India*, Calcutta 1969, p. 32; cp DPN ii 108. Most sources agree that Kapila (often spelt Kāmipila, Kāmipīla etc.) was in Dakkhina-Paścāla.

His story is to be found in the Mahā-Ummagga Jātaka (No. 546); cp Uttarādhyāyana xiii (SBE xiv 56-61) for a Jaina account.

Agatīgamanānam, the four evils of desire (chanda), hatred (dosa), delusion (moha) and fear (bhaya). At Dial ill 220 n, 2 it is suggested that agatiyagacchati means ‘literally, he goes to a not-going, or wrong going, or impasse’. Most common perhaps is the appearance of this expression in the phrase chandāgatiyagacchati which has seen various renderings: pursue the wrong path of impulse (GS i 67), goes to the non-bouma through desire (GS ii 19), goes astray from wish (GS ii 198), go astray through desire (GS iv 246), taking a wrong course through partiality (Dial ill 125; cp B of Disc v 111, 247), whilst at Vin Texts ill 25 agatī is rendered ‘does not walk’. Whatever the precise meaning of agati it is a conduct impossible of arahants (D iii 133 = A iv 370), its absence leads to heaven whilst its presence to suffering in hell (A ii 19) since the latter is a source of pāpakamma, wicked deeds (D iii 182). It cannot therefore be a ‘non-bouma’, in the sense of not gaining birth in one or other of the five bouma (paścāgati). Thus it would seem more a lack of a path altogether rather than either a wrong path or a lack of a destiny. That is, those who are distracted by any of the above four evils may be thought to lose their way and go astray in the sense that they are no-longer going anywhere (in their spiritual development) – e.g. AA iii 22: chandāgatiyagacchati tī chandena agatīyagacchati, akutthabban karoti; due to desire he ‘gets nowhere’, he does what ought not to be done.

Dasā rājadhāmme alms giving, morality, generosity, straightforwardness, gentleness, self-restraint, non-anger, non-violence, forbearance and non-opposition (J i 274; cp J i 260, 399, ii 400, iii 320, v 119, 378). They are said to guard against the ways of going astray (J i 176, v 510).

* Reading anupāpiṭam with Se Be for text’s anupāpiṭam...
* Reading bhuddaṁ ca vetanaṁ ca with Se Be for text’s vatthaṁ ca veśhanaṁ ca.
* Kattabban; Se Be omit.
* Reading bhuttavetanaṁ vā with Se Be for text’s vatthaṁ vā veśhanaṁ vā.
* Reading jīvanūpiṭyaṁ with Se Be for text’s jīvanūpiṭyaṁ.

10 Reading mā ukkaṭṭhasi with Se Be for text’s mā khandali; cp PED sv khandali where a reading of ukkaṭṭhi is recommended.

11 Cp PVA 74.
12 Reading kassatthāyaṁ cāyaṁ with Se Be for text’s kass’ athāyaṁ.
13 Reading paridevati with Se Be for text’s paridevanti.
14 muni.
15 Reading bhaddante with Se Be for text’s bhaddantte.
16 Reading eko pi hi with Se Be for text’s eko pl.
17 Reading janapadikānaṁ with Se Be for text’s janapadādhikānaṁ; Se -ādhikānaṁ.
18 Cp PVA 98, 265 for similar.
19 Reading Ubbariyāṁ hitaṭṭhāne with Se Be for text’s ubbhāṭṭhāne.
20 Cp M i 32, 273, 354f., 471; S ii 218; A i 113f., ii 40, iv 108.
21 Ḍha has faith (saddhā), shame (hiṁma), a fear of blame (ottattaṁ), is one who has heard much (bhūtussata), his energy is stirred up (āradhāvānīyya), his mindfulness is aroused (upāṭṭhitā-satī) and possesses insight (paññavā). In detail at M i 356; cp also D iii 252, 282; M i 354, ii 23; A iv 108.
22 Cp PVA 156.
23 paraloka.
24 Reading bhaddante with Se for text’s Be bhaddante.
25 Cp M I 378 whom through an act of ill will of mind on the part of rishis in the forests the (former) forests of Danḍaka, Kalinga, Mejha and Mātarāga became forests again just as in the same way fifty cities the size of Nālandā might be reduced to cinder.

26 Cp Uttarādhyāyana xiii 11f. (SBE xlv 57). We are not here told of the fate of Brahmādatta but in the jaina account he ends up in hell.
27 akśī — so Se Be as a gloss on akāśiyi; text omits.
28 Reading avāśīthyu with Se Be for text’s avāśīthesu.
29 Reading both here and below with our text’s vī; all texts read ānu me.
30 Reading itthibhūṣā ṭi with Be for text’s itthibhūṣā ṭ; Se reads itthibhūṣā ṭ though later itthibhūṣā.
31 Reading anusaranatthe with Se Be for text’s anusaranatthe.
32 Reading aparāṇa upappatī with Be for text’s Se aparāṇa va (Se ca) anupkappati.
33 Reading yasmā with Be; Se reads tasmā whilst text omits.
34 This is clearly a quotation from the preceding verse but no text adds ti.
35 Dhammapāla was clearly facing a corrupt verse here. The translation can, given the nature of the text, be no more than provisional and several interpretations might be made at different places but these cannot be sustained with any consistency throughout the whole paragraph. The interpretation offered here is based both on how it seems Dhammapāla himself understood the verse and on the context in which the verse is found. The following verse seems to be answering a question raised by this present verse and this is the first of Dhammapāla’s explanations. Given the second explanation we should however take the verse as:

Oh, I myself remember that I was a woman for that long time, good sir, I of whom you speak, as having been a woman often in sāṁśāra in which case v 12 no longer answers a question but rather corrects a faulty memory:
You were (not only) a woman, you were (also) a man, you also went to womb of cattle. The limit of this long past is thus not to be seen.

36 Reading ayam niyamo sāṁśāre n’ātthi with Se Be for text’s ayam niyamo sāṁśāreṇ’ atthi; PED’s niyama should be amended accordingly.
37 Reading sāgaṁū with Be for text’s Se āgamā.

That is, ‘cattle’ in its widest sense of sheep, horses and so on. The Pali pasu, similarly defined at PVA 80 above, is here contrasted with tiraccchāna, or animals in general.
38 Though it is stated at M i 483 (cp MLS ii 161 n. 2) that the Buddha can (only) remember ninety-one acons and though the stock passage concerning his knowledge of his former births states that he can (only) remember many acons of such births — e.g. M i 22, 35; S ii 122, 213; A i 255; It 99 — D iii 134 states that he can do this as far back as he desires and It 121 that he can know anything that he desires. Similarly D iii 28 has the Buddha claiming, ‘The ultimate beginnings of things I know, Bhagavan, and I know not only that, but much more than that.’ See also the discussion at KS ii xi.
39 kammassa katam, literally deeds that have been done.
40 Reading sokam with Se Be for text’s etam.
41 PVA 41.
42 Cp ‘It is impossible, it cannot come to pass that a woman could be a Sakka… a Māra… a Brahmā; M iii 65f.; A i 28 etc.
43 Text wrongly reads subāsitaṁ here.
44 Cp Dhnp 378.
45 Reading pādakādi with Se Be for text’s pādakāpādakādi.
46 vipassanā; the four Brahmavāhāras, of which this mettacittam is one, can lead to various degrees of jhāna and thus subsequent rebirth in the Brahmaloka, their cosmic counterpart. See e.g. M ii 78, 207f.; A ii 128ff., 184, iii 224ff.
"Cp D 1235-253.

*yāvad-eva bhavasampatti-attham eva — so Be. So does not separate the compound at all — yāvadeva bhavasampatti-atthameva — whilst our text reads yāva devabhitvo bhavasampatti attham eva in which case we might translate 'only in so far as for the sake of attaining the excellence of deva existence' which probably amounts to much the same thing.

*īthibhāve, literally being a woman.

" So Be."
Chapter III

SMALL CHAPTER
[Cū]avagga]
"Without parting the water." This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a certain peta who had been a hunter.

It is said that across the Ganges to the west\(^1\) of Benares as you go towards\(^2\) the village of Vāsabha there was a hunter in a village named Cundaṭṭhila. He would slay a deer in the forest, eat the best meat which he had cooked over some embers and then bundle the remainder into a basket of leaves and take this on a pole to the village. When the young boys saw him at the village gate they would run up to him with outstretched hands saying, 'Give me some meat! Give me some meat!' Each time he would give them a little meat. Then one day he did not get any meat. \(\{169\}\) He bedecked himself with \textit{uddāla} flowers\(^3\) and taking many also in his hands he went to the village. When the boys saw him at the village gate they ran up to him with outstretched hands saying, 'Give me some meat! Give me some meat!' To each one of them he gave a spray of flowers. In due course he died and arose amongst the petas, naked, deformed and terrible to behold. Not knowing food or drink, not even in his dreams, and with bunches of garlands of \textit{uddāla} blossoms tied on his head, he would go on foot upstream on the Ganges without parting the water, thinking, 'I will get something in the presence of my relatives in Cundaṭṭhila.' Now at that time the chief minister to king Bimbisāra, named Koliya, was returning after pacifying a disturbance on the border; having despatched his accompanying forces of elephants and horses and so on by road, he was himself coming by boat downstream the river Ganges when he saw that peta approaching in that manner and uttered this verse enquiring:

1. 'You move along here without parting the water of the Ganges; you are naked yet your fore-half is unlike that of a peta, adorned, bearing garlands. Where are you going, peta, and where will be your abode?'

1. \textit{Herein without parting} (\textit{abhijamāne}): holding together without parting\(^4\) at the setting down of the foot. \textit{The water of the Ganges} (\textit{vārīmhi Gangōya}): the water of the river Ganges. \textit{Here} (\textit{idha}): in this place. \textit{Yet your fore-half is unlike that of a peta} (\textit{pubbadhāpeto}\(^5\) \textit{vaj}): your front half is unlike that of a peta -- it is like that of a devaputta not belonging to the peta-womb. Why? \textit{Adorned, bearing garlands} (\textit{māliṅhāri alankato}) means the top of your head\(^6\) is adorned, being bedecked with garlands. \textit{Where will be your abode?} (\textit{kāthā vāso bhavissati}): in which village or place will be your dwelling, meaning please tell (me) this.
Now to show what was said at that time by the peta and by Koliya
those rehearsing the texts [170] spoke these verses:

2 "I am going to Cundat̄hila," the peta said, "between the village of
Vāsabha, in the vicinity of Benares."

3 And when he saw him the chief minister, the famous Koliya, gave to
the peta barley meal and food and a pair of yellow (clothes).

4 As his boat stopped he had (them) given to the barber; when they
were given to the barber they were seen immediately (on the body)
of the peta.

5 Thereupon (he became) dressed in fine clothes, adorned, bearing gar-
lands; stood in that position the donation was of benefit to that peta
— therefore one should give out of pity for the petas time and again.

2 Herein to Cundat̄hila (Cundat̄hilam): to the village of that name.
Between the village of Vāsabha, in the vicinity of Benares (antare Vāsabha-
gāmam Bārānasiyā santike): midway between the village of Vāsabha and
Benares. Because of the preposition antara7 this (village of Vāsabha
[Vāsabha-gāmam]) is in the accusative case (but) in the sense of the geni-
tive,8 for the village is in the vicinity of Benares. This is the meaning
here: 'Between (antare) the village of Vāsabha and Benares, not far
from Benares, is a village named Cundat̄hila — I am going to this village.'

3 The famous Koliya (Koliyo iti vissuto): with the well known name10
of Koliya. Barley meal and food: sattubhattai ca=satta c' eva bhattai11
cā (resolution of compound). Gave . . . and a pair of yellow (pitaka ca
yugam adā): gave . . . and one pair of yellow, golden-coloured, clothes. In
case (it should be asked), 'When did he give (this)?', he12 said:

4 As his boat stopped he had (them) given to the barber (nāvāya
tīṭhamānāya kappakassa adāpayi): he halted his moving boat and there he
had handed over to a bath-attendant13 who was a layfollower; when the
pair of clothes was given — this is how it should be construed. Immediately:
ṭhāne=ṭhānaso (alternative grammatical form); at that very moment. They
were seen of the peta (petassa dissatha): they were perceived on the body
of the peta; under and outer clothes came into being for him. For this
reason he12 said:

5 [171] Thereupon dressed in fine clothes, adorned, bearing garlands
(tato svat̄havasano mālādhārā alaikato): dressed in fine clothes and
beautifully adorned with the garlands he wears.14 Stood in that position
the donation was of benefit to that peta (ṭhāne ṣhitassa petassa dakkhinā
upakappatha): that donation was, however, stood in the position of one
worthy of donations since it was of benefit to that peta, since it came
into his use. Therefore one should give out of pity for the petas time and
again (tasma dajjetha petanaṁ anukampya punappunnat) means one should give donations out of pity for the petas, on behalf of the petas, time and again.

Now the chief minister Koliya, feeling compassion for that peta, brought about that form of almsgiving and then came downstream and reached Benares at sunrise. The Lord, who had come through the air for the sake of helping them, was standing on the bank of the Ganges. The chief minister Koliya disembarked from the boat and, overjoyed, invited the Lord saying, 'May the Lord accept out of pity my (invitation), Lord, for today's meal.' The Lord consented with his silence. When he learned of the Lord's acceptance he straightaway had erected on a delightful piece of ground a large pavilion of branches adorned above and on its four sides with numerous pieces of cloth that were decorated and dyed a variety of colours and then offered the Lord the seat he had had prepared therein. The Lord sat on the appointed seat. The chief minister then approached the Lord, honoured him with scents and flowers and so on, saluted him and, seated at one side, reported to the Lord what he had said and the peta's reply as mentioned above. The Lord determined, 'Let the order of monks come (here)!' Immediately he determined this the order of monks, instigated by the majesty of the Buddha, surrounded the King of the Dhamma as did the flock of golden swans (surrund) Dhatarattha, the king of the (golden) swans. The people gathered straightaway thinking, 'There is going to be a great teaching on Dhamma.' When he saw this the chief minister, with devotion in his heart, satisfied the order of monks with the Buddha at its head with drink and with foods both hard and soft. When he had finished his meal the Lord out of pity for the people concentrated his mind on the thought, 'Let those who dwell in the proximity of Benares gather (here)! And all those peoples through the strength of his psychic power gathered (there). He then made great numbers of petas manifest and the people perceived them with their own eyes: some of them wore torn and shredded bits of rag; some had what is shameful covered only by their own hair; whilst some were naked as the day they were born, overcome by hunger and thirst, with shrivelled skin and bodies that were mere bone and roaming about this way and that. The Lord then worked his psychic powers in such a way that they all gathered in the same place and declared to the people the wicked deed they had done.

Those rehearsing the texts spoke these verses elucidating the matter:

6 Petas, some clad in ragged strips of cloth, others clothed by their hair, go off in search of food, going off in all directions.
Some run far away but turn back without having obtained anything, famished, fainting, staggering and sinking to the ground.

And some who fall there, sinking to the ground, tormented as though burnt by fire through not having done any lovely deeds in the past (said),

"In the past we were wicked-natured housewives and mothers of good family; though merit-offerings were at hand we made no refuge for ourselves.

Though there was abundant food and drink — so much so that it was thrown away — yet we gave nothing to those who had reached the summit, to those gone forth.

Desirous of doing what ought not to be done, lazy, desirous of sweet things and gluttonous, we were givers of morsels and lumps and abused the recipients.

Those houses and those servants and those ornaments of ours — these are now enjoyed by others whilst our share is misery."

They will be basket-makers who are held in contempt and insidious chariot-makers; they will be cāṇḍālas suffering great hardship and bath-attendants time and again.

[173] Whatever families are low and suffer great hardship — amongst these alone will they be born, this being the destiny of the selfish.

Whilst those unselfish givers who in the past did lovely deeds will fill heaven and light up Nandana.

When they have amused themselves in the Vejayanta Palace and gratified all their desires they will be born in high-ranking, wealthy families as they fall from there.

In a pinnacled house and in a palace, on a couch strewn with long woollen fleeces, with their limbs fanned by those holding peacock (fans), to (such) a family they are born, knowing all life's comforts.

They travel from lap to lap adorned, bearing garlands; nurses attend them morning and evening, striving after their comfort.

This carefree, charming Nandana, great grove of the Thirty, is alone for those who have done meritorious deeds, not for those who have not done meritorious deeds.

For those who have not done meritorious deeds there is happiness neither here nor hereafter, whereas for those who have done meritorious deeds there is happiness right here as well as hereafter.

Many a skilled deed is to be done of those desiring their companionship for those who do meritorious deeds are provided with possessions and rejoice in heaven."
Herein clad in ragged strips of cloth (sāhundavāsino): clothed\textsuperscript{33} in torn and shredded bits of rag. Some: eke=ekacce (alternative grammatical form). Clothed by their hair (kesanivāsino): had what is shameful covered only by their hair. Go in search of food (bhattāya gacchanti): whatever place they come to they go off in search of fodder thinking, ‘Perhaps when we have gone from here we might get here or there some food that has been thrown away or vomited, or the impurities that accompanied childbirth and so on. Going off in all directions (pakkamanti diso disā)y: going off from one direction to another, to a place at an interval of countless yojanas.

Far away (dūre): to a far away place. Some (eke): some petas. Run (padhāvītvā): run in search of fodder. [174] But turn back without having obtained anything (aladdhā ca nivattare): but turn back without having obtained either fodder or drink. Fainting (ponsucchitā): they are in a faint condition due to the misery of hunger and thirst and so on. Staggering (bhantā): reeling about. Sinking to the ground (bhūmiyāḥ paṭisumbhittā): they get up in that same faint state and fall to the earth withered up\textsuperscript{34} like cast out lumps of clay.

There (tattha): the place to which they have gone. Sinking to the ground (bhūmiyāḥ paṭisumbhittā): they fall to the ground as though falling down a precipice, being unable to stand on account of the misery of hunger and so on; alternatively the meaning is that they lose hope through their failure to obtain any fodder and so on there, at the place to which they have gone, and they fall (paṭisumbhittā) to the ground as though someone opposite (paṭumukham) had knocked them down (summhitā),\textsuperscript{35} struck them down. Through not having done any lovely deeds in the past (pubbe akatakalayātā): through not having done any skilled deeds in the previous life. Tormented as though burnt by fire (aggidaṭṭhā va ātape): as though burnt by fire at some place tormented by the summer sun,\textsuperscript{36} meaning they undergo great misery being burnt by the fire of hunger and thirst.

In the past (pubbe): in a past life. Wicked-natured (pāpadhammā): of a despicable character through being envious and mean. Housewives (gharaṇī): mistresses of the house. Mothers of good family (kulaṃtārā): mothers of boys of good family, or mothers of men of good family. Refuge (dīpan): support, meaning meritorious deeds. They are called a support through being a support for beings in the happy states.\textsuperscript{37} We made no: nākamha=na karimha (alternative grammatical form).

Abundant (pahūtām): much. Food and drink: annapānāṁ pī=annaṁ ca pāṇaṁ ca (resolution of compound). So much so that it was thrown away (api ssu avākirtvati): ssu (untranslated) is a mere particle; so much so
that it was thrown away (api avakiriyati): even to the extent that it was thrown away, that it was discarded. To those who had reached the summit (sammagkata): to those who had rightly trodden, to those who had rightly fared (sammāpatispanne=sammāpatispannāya); to those gone forth: pabbajite=pabbajitāya — this is the locative case in a dative construction; or, alternatively (if really locative), the meaning is ‘Though those who had reached the summit, those gone forth, were at hand, were available.’ Yet we gave nothing (na ka kiñci adamhase): overcome with remorse they say that they gave not even so much as one merit-offering.

11 Desirous of doing what ought not to be done (akammakāma): (being) desirous of doing what ought not to be done is desiring (to do) unskilled deeds that should not be done by the virtuous: (being) desirous of doing what ought to be done is desiring (to do) skilled deeds that should be done by the virtuous. Desirous of doing what ought not to be done is not (being) desirous of what ought to be done, [175] meaning lacking proper effort as regards skilled states. Lazy (alasa): indolent, lacking energy in the pursuit of skilled states. Desirous of sweet things (sādhukāma): fond of pleasant and sweet things. Gluttonous (mahagghāsā): eating a lot. Both (expressions) indicate that though they obtained food both excellent and sweet they gave nothing to those in need and they themselves alone enjoyed it. We were givers of morsels and lumps (ālopepiṇḍedātāro): we were those who give lumps of food no bigger than a morsel. The recipients (pāṭiggāhe): those receiving it. Abused (paribhāsinhase): we spoke showing contempt, meaning we disparaged and derided.

12 Those houses (te gharā): where formerly we acted possessively thinking, ‘This house is ours’; those houses continue to stand just the same but they are now of no benefit to us whatsoever — this is the meaning. And those servants and those ornaments of ours (tā ca dāsiyo tān’ evabharaṇaṁ): just the same is to be applied here too. Herein of ours: no=amhākena (alternative grammatical form); these (te): these houses and so on; are now enjoyed by others (aṁne paricārenti): means being made use of by way of enjoyment and so on. Whilst our share is misery (mayaṁ dukkhasa bhāgino): they speak reproaching themselves saying, ‘Formerly we were entirely given to the pursuit of playthings, being unaware that property had to be left behind when going (on to a new existence and that we were) to do that which would follow us in the next world; and now our share is this misery of hunger and thirst and so on.’ Now, since beings, though arising amongst human beings after falling from the peta-womb are, as a rule, of low birth and lead a life of great hardship due to the residual result of that same deed, the two verses beginning: ‘(They will be) basket-makers’ were therefore said to illustrate this point.
Herein basket-makers who (vaṁtī vā): basket-makers by birth, meaning they will be workers in bamboo, workers in reeds. The word 'who' (vā) has the sense of a relative pronoun. Are held in contempt (avaṅñā): should be held in contempt, that is to say, contemptible; an alternative reading is despicable (vambhānaṁ), meaning those who are oppressed by others. Chariot-makers (rathākārt): harness-makers. Insidious (dubbhīkā): insidious to their friends, who oppress their friends. Caṇḍālas (caṇḍālī): caṇḍīlas by birth. Suffering great hardship (kapaṇā): poor, [176] who have reached an extremely pitiful state. Bath-attendants (nahāṁminti): barbers by birth; they will be (such) time and again in all places — this is how it should be construed; that is to say, they will arise in low families in successive (births).

Amongst these alone will they be born (tesaṁ tēsveva jāyantī): whatever other families, such as hunters and refuse-clearers and so on, that suffer great hardship and are extremely despised, destinies of utmost misery, it is amongst these same low families that those who have arisen amongst the petas due to the stain of selfishness arise when they fall from there. For this reason he said, 'This being the destiny of the selfish.' The destiny of those who had not done meritorious deeds having thus been shown, the seven verses (beginning:) 'Whilst those unselfish givers who in the past did lovely deeds' were said to show the destiny of those who had done meritorious deeds."

Herein will fill heaven (saggaṁ te paripūrenti): those givers who were without envy, who were without the stain of selfishness, who in the past, in their previous birth, did lovely deeds, took delight in meritorious deeds such as giving and so forth, will fill, will make full, heaven, the devaloka, with the very excellence of their beauty and with the excellence of their retinue. And light up Nandana (obhāsentī ca Nandanaṁ): yet they do not quite fill it entirely for there is the wish-granting tree and so on also shining with their natural radiance alone; but they outshine and overpower this by the brightness of their clothes and ornaments and by the radiance of their own bodies and light up the Nandana Grove.

Gratified all their desires (kāmakāmīno): enjoyed themselves to their hearts' content amidst sense pleasures of their own choosing. In high-ranking families (uccākulesu): in high ranking families such as kṣatriya families and so on. Wealthy (sabhāgesu): of great prosperity. As they fall from there (tato cutā): as they fall from there, from that devaloka.

In a pinnacled house and in a palace (kūṭāgāre ca pāśūde): both in a pinnacled house and in a palace. With their limbs fanned (vijitaṁgā): with their bodies being fanned. By those holding peacock (morahatthehi): by those holding fans adorned with peacock tail feathers. Knowing all
life's comforts (yasassino): possessing retinues, they amuse themselves — this is the meaning.

18 They travel from lap to lap (āṅkato aikam gucchanti): even in their childhood they travel just from the site of one lap to that of another of their relatives and nurses, not on the surface of the ground — this is the meaning. Attend them (upatiṭṭhati): take care of them. Striving after their comfort (sukhesino): wishing for their comfort; [177] they attend them, sheltering them from the slightest discomfort, wondering, "Is it (too) cold? Or is it (too) hot?" — this is the meaning.

19 Not for those who have not done meritorious deeds (nay idan akatapuṭṭānaṃ): lacking things causing sorrow, this carefree, charming, delightful Nandana Grove, great grove, great park of the Thirty, of the devas of the Thirty-three, is constantly for those who have done meritorious deeds, not for those who have not done meritorious deeds, meaning it is not able to be obtained by them.

20 Here (idha): this is said with reference to the fact that it is especially in this world of men that meritorious deeds can be performed; or, alternatively, here (idha): in this same life. Hereafter (parattha): in the next world.

21 Their (tesām): with the aforementioned devas. Of those desiring companionship (sahavyakāmānaṃ): by those wishing to be together (with them). Are provided with possessions (bhogasamāghino): are endowed with possessions, meaning they rejoice at their possession of the five heavenly sense pleasures.

The rest is quite self-evident.

When those petas had thus generally made known the destiny of the deeds done by them and the destiny of meritorious deeds, the Lord taught Dhamma in detail, suitting the dispositions of the people gathered there, headed by the special adviser Koliya whose heart had been agitated thereby. At the end of this teaching insight into the Dhamma arose to eighty-four thousand beings.

1 aparadisābhāge: this sense of aparā is not listed by the PED.
2 atikkamitvā: ati- must here have the sense of abhi- if there is to be no contradiction between this passage and v 2 and its cty below.
3 uddākapupphānaṃ, Cassia fistula; cp VvA 43, 197.
4 Reading abhijamāne sanghāte with Se Be for text's abhijassamānasanghāte.
5 Reading pubbadhapeto with Se Be and verse for text's pubbadhapetor; it is hard to see how Gehman could have rendered this 'as though free from your former lot' given the cty.
6 Reading dānakatasaggo with Se Be for text's sīsattā.
7 It seems Dhammadāla was reading antasā Vāsabhagāmaṇa in the verse rather than
antare Vāsabhagānam that is now the reading of all texts; it is possible that the present reading has been restored from the subsequent cty.

8 Reading sāmyatthā with Se Be for text's sāmyatthā.

9 The text is badly punctuated and should be amended to read with Se Be as follows: . . . so gāmo ti; ayam h'etthā atho: antare Vāsabhagānamma. . . .

10 Reading pākāsitanāmo with Se Be for text's pākāsanañāno.

11 Text mis-spells bhattuñh here.

12 So all texts but earlier it was said that these verses were spoken by those rehearsing the texts.

13 Cp PvA 127.

14 Following the preferable punctuation of Be text should be amended by closing PvA 170 with Tenāha: and then starting a new paragraph on PvA 171 with the first line of verse 5, omitting the subsequent ti immediately before mālabharāṇehi.

15 Cp PvA 196 for what this involves.

16 Reading rājām with Se Be for text's rājānam.


18 paṭṭhekhāditaṃkopaññā; for kopāññā see note at Pāv A 88 above.

19 yathā jātarūpa, literally a form (or appearance) just like that possessed at birth. At Vism xvii 153f. Buddhaghosa asserts that petas may come into being through any of the four sorts of generation, viz egg-born, womb-born, moisture-born and of spontaneous arising (opāpātaka) (cp M i 73) but gives no examples of, say, petas born from eggs. More often, however, it has been supposed that petas are always of spontaneous arising and whilst these stories give no details of how the petas come into existence it seems to be assumed that they merely arise in the form required by their past deeds, no mention ever being made of their having to wait for adulthood and so forth. The odd references to petas giving birth to children whom they subsequently devour need not entail that the children are themselves womb-born petas.

20 Reading annaṭānam pi api su with Se Be for text's annaṭānam hi api su.

21 Reading sammaggate with Se Be for text's samaggate; this is an epithet of the arahant — see Dial i 73 n. 2; cp S i 76, li 87. The denial that there are such individuals amounts to wrong view — e.g. D i 55 = A iv 226 = v 265 — whilst its assertion to mundane (lokiya) right view — e.g. M i 72; cp A i 269.

22 Reading sādakāmā with Se Be for text's sādakāmā.

23 dārā, both nominative and accusative plural. The preceding verse would suggest that it were accusative since they abused griśas and recipients alike but the cty below takes it nominative with the recipients (paṭṭigahe) alone as objects of the abuse.

24 Reading pariṭārenti with Be for text's pariṭārenti; cp II 311 and IV 141.

25 Reading ven with Se Be for text's venim; cp PED sv venim.

26 candāli, the issue of the most unspeakable form of mixed marriage — female brahmin and śūdra or paścimma male.

27 Gehman’s adoption of vīl is unnecessary. Se Be both read Vejaya, name of Sakka’s famous palace in the Nandana Grove of the Thirty-three for a description of which see the Cūḷanāha Sākhuyasutta (M-37) in which Sakka shows Mogallāna round it (M i 252-254). It was not Sakka’s alone, however, but ‘arose for the use of the multitude’ (DhpA 1273; cp DĀ 698 and DPPN ii 915).

28 Reading goṇaṅkāthate with Se Be for text’s goṇaṅkāthāte; Gehman p. 209 n. 2 mis-spells goṇaṅkāthate.

29 Reading viṇitaṅgā with Se (be blitaṅgā) for text’s vijinga; cp PED sv vijjita.}

30 Reading dhatiyo with Se Be for text’s dhatiyo.

31 The grove in the Thirty-three where the devas enjoy themselves. At J i 49 it is said that there is such a grove in all devalokas. It was also to the Nandana Grove that Sakka would send those devas who were about to fall and therethrough
dissolve like snow or go out like a flame and arise elsewhere — cp KS 1 9 n. 1; M 1 505; S v 342; A i 40.
33 This verse appears without a number in the text.
33 Reading māna with Se Be for text’s mānaṁ.
34 Reading vissatisvā with Be (Se vissatisvā) for text’s vissatisvā.
35 Quasi-etymology.
36 Cp PVA 37.
37 Reading sugataṁ partiṣṭha bhāyato with Se Be for text’s sugatisupapatiṣṭhaṁbhāyato.
38 All texts disagree here. Se reads api avakīrtyati chāḍaṇyati and Be api avakīrtyati chāḍaṇyati. I follow our text’s api avakīrtyati yadi pi avakīrtyati chāḍaṇyati.
39 Reading sammā gate with Se Be for text’s samāga te.
40 Reading sammaggate with Se Be and verse for text’s sammagge.
41 The city, is a little obscure here. Sammaggate and pabbajite of the verse are both locative. Having supplied two synonyms in the locative case — sammā gate and sammāpāṭipanne — for sammaggate, Dhammapāla then repeats the second of these in its dative form — sammāpāṭipannāya — and continues by glossing pabbajite with its dative form of pabbajitāya. Only then does he explain his reason, adding as an alternative what the phrase would mean if it were, after all, intended to be taken in the locative sense.
42 Reading kusitā with Se Be for text’s kusitā.
43 Reading patippagañhane with Se Be for text’s patippagañhake patippagañhake.
44 Reading parabhavan karotā with Se Be for text’s parabhāsam karotā.
45 Reading yathā maṇḍ pubbe amhākan gharan ti mamakatam akārima tāṇi gharānā yathāvhitān with Se Be for text’s tāṇi gehāni yathā maṇḍ pubbe amhākan ti mamakatam akārima tāṇi gharānā yathāvhitāni.
46 Reading aṇṇe paricārenti ti with Be for text’s Se Aṇṇe ti apare, Pāṭhārenti ti paricārenti and in accordance with the vīl adopted in the verse.
47 Cp PVA 87.
48 Reading vipākāvasesana with Se Be for text’s vipākāva vasesana; see S i 91-93 for another example of the residual result of a deed.
49 So Se Be for text’s vambhāpa.
50 Literally leather-workers.
51 This refers to the high ridged, overhanging, barrel-vaulted roof characteristic of ancient India — A. K. Warder, Introduction to Pāli, London 1963, p. 78 n. 2; cp also III 211 and its city.
52 Reading vijjamatānadehā with Se (Be bijjya-) for text’s vijjamānadehā; cp PED sv vijjati.
53 Reading tidāsānaṁ with Se Be for text’s tidāsānaṁ.

III.2 EXPOSITION OF THE SĀNUVĀSIN PETA STORY
[Sānuvāsipetakavatthuvaṇṇanā]

‘The elder of the city of Kunḍi.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning some peta-relatives of the venerable elder of Sānuvāsin.

It is said that long ago in Benares the son of king Kitava was returning
after sporting at some amusement in the park when he saw the Pacceka-buddha Sunettha leaving the city after going about in search of alms. Drunk with the pride of authority and depraved in mind he thought, 'How dare that shaveling go by without paying me the añjali salute!' [178] He alighted from the elephant's back and, as he addressed him saying, 'Did you get any almsfood, I wonder?', he snatched his bowl from his hand, threw it on the ground and broke it. Then mocking him as he (stood) looking on with devotion in his heart, with eyes downcast, gentle, at ease and diffusing compassion, unperturbed through having attained to Suchness under all circumstances, he went away saying with a malevolence of mind due to his misplaced malice, 'What! Don't you know that I am the son of king Kitava? What can you do to me, just looking on (like that)?' But just as he was going away there arose a powerful heat about his body resembling the heat of hell fire. With his body overcome by that great torment, overcome by feelings of extremely intense misery, he died and arose in the Great Hell of Avīci. There he was boiled for eighty-four thousand years as he stood and turned about in many ways - on his right side, on his left side, lying face upwards and face downwards. When he fell from there he underwent the misery of hunger and thirst and so on for an unlimited time amidst the petas. When he fell from there he arose in a village of fishermen near the city of Kūndi during this Buddha-period. There arose to him the faculty of remembering former lives. Recollecting by this means the misery he had formerly undergone in the past he would not go, through a fear of wicked deeds, to catch fish with his relatives, even though he was of age. As they went he would hide, being unwilling to slaughter fish, whilst if he went he would ruin the nets or take the living fish and let them loose in the water. His relatives, disapproving of his actions, threw him out of their home. One brother of his, however, held him in affection in his heart. Now at that time the venerable Ānanda was staying on Mount Sānūvāsin close by to the city of Kūndi and that fisherman's son who had been rejected by his relatives, roaming about this way and that, reached that place and approached the elder at the moment he was eating. When the elder questioned him he realised that he was in need of food and gave him a meal and, when the meal was over [179] he learned of the whole issue. When he knew that, just by means of a talk on Dhamma he had devotion in his heart (he asked), 'Do you wish to go forth, my friend?' (to which he replied), 'Yes, sir, I wish to go forth.' When the elder had him go forth he went, together with him, into the presence of the Lord. The Teacher then said to him, 'Ānanda, you should have pity on this novice.' Since he had not done skilled deeds he received little (in the way of alms) so the Teacher, helping him, urged him to fill the
water-pots for the use of the monks. When they saw this the layfollowers provided him with a constant and plentiful supply of food. In due course he received ordination and attained arahantship and, after becoming an elder, dwelt on Mount Sānuvāsin together with twelve monks. As many as five hundred of his relatives, however, through the non-accumulation of skilled states and the accumulation of wicked states such as selfishness and so on, died and arose amongst the petas. His mother and father, however, would not approach him since they were embarrassed at the thought, ‘This is the one we formerly cast out of our home’, and sent his brother who had held him in affection. He revealed himself at the time the elder entered the village in search of alms, kneeling with his right knee on the ground and making the añjali salute, and spoke the verses beginning: ‘Your mother and your father, sir’. However, the five verses beginning: ‘The elder of the city of Kuṇḍi’ and so on were inserted by those making a recension of the Dhamma with the aim of showing their context. 

1 'The elder of the city of Kuṇḍi who dwelt upon Sānuvāsin, Pottāpāda by name, was a recluse with developed faculties.

2 His mother, father and brother had gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done wicked deeds they had gone from here to the world of the petas.

3 Gone to a miserable existence, needle-afflicted, weary, naked and emaciated; terrified, in great terror and bloody-handed, they would not reveal (themselves).

4 [180] His brother, transfixed, naked, alone on a single track, bent on all fours, revealed himself to the elder.

5 But the elder paid no attention and passed by in silence, so he informed the elder, saying, “I am your brother, come as a peta; your mother and your father, sir, have gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done wicked deeds they have gone from here to the world of the petas.

6 Gone to a miserable existence, needle-afflicted, weary, naked and emaciated; terrified, in great terror and bloody-handed, they will not reveal (themselves).

7 You are compassionate; please have pity — when you have given make that over to us (for it is) by means of alms given by you that the bloody-handed are sustained.’’

1 Herein the elder of the city of Kuṇḍi (Kuṇḍinagariyo therō), the elder who was born and grew up in the city of that name. An alternative reading is Kuṇḍikanāgaro therō but it means the same. Who dwelt upon Sānuvāsin (Sānuvāsinivāsino): who dwelt upon Mount Sānuvāsin.
Potṭhapāda by name (Potṭhapādo ti nāmena): was known by the name of Potṭhapāda. Was a recluse (samaṇo): had quieted (all) wickedness. With developed faculties (bhāvavitidriyo): with the faculties of faith and so on developed through cultivation of the ariyan path, meaning an arahant.

2 His (tassa): that Sānuvāsin elder’s. Had gone to a miserable existence (duggatā): had gone to a state of misery.

3 Needle-affected (sūcik’ta): afflicted with putrid, rough bodies; an alternative reading is ‘needle-gone’ (sūcigatā). They are afflicted, oppressed, by hunger and thirst which have acquired the name ‘the needle’ (sūcikā) in the sense that they are piercing. Some read needle-throated (sūcikantha), meaning the opening of their mouths are like the eyes of needles. Weary (kilantā): weary in mind and body. Naked (naggino): unclothed, naked in appearance. Emaciated (kisā): with emaciated bodies since they have bodies that are mere skin and bone. Terrified (uttasanta): they become terrified due to a dread of reproach thinking, ‘This recluse was our son.’ In great terror (mahātāsā): they are filled with great fear on account of the deeds done formerly by them. Would not reveal (na dassenti): would not reveal themselves, would not go and confront him. Bloody-handed (kurūrino): acting cruelly.

4 His brother (tassa bhātā): the Sānuvāsin elder’s brother. Transfixed: vitaritvā-vitiṣṇo (alternative grammatical form), meaning with fear and trembling at the dread of reproach. An alternative reading is hastened (vituritvā): was in haste, that is to say, hastening. On a single track (ekapathe): on a road of single file. Alone (ekako): alone, unaccompanied. Bent on all fours (catukunḍika bhavitvāna): he moves himself about with his four limbs bent—(this is) bent on all fours; resting and going about on two hands and on two knees, meaning having become as such. He acted in this manner so that what is shameful should be covered from the front. Revealed himself to the elder (therassa dassayā: tūmaṇ): had himself be visible, let himself be visible, to the elder.

5 Paid no attention (amanasikatvā): paid no attention (amanasikaritvā, alternative grammatical form), took no notice, as to who he might be. So he (so ca): so the peta. I am your brother come as a peta (bhātā petāgato aham): he informed the elder saying, ‘I was your brother in a past existence; now I have come here as a peta’—this is how it should be construed. The three verses beginning: ‘(Your) mother and (your) father’ were said to show the manner in which he informed him of this.

6 Herein your mother and your father: mātā pitā ca tē tavā mātā pitā ca (alternative grammatical form).

7 Please have pity (anukampassu): please help (us), please be kind. Make that over (anvädisāhi): assign that. To us: no-amhākam (alternative

(Those rehearsing the Dhamma) then uttered these verses to show the line of action taken by the elder when he heard this:

9 'When the elder and the twelve other monks had been in search of alms they gathered at the same place with the purpose of sharing the meal.'

10 The elder said to them all, "Give to me as has been received; I will convert it into a meal for the Saṅgha out of pity for my relatives."

11 [182] They handed it over to the elder and the elder invited the Saṅgha. When he had given the elder made it over to his mother, father and brother saying, "Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!"

12 Immediately he dedicated this food came into being — clean, choice, well-prepared and curried with many flavours, whereupon his brother had himself be visible, handsome, strong and happy, saying, "Abundant (is this) food, sir, but behold we are still naked. Please exert yourself, sir, in such a manner that we might obtain clothes."

13 The elder gathered tatters from the rubbish heap. When he had made the rags into a garment he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters. When he had given the elder made it over to his mother, father and brother saying, "Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!"

14 Immediately he dedicated this clothes came into being, whereupon (his brother), dressed in fine clothes, revealed himself to the elder, saying,

15 "As many clothes as were in the whole of king Nanda's realm — still more than that, sir, are our clothes and coverings.

16 Of silk and wool, linen and cotton. Many and costly are they — they even hang down from the sky.

17 And we just put on whichever takes our fancy. Please exert yourself, sir, in such a manner that we might obtain a home."

18 [183] When the elder had built a hut of leaves he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters. When he had given the elder made it over to his mother, father and brother saying, "Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!"

19 Immediately he dedicated this houses came into being — pinnacled-house residences that are divided into equal portions.

20 "The like of such houses as ours here are not found amongst men; the houses such as ours here are like those found amongst the devas;
Dazzling, they shine forth thoroughly the four directions. Please exert yourself, sir, in such a manner that we might obtain water.”

When the elder had filled a water-pot he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters. When he had given the elder made it over to his mother, father and brother saying, “Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!”

Immediately he dedicated this water came into being – deep, four-cornered and well laid out lotus ponds.

With clear water and beautiful banks, cool and fragrant, covered with lotuses and water lilies, the water full of lotus filaments.

When they had bathed and drunk in them they appeared to the elder, saying, “Abundant (is this) water, sir, but our feet are painfully cracked.

Roaming about we limp on gravel and the thorny kusa grass. Please exert yourself, sir, in such a manner that we might obtain a vehicle.”

When the elder had obtained a sandal he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters. When he had given the elder made it over to his mother, father and brother saying, “Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!”

Immediately he dedicated this the petas came by carriage, saying, “You have shown pity, sir, by this food and clothing.

[184] This house and gift of water — by both these and by this gift of a vehicle. We, sir, have come to salute the compassionate sage for the world.”

Herein when the elder had been in search of alms (thero carītvā pāṇīyaya): when the elder had gone about on his almsround.

And the twelve other monks (bhikkhū aññe ca dvādasā): and the twelve other monks who were dwelling with the elder gathered together at the same place. If (it should be asked:) ‘With what purpose?’, with the purpose of sharing the meal (bhattavissaggakāraṇā): with the purpose of taking their meal, for the sake of (eating) the food.

To them (te): to those monks. As has been received (yathā laddham): whatever has been received. Give: dadātha=detha (alternative grammatical form).

They handed over (nyātayāṃsu): they gave. Invited the Saṅgha (saṅghāṃ nimantayi): invited the twelve monks to give that food by way of specifying it to be for the Saṅgha. Made over (anvādisi): assigned; to show to whom he dedicated it on that occasion, To his mother, father and brother saying, “Let this be for my relatives! May my relatives be happy!” was said.
12. Immediately he dedicated this: 
samanantarāmuddīṭṭha
samanantaram eva (resolution of compound). Food came into being (bhojanam upapajjatha): food came into being for those petas. Of what sort? They said, ‘Clean’ and so on. Herein curried with many flavours (aneykarasavyañjanañ): prepared with curries of a variety of flavours; or, alternatively, of many flavours and of many curries. Whereupon (tāto): after receiving the food. His brother had himself be visible (uddassay bhātā): the peta who had been his brother revealed himself to the elder. Handsome, strong and happy (vaṇṇavā balavā sukhī): by means of receiving that food in that way he straightway became endowed with beauty, endowed with strength and happy.

13. Abundant food, sir (pahūtaṃ bhojanaṃ bhante): through the majesty of your gift, sir, abundant, plentiful food has been received by us. But behold we are still naked (passa naggāmhasa): observe, however, that we are still naked. Therefore please exert yourself, sir, please take it upon yourself, to act in such a manner that we might obtain clothes (vaihā vaṭṭhaṇ labhāmhasa): by taking it upon yourself to act in such a way that we might all obtain clothes, meanirg please endeavour in this manner.

14. From the rubbish heap (sāṅkāraṇaṇa): from this and that dust heap. Gathered (uccinirvāna): collected by way of seeking out. Tatters (nanteke): discarded bits of cloth that are torn at the edges; they are called 'rags' since they are in bits. Now the elder made a robe with these and gave it to the Saṅgha. For this reason they said, ‘When he had made the rags into a garment he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters.’ Herein he gave it to the Saṅgha of the four quarters (saṅhe caṇuddise adā): he gave it to the current order of monks of the four quarters. This is the locative case with the sense of the dative.

15. Dressed in fine clothes (suvatthavasana): dressed in beautiful clothes. Revealed himself to the elder: therassa dassayī tūnam=therassa attānam dassayī dassesi (alternative grammatical forms), he became manifest.

17. They are ‘clothes’ (paṭicchadā) since in this case he clothes himself (paṭicchādayatī) (with them).

21. Pinnacled-house residences (kūṭāgaranivesana): those that are pinnacled houses and houses other than these that are known as residences; this is given with a distortion of gender. Divided (vibhātā): divided into shapes that are regular, rectangular, long, circular and so on. Into equal portions (bhāgaso mitā): into measured portions.

22. Ours: no=amhākan (alternative grammatical form). Here (idha): in this world of the petas. Amongst the devas (api dibbesu): api (untranslated)
is a mere particle; in the realms of the devas, meaning in the devalokas.\footnote{This story may be compared with the version appearing at J 6 1941.}

24 Water-pot (karakaṇḍa): a regulation water-pot.\footnote{Reading caritva nagarato with Se Be for text's caritvamā gharato.} Filled (pūreṣṭvā): filled with water.

26 The water full of lotus filaments (vārīkiṇḍjakkapūrīti): full in that the top of the water is covered all over with loads of hairy filaments of lotuses and water lilies and so on.\footnote{Reading karunāvipphārasommanassanayananipātitaṣṭapannicittam with Se Be for text's karunāvipphārasommanassanipātitaṭapannacittam (Be-nipāta-).}

27 Are cracked (phalanti): they blossom out, meaning the edges of their heels are split open.

28 Roaming about (āhiṇḍamāna): wandering about. We limp (khaṇḍama): [186] we go about limping. On gravel and the thorny kusa grass (sakkhare kusakaniṭṭhake): on pieces of ground that are full of gravel and the thorny kusa grass, meaning treading upon gravel and the thorny kusa grass. A vehicle (yānāṃ): any vehicle such as a carriage or litter and so on.

29 A sandal (sipāṭikam): a single-soled sandal.

30 Came by carriage: rathena-m-aśamunī=rathena āgacchinsu (alternative grammatical form); (the words) are euphonically connected by the syllable ma.

31 Both (ubhayam): by both gifts — by that gift of the four requisites of food and so on and by this same gift of a vehicle. The gift of medicines is also included in this gift of water here. The rest is quite self-evident\footnote{Sādubhajappattiya.} since it has already been given above.

The elder raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need saying, ‘Just like these here, so too in your immediately preceding existence were you a peta who underwent great misery’, and, when begged by the elder, related the Thread Peta Story\footnote{Cp IV 78.} and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. When they heard this the people, full of agitation, became given to meritorious deeds such as the virtue of almsgiving and so on.

\footnote{Cp IV 78.}
"Not, as Gehman suggests, 'they did not appear ruthless', as the city makes clear.

"Not, as Gehman suggests, 'like a waterpot'.

"Reading dassayi with Se Be for text's dassayi.

"Se reads just the opposite here - there is no manasikatva - suggesting that the elder did pay attention."

"An edifying etymology of sana, reflex; see also Dhp 265 and DhpA iii 84.

"All readings throughout this passage differ widely and are somewhat uncertain. I have selected those that seemed to make the most sense.

"Reading ajiṭṭa as recommended by PED sv for text's aṭṭhikā; Be reads aṭṭakā and So aṭṭikā.

"puṇā, so text and Be; Se reads sūcina."

"Reading lūkhagattā with Be for text's lūkhavatādāna; Se reads lūkhavatthādāna, presumably with rough clothes and so on, though earlier they were said to be naked, a fact also confirmed further on.

"Se reads sūcigattā, Be omits; the meaning is unclear.

"Reading aṭṭa pāḷitā with Be for text's ajjhāpāḷitā; Se reads aṭṭā pāḷitā.

"vijhanatthana, Be omits.

"All texts.

"ottappena; for a discussion of this term see Buddhist Psych. Ethics p. 20 n. 1.

"Reading viturīvā ti va pāṭha with Be Be for text's viturivā ti vā.

"Reading kunḍetii with Se Be for text's kunḍo ti.

"Reading titṭhanto ca with Be (Se titṭhanto ti) for text's ti ca.

"theraattām uḍḍasai yuddesā; so text and Se. Be has... uddyasai dassati.

"CPD sv ud-dasseti recommends reading... uddyasai yuddesā.

"Reading Anvādisihi ti ālisa. No ti amhakaṃ with Se Be for text's Anvādisihi no ti ālisa no ti amhakaṃ.

"Reading yathā pāṭippajjī taṁ dassetum with Se Be for text's gāthā pāṭippajjī. Taṁ dassetum...

"Reading bhavattasaggagārānaḥ with Se Be for text's -vissatta; cp PED sv bhatta.

"sahabhāttaṁ karissāmi; see Vin i 58 where this is distinguished from a meal for a special person, meals made from scraps and those got by invitation and so on; cp PVA 81 and v 14 below. It would seem to be another case of making a gift saṅghika.

"Reading uḍḍassati with Be for text's uḍḍasati; Se reads uḍḍasaiy.

"Parakkāma, not exert desire, as Gehman suggests, but from para + √kram; cp PED sv.

"Reading khomakappāsiṇī with Se Be and II 117 for text's-kappāsiyiṇī.

"Reading p'ākāse with Se Be and II 118 for text's c'ākāse.

"Reading kūṭāgāranivesanā with Se Be for text's kūṭāgāra nivesanā.

"Reading suminmita with Se Be and II 119 for text's sanimmitā.

"Poā cynosurodes.

"Reading sipāṭikā with Se Be for text's sipāṭikā; see PED sv sipāṭikā which misquotes the city here and which should be amended to read ekapatalam upāhanam.

"Reading pāṇivālāna with Be and city below for text's pāṇadānena.

"Reading ther croppināpasacārikāya carīvā with Se Be for text's pinḍapātacārikāya.

"Reading Anvādisi ti ālisa; tattha... with Se Be for text's Anvādisi ti tattha...

"So Se Be and PVA 50 for text's uddissa samanantaram eva ca.

"All texts read āha, he said, here.

"Cp CPD sv āghata and Vin i 305, ii 147, 164; I i 93.

"Sangha.

"Cp PVA 174.

"Reading Paṭicchādayati ethā ti paṭicchadā with Se Be for text's Paṭicchadā ti paṭicchādayati; cp city at PVA 76. The usual meaning of these words is covering, concealing etc.

"Masculine/feminine plural for neuter plural.
III.3] RATHAKĀRA

"Reading dibbesu bhavanesu devalokesu ti attho with Se for text's dibbesu ti etesu devalokesu ti attho; Be reads devalokesu ti attho alone.

"dhammakarakaṃ, the regulation water-pot issued to monks provided with a strainer (parissāvane) to prevent injury to living things; see Vīn. 1 209, II 118f., 177, 302.

"Reading uttānaṃ with Se Be for text's vuttānaṃ.

"Il 11.

III.3 EXPOSITION OF THE RATHAKĀRA PETA STORY
(Rathakārapetavatthuvaṇṇanā)

'Beryl-pillared, gleaming, radiant.' This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning a certain petī.

It is said that long ago, at the time of Lord Kassapa, there was a certain woman who was endowed with good conduct and who found faith in the Teaching through association with a lovely friend.¹ She built a dwelling that was extremely lovely to behold being well apportioned with decorated walls, pillars, stairways and ground floor.² She had the monks be seated there, waited upon them with the choicest food and presented it to the order of monks. She died in due course and, due to a different, wicked deed she had performed, arose as a vimāṇapetī near lake Rathakāra³ on the Himālaya, the king of mountains. Through the power of her meritorious deed of her gift of that dwelling to the Saṅgha there arose, amidst a lotus pond and embellished like the Nandana Grove, a lofty mansion made entirely of jewels and on all sides extremely charming, captivating and delightful, [187] whilst she herself was of a golden complexion, beautiful, lovely to behold and charming. There she dwelt, enjoying heavenly excellence, but in the absence of any men. Discontent arose to her at dwelling without men for that long time. She became dissatisfied and thinking, 'This will do the trick!', she lowered some ripe heavenly mangoes into the river. Everything is to be understood in the same manner as was handed down in the Kaṇṭamunḍa Peta Story.⁴ Here, however, a young man who was a resident of Benares saw one of those mango fruits in the Ganges. In due course he set out looking for where it had come from, saw that river⁵ and by following this came to her dwelling place. When she saw him she led him to her dwelling place and, making him welcome, sat down. When he saw the excellence of her dwelling place he spoke these verses enquiring (about it):


¹
²
³
⁴
⁵
1 'Beryl-pillared, gleaming, radiant and possessing countless paintings is the mansion to which you have ascended; and there you rest, O devi of great majesty, like the moon in mid-career on the fifteenth day.'

2 And your complexion resembles molten gold, your glowing appearance is exceedingly lovely to behold, but you are seated alone on your excellent couch beyond compare; (it would seem) you have no husband.

3 And you have on all sides these lotus ponds, abundant in flowers, with many lotuses and entirely spread with gold dust, mud and duckweed not being known there.

4 These swans, delightful and lovely to behold, glide about on the water at all times and, flocking together, they all beautifully sing out with full voice like the sound of kettle-drums.

5 Dazzling, resplendent in your glory, you rest reclining in your boat, with thick eyelashes, merry and speaking pleasantly, lovely in every limb, you are exceedingly brilliant.

6 This mansion is flawless and stands level; possessing parks enhancing your delight and pleasure. I wish, O lady of supreme beauty, that I might enjoy myself with you here amidst this pleasure."

1 Herein there (tattha): in that mansion. You rest (acchasi): you sit, you dwell, at whatever time you so desire. O devi (devi): he is addressing her. Of great majesty (mahānubhāve): endowed with great heavenly majesty. In mid-career (pathaddhani): journeying on its own path, meaning on its course through the expanse of the heavens: Like the moon on the fifteenth day (pannarase va candu) means shining like the moon's fully rounded orb on the night of the full moon.

2 And your complexion resembles molten gold (vanno ca te kanakassa sannibho): your complexion is extremely captivating, being similar to molten gold. For this reason he said, 'Your glowing appearance is exceedingly lovely to behold.' Beyond compare (atule): of great value; or, alternatively (we should read:) O one beyond compare (atule), it being his way of addressing the devata, meaning 'O one of matchless beauty.' You have no husband: n'aththi ca tuyham sāmiko-sāmiko ca tuyham n'aththi (alternative grammatical form).

3 Abundant in flowers (pahūtamālyā): they possess many and various flowers such as the lotus and the blue water lily and so on. [189] With gold dust (suvannacuṇṇehi): with golden sands. Entirely spread (samant' ottātā): entirely strewn. There (tattha): in those lotus ponds. Mud and duckweed (paṅko paṇṇako ca): neither mud nor slime is known.
4 These swans, delightful and lovely to behold (hāṃśā pi me dassanthi yā manoramā): these swans, delightful and pleasant looking. Glide about (anupariyanti): wander up and down. At all times (śabbadā): in all seasons. Flocking together (samayya): coming together. Beautifully (vaggu): sweetly. Sing out (upanadanti): coo. With full voice (bindussara): with uninterrupted voice, with rounded voice. Like the sound of kettle-drums (dundubhitnam va ghoso) means that by nature of their beautiful, full voice the sound of the swans on your lotus pond is like that of kettle-drums.

5 Dazzling (daddaṭhamānā): brilliantly blazing forth. In your glory (yasāśa): with the psychic power of a deva. In your boat (nāvāya): in your coracle, he said this having thus seen the pett enjoying herself on the water seated on her couch of great value in a golden, lotus-like boat on the lotus pond. Reclining: avalamba=olambitvā (alternative grammatical form): leaning against for support. You rest (tiṣṭasi): this is the opposite expression to motion due to the implication of a cessation of motion of the word (being at) rest*. An alternative reading is nisajasi; its meaning should be regarded just as you are seated. With thick eyelashes (ājāraṇapamhe): with long, black, curved eyelashes. Merry (hasite): full of merriment, with a merry face. Speaking pleasantly (piyaṁvade): talking pleasantly. Lovely in every limb (sabbāṅgakalyāṇa): beautiful in every limb, meaning beauteous in every limb, both large and small. You are brilliant (virocasi): you glare.

6 Flawless (virajam): without a flaw, faultless. Stands level (same phitam): stands on a level portion of ground (samabhūmībhāge); or, alternatively, on account of its beauty on (all) four (śādīs) it stands in equal proportion (samabhāge), meaning perfect all round. Possessing parks (uṣyāṇavantam): similar to the Nandana Grove. Enhancing your delight and pleasure (ratinandivadādhanam): it is ‘enhancing your delight’ [190] and pleasure since it enhances your delight and pleasure, meaning causing your happiness and joy to grow. O lady (nāri): this is his way of addressing her. Of supreme beauty (anamadassane): blameless looking through being perfect in every limb, both large and small. Amidst this pleasure (nandane): amidst what produces pleasure, Here (idalā): in this ‘Nandana Grove’ or in your mansion. That I might enjoy myself (moditasa): I wish that I might indulge in the pleasures of love — this is how it should be construed.

When the young man had spoken thus the vimāṇadevata, answering him, uttered this verse:

7 ‘Perform a deed to be experienced here and let your mind be bent on here; when you have performed a deed to be experienced here you will thus obtain me who will gratify all your desires.’
7. Herein perform a deed to be experienced here (karohi kammam idha vedaniyam): perform, you should pursue; a skilled deed which will ripen and yield its result here in this heavenly place. Bent on here (idha natam): sloping towards here; an alternative reading is sliding towards here (idha ninnam) meaning let your mind be, allow it to be, sliding, tending, inclining towards this place. Me: mamam=mam (alternative grammatical form). You will obtain: lacchasi=labhiissasi (alternative grammatical form).

When the young man heard what the vimañapeti had to say he went from there to the ways of men; he kept his mind intent on that place and performed the appropriate meritorious deed and, dying not long afterwards, arose there in the company of that peti. Those rehearsing the texts uttered the concluding verse explaining the matter:

8. 'He gave her his consent saying, "Very well", and performed a deed to be experienced there;[29] when he had performed a deed to be experienced there the young man arose in her company.'

8. [191] Herein very well (śādhu): this is a particle denoting agreement. Her (tassā): that vimañapeti. He gave his consent (paṭissunīvā): he agreed with what she had to say. To be experienced there (tahini vedantiyam): a skilled deed resulting in happiness that is to be experienced with her in that mansion. In company (sahavyatam): together with; the young man arose in her company — this is how it should be construed.

When they had thus been enjoying heavenly excellence there for a long time the man died through the exhaustion of that deed but the woman dwelt there for one full Buddha-interval through her meritorious deed being gone to the field.[30] Then when our Lord had arisen in the world and had set rolling the Wheel of the Noble Dhamma and was in due course staying in the Jeta Grove, the venerable Mahāmoggallāna when wandering one day in the mountains saw that mansion and the vimañapeti and questioned her with the verses that begin: 'Beryl-pilled, gleaming, radiant.' She reported the whole incident to him right from the beginning and when he had heard this the elder went to Sāvatthi and raised (the issue) with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. When they heard this the people performed meritorious deeds such as almsgiving and so on and became given to the Dhamma.

1. kalyānамitta, the technical term for a spiritual guide or adviser.
2. Reading suvibhattavicirabhittithambhasopānabhūmitalam with Be (Se omits bhitti-) for text's suvibhattavicirabhittithambhasopānabhūmitalam.
One of the seven great lakes – see PrA 152 above.

Reading nadiṃ with Se Be for text’s na.

Reading thambhaṃ with Se Be for text’s thambəṃ.

Reading pannarasa with Se Be and cty below for text’s pannastare.

Reading bhusa with Se Be for text’s bhūṣa; the PED entry sv bhūṣa should be deleted. Cp Jv 203.

*panḍakaː I follow Nānamoli, Path of Purification, p. 280. Cp Sv 122; A iii 187, 232, 235; Jb 71; Miln 35; Vin iii 177.

Reading bindussara with Se Be for text’s vindussaṛa; cp Sn 330, Thag 1270 and D ii 211 where it is one of the eight qualities of the voice of Brahmā Sanapukumāra whose steed is the swan (haṃsa).

PED sv ghosa wrongly attributes this sound to the petas suggesting it should be rendered as ‘wailing’.

Reading pīyavade with Se Be for text’s piyavade.

nandana, an allusion to the Nandana Grove in Sakka’s heaven; cp III 159. We could alternatively translate as ‘amidst this Nandana’.

Reading ujjataṛūpo with Se Be and v 2 for text’s uggatarūpo.

Se Be read n’ atthā ca tuyha-sāmiko=tuyham sāmiko ca n’ atthi; the meaning remains the same.

Reading suvanna with Se Be for text’s suvanna.

Reading udakapicchilo with Se Be (Be-picchilo) for text’s udakacakikhalo, water and swamp (cp PrA 102, 223), since it would seem here to be something that pollutes a pond.

Reading donjāṃ; PED sv donī states this to be a trough-shaped canoe (cp Marāṭhī don “a long flat-bottomed boat made of undiwood” and Kannarese doni “a canoe hollowed (sic) from a log”). With this we may compare the English ‘dinghy’ (from Hindi ḍeṃgh). Here however the vessel is said to resemble a lotus bud and the other sense of donī, that of a hollow (cp Sk or droga, a tub or bucket etc.), is probably predominant.

Se Be add petiṃ here.

Reading padumniyāṃ suvaṇṇanāvāya with Se Be for text’s paduminisuvaṇṇanāvāya.

Reading apassenāṃ with Se Be for text’s apassena.

Reading gatiṇ with Be for text’s Se gatiṇ ca.

Reading caturassā sobhitatāya with Se Be for text’s caturamsaso hitāya.

Reading parippuṇṇaṣagacchāngatāya aninditassane with Se Be for text’s parippuṇṇaṣagatāya nandananassane; cp Sn 548 and SnA 452. Perfection in body was often considered the result of meritorious and skilled deeds as indeed were the thirty-two marks on the body of the Buddha – cp D iii 142ff.

So our text and Se; Be reads vimānapetīdevatā. Earlier she was called a vimānapetī.

Reading nataṃ; Se Be read nihataṃ whilst Pr has nītapaṃ.

Cp M i 493 for a parallel use of these terms.

The text’s punctuation should be amended to read, in accordance with Se, Be, as follows: ... tattha nibbatī tassā petīyā sahavyataṃ. Tam...

Reading tahim venānyāṃ with Se Be and cty below for text’s sahavedaniyāṃ; PED has no entry for tahim.

That is, the world’s unsurpassed merit-field of 1 1 above.
III.4 EXPOSITION OF THE CHAFF PETA STORY
[Bhusapetavatthuvāṇgāṇī]

‘One the chaff of paddy whilst again another,’ This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning four petas.

It is said that there was in a certain village not far from Sāvatthī a dishonest trader who made his living by giving false measure and so on. He would take some paddy husks, add brown clay to increase the weight and then mix this with the red paddy that he then sold. His son became angry thinking, ‘He does not act honourably towards my friends and well-wishers coming to the house,’ and seized a leather yoke-pad and gave his mother a blow on the head. His [192] daughter-in-law ate by stealing meat that had been appointed for the use of all and being called upon once more by them to account for herself made an oath saying, ‘If that meat were eaten by me then may I devour the flesh that I have cut from my back in life after life!’ His wife said to those begging any means of livelihood whatsoever that there was none and on being pressed by them she made an oath by lying, ‘If there should be something when I say there is none then may I feed on excrement wherever I am born!’ In due course these four people died and arose as petas in the Vīḷjha forest. There the dishonest trader would, as the fruit of his deeds, take blazing chaff in both hands and scatter it over his head and (thereby) underwent great misery. His son would split his own head all by himself with hammers made of iron and suffer untold misery. His daughter-in-law, as the fruit of her deeds, underwent unlimited misery devouring the flesh she continually gorged from her back with her well-sharpened and extremely long great nails; whilst no sooner had a meal of fragrant and well-cleansed rice from which the black grains had been removed been presented to his wife than it would become the most foul-smelling and loathsome excrement riddled with various kinds of species of worms which she would grasp with both hands and experience great misery eating it.

Now when these four people had arisen amongst the petas and were suffering great misery the venerable Mahāmoggallāna who was wandering in the mountains one day reached that spot and saw them. He enquired about the deeds they had done with this verse:

1 ‘One the chaff of paddy whilst again another; and this woman her own flesh and blood; whilst you eat this filthy and disgusting excrement — of what is this the result?’

1 Herein chaff (bhusāṇi): husks. One (eko): alone. Of paddy: sālin = sālino; this is the accusative case with the force of the genitive: [193] he
would scatter the blazing husks of paddy over his head — this is the meaning. *Again another:* punāpara = puna aparō (resolution of compound); he who struck his mother’s head ended up with his own head split open after striking his head with iron hammers — it is with reference to this that he speaks. Her own flesh and blood (sakamamsalohitam): she eats the flesh and blood from her back — this is how it should be construed. Disgusting (akantikan): unpleasant, disagreeable, loathsome. Of what is this the result? (kissa ayam vipako) means of what wicked deed is this the fruit that is now being suffered by you?

When the elder had thus enquired about the deeds they had done, the wife of that dishonest trader then spoke these verses explaining the deeds done by them all:

2  'This one in the past injured his mother whilst this one was a dishonest trader; this one ate meat and deceived by lying.

3  When I was a human being, in the world of men, I was a housewife and mistress of the whole family; though at hand, I concealed this and gave not one bit of it, covering myself by lying, “There is none of this in my house; if there should be and I have hidden it then may my food be excrement!”

4  It is both as a result of that deed and due to the fact that I lied that this meal of fragrant rice turns into excrement for me.

5  Deeds are not barren nor perishes any deed, for I must eat and drink this foul-smelling excretion of worms.'

2  Herein this one (ayam): she speaks pointing to her son. Injured (himsati): he attacked with force, meaning he struck with a hammer. A dishonest trader (kūtaṇājījo): a scoundrel of a trader, meaning one who conducts his trade by fraud. Ate meat (maṃsāni kāḍitvā): ate, all by herself, meat provided for the general use of others and deceived by lying, saying that she had not eaten it.

3  A housewife (agārint): mistress of the house. Though at hand (santesa): though the means of livelihood begged by others were available. I concealed this (parigūhāmi): I covered this over; this is said with a distortion of tense. And gave not one bit of it (mā ca kūci ito adāṇ): gave not even the slightest bit of it, of my property, to others who were in need. Covering myself (chādemi): she covered herself by lying, 'There is none of this in my house.'

4  Turns into excrement for me (gūthāṃ me parivattati): this meal of fragrant rice turns into, changes into, excrement on account of that deed of mine.

5  Are not barren (avaṇjhāni): are not in vain, are not without fruit.
Nor perishes any deed (na hi kammaṃ vinassati): nor perishes any deed, as accumulated,\(^{14}\) without having given their fruit. Of worms (kimīnāṃ): possessing worms, full of (whole) families of worms: Excretion (mīḷhaṃ): excrement. The rest is quite self-evident since it has already been given above.

When the elder had thus heard what the peti had to say he raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took it as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

\(^{1}\) So Se Be; text reads Bhūsa- here and throughout.
\(^{2}\) Reading punāpara with Se Be and v 1 for text's punāpare.
\(^{3}\) Reading sālipālaṃ with Se Be for text's sālipālaṃ.
\(^{4}\) Reading yugacamman with Be for text's Se yugacamman; cp SED sv yuga where it is suggested that yugacamman is a leather pad attached to a yoke.
\(^{5}\) See PvA 244.
\(^{6}\) Reading palāpānā with Se Be for text's palāpānā both here and below; the entry in PED sv palāsa should be amended accordingly.
\(^{7}\) Reading ekako with Se Be for text's ekato.
\(^{8}\) The text is poorly punctuated here and should read with Se Be as follows: sāsahedāṃ pāpunāti tām sandhāya vaddati. Sakamāṃsaalohitaṃ tl.
\(^{9}\) ahāṃ manussesu manussabhūtā: cp the remarks at MLS iii 249 n. 1 concerning the similar expression manussānāṃ veyā satāṃ manussabhūtānāṃ. This latter expression recurs at S ii 188 where it seems to be merely a gloss, probably for the sake of emphasis as perhaps here.
\(^{10}\) In the introductory story this was said to be a leather yoke-pad.
\(^{11}\) Reading khalavāniyo with Se Be for text's bāla; this adjectival sense of khala is not listed by PED though it was given in Childers.
\(^{12}\) It may be noted that it is the theft (or greed) that is the offending deed and not the eating of the meat as such, the Buddha at no time forbade the eating of meat, given certain conditions.
\(^{13}\) Present indicative for aorist.
\(^{14}\) Reading yathūpacitaṃ with Be for text's Se hetupacitaṃ.

III.5 EXPOSITION OF THE BOY PETA STORY

[Kumārapetavatthuvaṇṇanā]

'The Sugata's\(^{1}\) knowledge is wonderful.' This is the Boy Peta Story. How did it originate?

It is said that at Sāvatthī many layfollowers organised themselves into a body of Dhamma-followers and had built in that city a large pavillion and adorned it with cloths of various colours. Early in the morning they invited
the Teacher and the order of monks and had that order of monks with the Buddha at its head be seated on seats spread with costly coverings of the highest quality, honoured them with scent and flowers and so on and inaugurated a great almsgiving. When he saw this a certain man, whose heart was possessed by the stain of selfishness, unable to bear such worship said, 'It would be better if all this were thrown on the rubbish-heep rather than given to these shavelings.' When they heard this the layfollowers, their hearts agitated, reflected, 'Grave indeed is the wicked deed pursued by this man with which he offended the order of monks with the Buddha at its head.' They reported the matter to his mother and said, 'You should go and apologise to the Lord and his Sāvakasaṅgha.' 'Very well', she agreed and having remonstrated with her son, threatening him, she approached the Lord and the order of monks and apologised, confessing the transgression her son had committed, and paid honour to the Lord and the order of monks for seven days with gifts of rice-gruel. Her son died not long afterwards and arose in the womb of a harlot who made her living by impure deeds. Now she realised that he was a boy just as soon as he was born and had him abandoned in the cemetery. He was taken into protection by the power of his meritorious deeds and, unmolested by anyone, slept happily as though on his mother’s lap. They say that the devatās took him into their protection. Then when, towards dawn, the Lord had emerged from the meditation of great compassion and was surveying the world with his Buddha Eye, he saw the boy abandoned in that charnel ground and went at sunrise to that charnel ground. The people gathered saying, ‘The Teacher has come here; he must have some purpose here.’ The Lord spoke to the company that had gathered saying, ‘This boy is not to be despised; even though he is now abandoned in this cemetery in this helpless state, he will, in future, obtain the highest excellence both in this same life and in the life to come.’ Asked by those people, ‘What Lord, was the deed done by him in his previous birth?’, he explained the deed done by the boy and the excellence he was to attain in the future with (the verses) that begin:

'The highest honour was being paid by the people to the order of monks with the Buddha at its head when he had a mental aberration and spoke harsh, discourteous words.'

taught Dhamma suiting the dispositions of the company gathered there and afterwards gave that Teaching on Dhamma which (the Buddhas) have themselves discovered (: hill, uprising, stopping, the way). At the end of that teaching insight into the Dhamma arose to eighty-four thousand beings. And in the presence of the Lord a man of property worth eighty
kojīs adopted that boy saying, 'He will be my son.' The Lord said, 'This boy is protected by such great (wealth) and help has been rendered to the people,' and went to his vihāra. In due course, when the man of property died, he came into the wealth bequeathed by him and, setting up an establishment, he became a householder of great prosperity in that same city and was given to meritorious deeds such as giving and so on. Then one day the monks began to talk amongst themselves in the Dhamma-hall saying, 'It is indeed wonderful how the Teacher possesses pity for beings; indeed that same boy even who at that time was in that helpless state now enjoys great excellence and performs lofty meritorious deeds.' When he heard this the Teacher answered, 'This, monks, is not the whole extent of his excellence for indeed at the end of his life he will arise as the son of Sakka, king of devas, in the realm of the Thirty-three and obtain great heavenly excellence.' When they heard this the monks and the people praised the unique knowledge of the Teacher saying, 'It is said that when the far-seeing Lord saw what had to be done he went there and rendered assistance to him who had been abandoned in that fetid cemetery just as soon as he was born, and would speak about that incident concerning him during their lifetime. Those rehearsing the texts spoke six verses elucidating this matter:

1. "The Sugata’s knowledge is wonderful; the Teacher answers according to the individual: though overflowing with merit some become [low born] whilst though of limited merit some become [lofty]."

2. "This boy, abandoned in the charnel ground, subsisted during the night on the moisture of the thumb: neither yaksha-demons nor reptiles might harass a boy who has done meritorious deeds."

3. Dogs, moreover, licked his feet whilst crows and jackals circled him; [197] flocks of birds removed the impurities of childbirth whilst crows removed the matter from his eyes.

4. No one provided him protection nor provided medicine or a mustard fumigation; nor did they even take note of the planetary conjunctions or scatter all the grains even.

5. Fallen into such utter wretchedness as to be taken at night and abandoned in the charnel ground and, quivering like a knob of fresh butter, dubious yet with life remaining —

6. The one honoured by devas and men saw him; as soon as he saw him the Extremely Wise One declared, "This boy will become a member of the highest family of this city through his wealth."

7. "What was his observance, now what his Brahmajīvita? of what good conduct is this the result that, having come to such a plight, he could go on to enjoy such potency as this?"
Herein wonderful (accherarūpaṃ): of a wonderful nature. The Sugata’s knowledge (Sugatassa nāma): the knowledge of the Perfect Buddha is not shared by others — it is said with respect to his omniscience, such as his knowledge of one’s inclinations and dispositions and so on. How is it that this knowledge is not within the reach of others? They said, ‘The Teacher answers according to the individual.’ This indicates that it is only through the teaching of the Teacher that the wonderful nature of his knowledge becomes apparent. Then illustrating this (method of) answering they said, ‘Though overflowing with merit some become [low born] whilst though of limited merit some become [lofty].’ This is the meaning: though overflowing with skilled states, some individuals here become low in matters of birth and so on by way of an act of merit of that kind which has been conserved whilst though of limited merit, though of fewer meritorious states, some beings, on account of their successful attainment of the field and so on, become lofty due to the great splendour of that merit.

In the charnel ground (sivathikāya): in the cemetery. On the moisture of the thumb (aigusthasamaneha): on the moisture that comes from the thumb, meaning on the milk that flows from the thumb of a devatā. Neither yakkha-demons nor reptiles (na yakkhabhūta na siriṃsapā vā): neither pisāca-demons nor yakkha-demons nor reptiles nor any who creep when moving about. Might harass (na vihethayeyyaṃ): might oppress.

Licked his feet (paliṁṣu pāde): licked his feet with their tongues.

Crows (dhaṅkā); crows (kākā). Jackals circled him (sīṅgālā parivattayanti): circled him continuously protecting him in order to maintain his state of health thinking, ‘Let no one harm this boy!’ The impurities of childbirth (gabhāṣayaṃ): the stains of childbirth. Flocks of birds (pakkhiṉaṇa): flocks of birds such as vultures and hawks and so on. Removed (haranti): took away. The matter from his eyes (akkhimaḷaṃ): what had been excreted by his eyes.

(No) one (keci): (no) one who was human for non-human beings did afford protection. Medicine (osadhaṃ): antidotes bringing health both at that time and in the future. Or a mustard fumigation (sāsapadhūpanaṃ vā): the fumigation that they perform with mustard for the sake of protecting a newborn boy; they elucidate that there were none doing even this for him. Nor did they even take note of the planetary conjunctions: nakkhattayogam pi na uggahesuṃ=nakkhattayutam pi na uggahinhaṃ (alternative grammatical form), meaning no one cast his horoscope even in a manner such as, ‘This one was born under such and such a sign of the zodiac, under such and such a planet, on such and such a lunar day and at this precise time.’ Or scatter all the grains even (na subbadhaṅñāni pi
ākirimsu): they would scatter grain such as paddy and so on mixed with mustard oil when performing an auspicious act as an antidote to disease, meaning they did not do even this for him.

5 *Such (etādisāṁ): [199] like that. Fallen into utter wretchedness (uttamakicchapatāṁ): met with the utmost wretchedness, fallen into extreme misery. As to be taken at night: rattiṁhatatam=rattiyaṁ ābhataṁ (resolution of compound). Like a knob of fresh butter (nontapiṇḍam viya): similar to a knob of fresh butter; this is said on account of his being a mere lump of flesh. Quivering (pavedhamānāṁ): trembling on account of his weak condition. Dubious (sasamsayam): full of doubt due to the uncertainty as to whether he will live or not. Yet with life remaining (jīvitasāvasesāṁ): yet with but the slightest life remaining due to the absence of materials that are for beings the means of maintaining life.

6 Will become a member of the highest family through his wealth (aggakuliko bhavissati bhogato) means he will become a member of the highest family, of the best of families, on account of his wealth, by way of his wealth. The verse (beginning:) 'What was his observance' was said by layfollowers who were standing in the Teacher's presence as a means of enquiring about the deed done by him, by those who had gathered in the charnel ground — this is how it should be understood.

7 Herein what was his?: ki sa=kim asa (resolution of compound). Observance (vataṁ): undertaking of an observance. Once again of what? (kissa): of what sort of good conduct, observance and Brahmāfaring? — this is how it should be construed, its inflection having been altered.

Such (etādisāṁ): such as arising in the womb of a harlot and being abandoned in a cemetery. A plight (vyasanaṁ): misfortune. Such (tādisāṁ): so great a, meaning in the manner stated, namely, 'subsisted during the night on the moisture of the thumb' and so on as well as 'this boy will become a member of the highest family of this city' and so forth. Potency (iddhim) refers to the heavenly excellence of a deva's psychic power.

Now the Lord, questioned in that manner by those layfollowers, answered accordingly; those rehearsing the texts spoke four verses illustrating this:

8 'The highest honour was being paid by the people to the order of monks with the Buddha at its head when he had a mental aberration and spoke harsh, discourteous words.

9 When he had dispelled that thought and had afterwards gained joy and devotion [200] he waited for seven days with rice-gruel on the Tathāgata who was staying in the Jeta Grove.

10 That was his observance, now that his Brahmāfaring; of that good
conduct is this the result that, having come to such a plight, he could go on to enjoy such potency as this.

11 After remaining right here for a hundred years provided with all he desires he will, at the breaking up of the body, go into the company of Vāsava in the life to come.1

8 Herein by the people (janatā): by the collection of people forming that body of layfollowers - this is the meaning. When (tatra): at that paying of honour.23 He (assa): that boy. Had a mental aberration (cittassa ahu aaññathattam): in a previous life his mind was of an aberrant nature and he lacked respect, reverence and trust. Discourteous (asabbhiṁ): he spoke harshly and in a manner not fit to be heard in a court of the virtuous.26

9 He (so): this one (just mentioned). That thought (taṁ vitakkaṁ): that wicked thought. Had dispelled (paññino dayitvā): had dissipated due to the remonstrance from his mother. Had gained joy and devotion (pittapādaṁ paññaddhā): had gained, had given rise to, joy and devotion.27 He waited with rice-gruel on (yāguyā upaṭṭhāsi): he waited with gifts of rice-gruel on. For seven days (sattarattam):28 for seven days.

10 That was his observance, now that his Brahmāfaring (taśsa vaṭam tam pana brahmacariyaṁ): that devotion of heart and the gift in the manner stated by me above was the observance of this person, together with his Brahmāfaring, meaning there is nothing other (than this).

11 After remaining (sthavāna): after he has remained right here, in this world of men, until the end of his life. In the life to come (abhisamparāyaṁ): in his next existence. He will go into the company of Vāsava (sahavayaṁ gacchati Vāsavasso): he will go into companionship with Sakka,29 lord of devas. [201] as his son; this is a present tense statement with the sense of the future (tense). The rest is quite self-evident throughout.

---

1 An epithet of the Buddha, sometimes rendered Well-gone.
2 This was apparently the custom -- see H. Kern, A Manual of Indian Buddhism.
3 Cp PVA 61.
4 See note at PVA 38 above.
5 The text's punctuation should be amended to read with Se Be as follows: Bhagavato sammukhā 'va 'mama putto' ti aggahesī.
6 The help (anuggaho) is the insight into Dhamma that they have been granted and is being contrasted here with the mundane protection (rakkhito) afforded the boy; Ghezeman seems to have entirely misunderstood this.
7 kṛṣṇambam saṅghapento, so PED; perhaps a family business is meant.
8 The text's punctuation should be amended to read with Se Be as follows: Tam sutvā bhikkhu mahājano ca 'dam kira kāraṇaṁ disvā dghadassi Bhagavā...'.
9 Reading attabhāve with Se Be for text's attabhāve.
10 This verse is corrupt and, as it stands, cannot mean what Dhammadāla says it
means. However, since it seems that Dhammapāla was himself facing a corrupt verse I have inserted extractions from the cty that follows in square brackets merely in an attempt to give some sense to the verse.

11 Reading vhepañeyyam with Se Bo for text’s na heñeyyam.

12 From here onwards I follow the division of the verses found in Se Bo, this being neither that of our text nor of Pāv.

13 The verse should read ki’ ssa...kissa... in accordance with the cty below and not kissa...ki’ ssa...

14 Cp Vv 84.

15 Reading eva with Se Bo for text’s evam.

16 aha, literally he said.

17 Cp Pāv 191 above.

18 So all texts; however a vi of Be may be preferable: na yakkhabhūtā ti yakkhā vi bhūtā vā. Na sarīsāpa vā tē ye keci sarantā gacchanti which would give: neither yakkhas nor demons: na yakkhabhūtā-yakkhā vi bhūtā vā (resolution of compound). Nor reptiles (sarīsāpa vā): nor those who creep when moving about. It may be noted that sarisapā, here rendered reptile, means crawling, creeping or gliding and by extension one doing this; cp the similar etymology of ‘reptile’.

19 Reading Pāṭimisæ post diattano jivhāya pāde lhiṣṣatu with Bo (== Se) for text’s Palahimṣu pāde ti attano jivhāya pāde palahimṣu.

20 Reading aparāparam with Se Bo for text’s aparāparam.

21 Cp GS i 55 n. 1 where this is referred to.

22 Reading na na with Se Bo for text’s nanu.

23 Reading hotabhūtānaṃ with Se Bo for text’s hetu bhūtānaṃ.

24 That is, the preceding nominative kim is here dative/genitive kissa.

25 Reading tassam pūjyam with Se Bo for text’s tassa pūjyam.

26 Reading sadhusabbhya with Se Bo for text’s sadhu sabbhya. Sabhā, usually rendered assembly hall is here given as ‘court’ in order to emphasise the fact that asabhām is derived from sabhā together with the negative prefix a- and hence means uncourteous, not consistent with good manners — see PED sv asabbha. So Bo read asabhām here.

27 Se Bo add pthim pāsda ca here; text omits.

28 Literally for seven nights.

29 S i 229 states that he acquired the name Vāsava through having given dwelling places (āvastham adhi) in a previous life and is thus Vāsava, house-owner — cp DhpA i 264; whilst D ii 260 says that he is so called because he is chief of the Vasū (Vasūnām iva) which Buddhabhosa takes as a class of devatās (Vasudevatānām DA 690); see DPPN ii 857f. for further details.

III.6 EXPOSITION OF THE SERINĪ PETA STORY

[Serinīpetavatthuvañṇanā]

‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning the petī Serinī.

It is said that at Hatthininura in the kingdom of the Kurus there was a harlot named Serinī. Now monks from here and there gathered there for
the purpose of holding the Uposatha and a large assembly of monks took place. When they saw this the people prepared abundant alms materials such as sesame and rice and so on, ghee, fresh butter and honey and so forth and inaugurated a great almsgiving. Now at that time that prostitute had neither faith nor devotion and her heart was possessed of the stain of selfishness. Although the people urged her saying, ‘Do come and show your appreciation at this almsgiving!’ she demonstrated her complete lack of devotion saying, ‘What is the use of giving to these shaveling recluses? Why should I give away a mere trifle even?’ She died in due course and arose as a pett in the moat of a certain border city. Now a certain lay-follower of Hatthinipura had gone to that city in order to trade and during the night, towards dawn, he went to that moat on such an undertaking. When she saw him there she recognised him and, standing not far away, revealed herself, naked and with a body with only its skin and bones remaining, an extremely disgusting sight. When he saw her he questioned her with this verse:

1  ‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin one, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, you who are stood here?’

She made herself known to him also with a verse:

2  ‘I, sir, am a petty gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, I have gone from here to the world of the petas.’

He questioned her once more about the deed she had done with this verse:

3  ‘Now what evil deed was done by you, by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?’

[202] and she then told him about the deed she had done and, further, what was to be done by him for her benefit, with these six verses:

4  ‘At public bathing places I searched for small coins; though merit-offerings were at hand I made no refuge for myself.
5  I approach the river parched but it becomes empty; amidst the heat I approach the shade but it becomes scorched by the sun.
6  And a wind like fire blows on me, burning me, but I deserve this, sir, and other (misery) more terrible than this.
7  When you go to Hatthinipura you should say to my mother, “I have
seen your daughter gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, she has gone from here to the world of the petas.

8 There is here what was laid up but not announced by me — some four hundred thousand beneath the couch.

9 From this she should give alms for me; may it also provide her livelihood. And when she has given the alms my mother should assign the donation to me — then I will be happy and richly endowed with all I desire.’’

4 ‘Herein at public bathing places (anāvātesu titthesu): at bathing places such as rivers and pools and so on that are uncontrolled by anyone, at such places where people bathe and wash themselves. I searched for small coins (vicint addhamāsakam): overcome with greed I searched for, I sought out, even the smallest of coins thinking, ‘Here perhaps I might find something that people have put down and then forgotten.’ Or, alternatively, at public bathing places (anāvātesu titthesu): where recluses and brahmans are to be found — those ‘bathing places’ that are uncontrolled by the approach of anyone and that provide the means of purification of the behaviour and inclinations of beings. I searched for small coins (vicint addhamāsakam): with a heart possessed of the stain of selfishness and not giving anything to anyone I specifically searched even for small coins and did not accumulate any merit. For this reason she said, ‘Though merit-offerings were at hand I made no refuge for myself.’

5 Parched (tasitā): thirsty. Empty (rittakā): though a flowing river, full to overflowing so that a crow could drink from it, it becomes empty and devoid of water, becomes mere sand, on account of my wicked deed.

[203] Amidst the heat (unhesu): at times when it is hot. It becomes scorched by the sun (ātapo parivattti): a shaded place, when approached by me, becomes scorched by the sun.

6 Like fire (aggivanno): like fire to the touch. For this reason it was said, ‘Blows (on me) burning (me).’ But I deserve this, sir (etai ca bhante arahānī): she speaks respectfully to that layfollower addressing him as ‘sir’. But I deserve to undergo this aforesaid misery of thirst and so on, sir, and other misery more terrible, more severe, than this, on account of having done such a wicked deed — this is the meaning.

7 You should say: vajjesiyadeeyāsi (alternative grammatical form).

8 Here what was laid up (but) not announced (ettha nikkhittam anakkhātam): the extent of what was laid up was not spoken of. She then said, ‘Some four hundred thousand beneath the couch’, indicating the
amount and the place where it had been put. Herein the couch (pallaiikassa): the couch on which she formerly slept.

9 From this (tato): take a portion from that laid down wealth and give alms on my behalf. Her (tassā): my mother's.

When that peti had thus spoken the layfollower agreed to what she had said. He completed his business there, went to Hathinipura and reported the matter to her mother. Indicating this fact those rehearsing the texts said:

10 "Very well", he consented and went to Hathinipura (and said), "I have seen your daughter gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, she has gone from here to the world of the petas.

11 She urged me at that time, saying, 'You should say to my mother, "I have seen your daughter gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, she has gone from here to the world of the petas.

12 There is here what was laid up but not announced by me — some four hundred thousand beneath the couch.

13 [204] From this she should give alms for me; may it also provide her livelihood. And when she has given the alms my mother should assign the donation to me — then I will be happy and richly endowed with all I desire."'"  

14 She thereupon gave alms and assigned the donation to her — and that peti became happy and with a body that was beautiful to behold.  

These can be easily understood.

When she heard this her mother gave alms to the order of monks and assigned these to her. Established in the excellence of the means of livelihood that she had received in this way, she revealed herself to her mother and explained its cause. Her mother informed the monks and the monks raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

1 Hastinapur, capital city of the famous Kaurava dynasty who formed one of the two opposing families in the Mahābhārata war.

2 The Upasatha ceremony of the layman that is tied to the phases of the moon. Just as the moon, on full moon nights, may be thought to imitate the sun, so does the layman, dressed in white, on such occasions imitate the monk (though formerly the arahant) dressed in yellow, by taking upon himself extra precepts; cp A 1211f., iv 388ff.
III.7 EXPOSITION OF THE DEER-HUNTER PETA STORY
[Migaluddapetavatthuvaṭṭanā]

“You are youthful and honoured by men and women.” This was said when the Lord was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a peta who had been a deer-hunter.

It is said that in Rājagaha a certain hunter made his living by shooting and slaying deer by both day and night. He had a friend who was a lay-follower who, though unable to dissuade him from his wicked deeds all the time, roused him (to behave) meritoriously by night saying, ‘Come on, my friend; refrain from destroying living beings by night.’ He would refrain from this at night and would destroy living beings only during the day. He died in due course and arose as a vimānapeta near to Rājagaha undergoing great misery during the daytime but would gratify himself, endowed and provided with the pleasures of the five senses, by night. When he saw him the venerable elder Nārada questioned him with this verse:

1 [205] ‘You are youthful and honoured by men and women; you look splendid with the pleasures of the senses amidst the enticing but by day you undergo torture – what did you do in your previous life?’

1 Herein honoured by men and women (naranāripurakkhato): honoured by, attended by, devaputtas and devadhitās as attendants. Youthful (yuvā): young. Amidst the enticing (rajanīye): with those things that entice, that are apt to arouse lust. With the pleasures of the senses (kāmagunchi): with what is sensual. You look splendid (sobhasi): you are brilliant by night due to your being provided with these — this is the meaning. For this reason he said: but by day you undergo torture (divasam anubhosi kārapam): but during the daytime you suffer various sorts of torture, destruction. Or alternatively (we should read:) at night (rajanī): by night (rattīṣa), ye being a mere particle. What did you do in your previous life?
(kiṁ akāśi purimāya jātīya): what was the deed that you did in your life previous to this conducing to such happiness and misery, meaning please tell me this.

When he heard this the peta spoke these verses telling the elder of the deeds he had done:

2 ‘In beautiful Rājagaha, that delightful Giribbaja, I was in the past a deer-hunter, cruel and bloody-handed.

3 Depraved in mind, I roamed about unrestrained, always bent on harming others and extremely cruel as regards harmless living beings, creatures far and wide.

4 I had a kind hearted companion, a layfollower possessing faith, and he, feeling pity, warned me time and again saying,

5 ‘Do not perform wicked deeds, my friend, do not go to a state of misery; if you should wish for happiness after death, refrain from this unrestrained slaughter of living beings.’

6 I listened to these words of him desirous of my happiness and anxious for my welfare yet I, being so long given to wickedness and lacking insight, did not follow his advice to the full.

7 Once more that extremely wise one, out of pity, admonished me to show restraint saying, “If by day you must kill living beings then please show restraint at night.”

8 [206] So I killed living beings by day but, restrained, at night restrained therefrom — and at night I gratify myself whilst by day I have a miserable existence and am devoured.

9 On account of that skilled deed I enjoy at night non-human (pleasures) whilst by day aggressive hounds fall upon me from all sides to devour me.

10 Now those who continually apply themselves to, and who are constantly intent on, the teaching of the Sugata — these alone, methinks, will reach the Deathless, the unconditioned place.’

Herein hunter (luddho): (one who is) cruel. Bloody-handed (lohitapāṇi): with hands that are smeared with blood by the repeated destruction of beasts. Cruel (dāruṇa): savage, meaning one harming creatures.

Harmless: avirodhakesu=avirodham karontesu (resolution of compound); such as deer and birds and so on.

Unrestrained (asāmyamam): uncontrolled, of an evil nature.

His advice to the full (sakalānusāsanam): his whole advice, meaning abstention from wicked deeds at all times. Being so long given to wickedness (cīrapāpābhirato): being given to wickedness for so long a time.

Restraint (sāmyame): good conduct. Admonished: nīvesayi=nīvesesi
(alternative grammatical form). If by day you must kill living beings then please show restraint at night (sace divā hanasi pānino aṭha te rattiṃ bhavaṇa samyamad): this shows the manner in which he was admonished. It is said that even at night he applied himself to the slaughter of living beings in that he was setting stakes and snares and so on.

8 By day I have a miserable existence and am devoured (divā khajjāmi duggato): I have now gone to a state of misery, have come to great misery, and am devoured during the daytime. It is said that this fruit of his deed was in accordance with his deed in that he had dogs devour the deer by day — (thus) during the daytime huge, great dogs would fall upon him and reduce his body so that nothing but the skeleton remained, whilst when night approached, however, he would regain his former condition and enjoy heavenly excellence. For this reason it was said: [207] 'On account of that skilled deed I enjoy at night non-human (pleasures) whilst by day aggressive hounds fall upon me from all sides to devour me.'

9 Herein aggressive (paṭiharat): in an aggressive mood as though destruction-bound. From all sides to devour me (samantā khāditum): they fall upon me from all sides to devour my body; this is said with reference to the time during which they approach which causes him extreme fear. When they have fallen upon him and have reduced his body so that nothing but the bones remain, however, they go on their way.

10 Now those who continually apply themselves (ye ca te satatānuyogino): this is the meaning in brief of the concluding verse: even though I, indeed, enjoy such excellence through having refrained merely from the slaughter of living beings by night, those men, however, who are constantly intent on, firmly intent on, continually, at all times, applying themselves to the teaching of the Sugata, of the Lord Buddha, to that higher morality and so on⁵ — these meritorious ones alone, methinks, will reach the Deathless, the so-called unconditioned place⁶ that is not to be confused with mundane happiness — there is nothing that could be a fetter in their attainment of this.

When he had thus spoken the elder raised the issue with the Teacher. The Teacher took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. Everything is just as given above.

---

⁵ Reading paricāresi with Se (Be paricāresi) for text’s pariharat.
⁶ The true meaning of devaputta, in contrast with other terms such as devatā and deva and so on, is still in need of urgent investigation. It is of interest to note its use here as, literally at least, deva-sons and deva-daughters. Cp PvA 147.
⁷ Giribbaja, another name for Rājagaha which was in a valley surrounded by hills. Many of these hills acquired a religious significance, such as the Vulture Peak on
which the Buddha is said to have delivered many (mainly Mahāyāna) sūtras. Others became sacred to the Jainas and are today important places of pilgrimage. The Bamboo Grove, where many of the stories in this collection are said to have been told, is thought to have been located in this valley. Cp DPPN ii 721 for its history and also MLS i 39 n. 3 for one etymology of Giribāja.

4 pecca.
5 Reading adhisīlādike with Se Be for text’s adhisīlādhike.
6 Reading asaṅkhātam padan ti with Se Be and v 10 for text’s asaṅkhātan ti.

III.8 EXPOSITION OF A SECOND HUNTER PETA STORY
[Dutiyaluddhapetavatthuvaṇṇanaṃ]

‘In a pinnacled house and in a palace.’ This was said when the Lord was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning another peta who had been a deer-hunter.

It is said that at Rājagaha a certain young deer-stalker who though being endowed with wealth abandoned the comforts of his possessions and roamed about day and night killing deer. A layfollower who was a companion of his, out of kindness, gave him this advice, ‘Please refrain from destroying living beings, my friend, lest for a long time there be woe and misery for you’, [208] but he took no notice. That layfollower then begged a certain elder who had developed the mind and had destroyed the āsavas, saying, ‘Please teach Dhamma, sir, to such and such a man in such a way that he might refrain from destroying living beings.’ So one day that elder, whilst going round Rājagaha in search of alms, stood at the door of his house. When he saw him the deer-stalker, full of veneration, went out to meet him, had him enter the house and offered him the appointed seat. The elder sat down on the appointed seat. When he had approached the elder and also sat down the elder told him of the disadvantages of destroying living beings and then explained the advantages of refraining but when he heard this he was unwilling to refrain therefrom. The elder then said to him, ‘If you, my friend, are unable to refrain completely, please refrain during the night at least.’ ‘Very well, sir, I will refrain’, he replied and refrained at night. The rest is similar to the story immediately preceding except that where the verses are concerned the elder Nārada questioned him with these three verses:

1 ‘In a pinnacled house and in a palace, on a couch strewn with long woollen fleeces, you delight to the sweet sound of the fivefold instrumental music.'
Then at the end of the night, towards sunrise, you are removed to the cemetery where you undergo much misery.

Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you undergo this misery?'

That peta then explained the matter to him:

'In beautiful Rajagaha, that delightful Giribbaja, I was in the past a deer-hunter, I was cruel and unrestrained.

I had a kind hearted companion, a layfollower possessing faith and a monk, a sāvaka of Gotama, was dependent upon his family for alms; though he, feeling pity, warned me time and again saying,

"Do not perform wicked deeds, my friend, do not go to a state of misery; if you should wish for happiness after death, refrain from this unrestrained slaughter of living beings."

I listened to these words of him desirous of my happiness and anxious for my welfare yet I, being so long given to wickedness and lacking insight, did not follow his advice to the full.

Once more that extremely wise one, out of pity, admonished me to show restraint saying, "If by day you must kill living beings then please show restraint at night."

So I killed living beings by day but, restrained, at night refrained therefrom – and at night I gratify myself whilst by day I have a miserable existence and am devoured.

On account of that skilled deed I enjoy at night non-human pleasures whilst by day aggressive hounds fall upon me from all sides to devour me.

Now those who continually apply themselves to, and who are constantly intent on, the teaching of the Sugata – these alone, methinks, will reach the Deathless, the unconditioned place.'

The meaning of these is just as that already given above.

---

1 manobhāvanīyam; cp M iii 261, S iii 1, A ii 317, v 55, Vv 34 and also notes at MLS iii 312 n. 2, GS iii p. xii, 225 n. 1, v 38 n. 1. Here we must assume the process to have been completed.

2 Text wrongly reads Thī for tihi.

3 Reading kūṭāgāre ca pāśade with Se Be and III 117 above for text's kūṭāgāre 'va pāśade.

4 Reading goṇakathāte – see note at III 113 above.

5 pāñcangikena turiyena; cp S i 131, Thag 398, Thig 139, Vv 5, 36, 39, VvA 37, 181, 183, 210, 257, Dha i 274, 394 etc. These five instruments were: (1) ṭatām; (2) vitatām; (3) ṭatā-vitatām; (4) ghaṇam; (5) susuttam – drums with leather on one
side, two sides, all over, a cymbal or tambourine and a wind instrument respectively

- SA i 191; cp EV i 188.

1 Reading apaviddho with Se Be for text’s apavittho; cp PED sv.
2 tuddho, usually rendered hunter but here perhaps adjectival.

III.9 EXPOSITION OF THE FALSE DECLARATION PETA STORY
[Kūṭaviniçhayikapetavatthuvānā]

‘Garlanded, crowned and bangled.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a peta who had made a false declaration.

At that time the great king Bimbisāra used to observe the Uposatha for six days a month and following his example many people (also) observed the Uposatha. The king would ask all those who came into his presence, ‘Well, now, did you or did you not observe the Uposatha?’ Then a man appointed to his administration who was of slanderous speech, fraudulent, given to taking bribes and to acts of violence, said, ‘I did observe it, your majesty’, being afraid to say that he had not observed it. Then as he was leaving the king’s presence a companion said to him, ‘Well, now, my friend, did you observe it today?’ ‘I said so through fear, my friend, when face to face with the king but I am not observing it.’ Then his companion said to him, ‘Even so, you can still observe a half-day Uposatha for today, so undertake the Uposatha vows.’ ‘Very well’, he said, agreeing with what he said and went home and, without eating, rinsed his mouth and kept the Uposatha. That night, when he had gone to bed, sharp, acute pains that were caused by the strong wind arising from his empty condition cut short his span of life and he arose, immediately after falling, as a vimānapeta in the interior of a mountain. Through keeping a mere half-day Uposatha for one night he received a mansion with a retinue of ten thousand maidens and enjoyed great heavenly excellence; but on account of his false declaration and slanderousness he devoured the flesh he had gouged from his own back. The venerable Nārada, descending from the Vulture Peak, saw him and the elder questioned him with four verses after which he gave answer on this matter also with four verses:

1 ‘You are garlanded, crowned and bangled and your limbs are covered with sandal, your features are clear and you shine just like the sun.
2 These who are your attendants, these non-human members of your
3 They wear bracelets and bangles and their heads are adorned with chaplets of gold — you possess great majesty and your appearance is hair-raising.

4 Yet you devour the flesh that you yourself have gouged from your back: now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you devour the flesh from your back?

5 'In the world of the living I acted to my own ruin with slanderous and lying speech and with fraud and deceit.

6 When I had approached a company there and the time came to speak the truth I rejected what was right and in my interests and followed a wrong course.

7 Just as I today devour the flesh from my own back, even so will he who is a backbiter have to devour himself.

8 [217] You yourself have seen this, Nārada. Those who possess pity and are skilled would say, "Neither slander nor tell lies and do not be a backbiter!"

1 Herein garlanded (mālī): wearing garlands adorned with heavenly flowers — this is the meaning. Crowning (kīrīṭa): with the head turbaned. Bangled (kāyūrt): possessing bangles, meaning with one’s arms adorned with ornaments. Your limbs (gāttā): the members of your body. Are covered with sandal (condanussadā): are anointed with the essence of sandal-wood. You shine just like the sun (suriyavānsta va sobhasī): you are brilliant, being in appearance just like the newly arisen sun. Or, alternatively, the text reads, ‘You are beautiful like the dawn sun’ (arunāsadisa-vānṇavā); the dawn sun (arunām). similar in appearance to the Arāniya devas, meaning having an ariyan appearance.

2 Members of your company (pārisajjā): those belonging to his company, meaning his personal attendants.

3 You: tuvam-tvam (alternative grammatical form). Your appearance is hair-raising (lomahamsa-nāmavā): your appearance is fit to make the hair rise of those seeing you; this is said on account of his great majesty and power.

4 You have gouged: ukkantvā=ukkantivyā (alternative grammatical form), meaning you have cut.

5 I acted: acārisam-acarīm (alternative grammatical form), I took a line of action. With slanderous and lying speech: pesuṇṇatmsāvādāna = pesuṇṇena musāvādāna ca (resolution of compound). And with fraud and deceit: nikati vaṇcanāya ca = nikatiyā vaṇcanāya ca (resolution of
compounded), with machination and deceit that appear genuine to others.

6 When the time came to speak the truth (saccaññake): when the time came at which it was proper to speak the truth. What was in my interests (attham): the kinds of things that are of benefit in the same life and so on. What was right (dhammaññ): my duty, right conduct. I rejected (nirāṅkathvā): I separated myself from, I abandoned.

7 Ile (so): that creature who acts slanderously and so on.

All the rest is just as already given above.

---

1 kiriṭṭa; this sense is not listed by PED but see SED sv kiriṭa and kiriṭin.
2 Gehman’s ‘devoted himself to the feast’ conjures up exactly the reverse of what is involved here — it is as if one were to say the same of Lent.
3 Gehren is not correct in taking this as ‘when he reached his dwelling, his span of life was cut short by a steaks blown down from his poor abode through a high wind’.
4 Ţyussakkāra, that is, the span of life he would have enjoyed in accordance with his kamma had this not been interrupted or cut short by this wicked deed; cp D ii 106 (and Dīy. 113 n. 1); M.i 295; S i 266; A h 311; Ud 64.
5 Reading vimānaññ with Se Be for text’s vipākaññ.
6 kāññā.
7 Cp PPa 205.
8 Cp Thag 267.
9 Reading te ‘me paricārakā with Se Be for text’s te me parivārakā.
10 Reading te ‘me paricārakā with Se Be for text’s te ma paricārakā; cp II 124.
11 kañcanāvejabhūṣita; cp II 124.
12 All texts differ here: text reads ukkāntvā, Se ukkaḷāḍha whilst Be ukkacca.
13 dhammaññ.
14 ādhammaññ.
15 Cp Skt Aruna, charioteer of the sun and ‘appointed to go before the sun on his rising, thus protecting the world from excessive heat’ — E. Washburn Hopkins, Epic Mythology, Delhi 1974, p. 84.
16 Reading arañiyichi devehi sādissavanno, ariyāvakāso ti attho with Be for text’s arañiyichi devehi sādissavinna-ariyāvakāso ti attho (Se reads arañiyichi devehi sādissavanno; ariyāva kāsati ti attho).
17 Reading upaṭṭhākā with Se Be for text’s upaṭṭhakā.

---

III.10 EXPOSITION OF THE CONTEMPT FOR THE RELICS
PETA STORY
[Daṭuvivāṭapetavatthuvaṅgana]

[212] ‘Standing in the air.’ This is the Contempt for the Relics Peta Story.

When the Lord had attained Parinibbāna between the twin sāla-trees
in the Mallas' Upavattana Sāla Grove at Kusinārā and his relics had been divided, king Ajatasattu took his share of the relics and, recollecting the Buddha's virtues, inaugurated a great (ceremony in his) honour lasting seven years, seven months and seven days, during which incalculable and innumerable people became devoted in heart and reached heaven. However, as many as eighty-six thousand men were corrupt through having for a long time been without faith and of wrong outlook and, though amidst conditions that should inspire devotion, became of defiled mind and arose amongst the petas. In that same Rājagaha,² the wife, daughter and daughter-in-law of a certain man of property, who was endowed with wealth, with devotion in their hearts thought, 'Let us pay honour to the relics', and took some scent and flowers and so on and set out to go to the place where the relics were situated. That man of property showed his contempt for the honour of relics and scoffed at them saying, 'What's the good of honouring bones?' They took no notice of what he said and went to that place and paid honour to the relics and, having returned home, they became afflicted with such illness³ that not long afterwards they died, arising in the devalogā (on account of that meritorious deed). He, however, was overcome by anger and not long afterwards died, arising amongst the petas on account of that wicked deed. Then one day the venerable Mahākassapa, out of pity for beings, worked his psychic powers in such a way that people could see both petas and devatās. When he had done this he stood in the precincts of that cetiya⁴ and questioned the peta who had shown contempt for the relics with three verses to which the peta then replied:

1. 'Standing in the air you emit a foul, putrid smell and worms devour your putrid smelling mouth — what deed did you do in the past?⁵
2. Thereupon they take their knives and carve you time and again; they spray you with alkaline and then carve you (yet) time and again.
3. Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you undergo this misery?'
4. [213] 'In beautiful Rājagaha, that delightful Giribbaja, good sir, I was lord of very abundant wealth and grain.
5. I (tried to) obstruct this wife and daughter and daughter-in-law of mine who were taking tamāla⁶ (blossoms), blue lotuses and costly ointments to the stūpa — this was the wicked deed done by me.
6. We eighty-six thousand separately suffering,⁷ having shown contempt for honouring the stūpa, we are boiled⁸ intensely in hell.
7. You should separate therefrom those who make known the disadvantages when a great (ceremony of) honouring the stūpa of the Arahat is in progress.
8 And behold these approaching, wearing garlands and adorned, enjoying the result of flowers — they are magnificent, resplendent.  
9 And when they have seen this marvellous, amazing and hair-raising (fact) the wise will praise and salute you, great sage.
10 Now when I have gone from here and regained the human womb, I will diligently pay honour at the stūpa time and again.
1
Herein a foul smell (duggandho): a disagreeable smell, meaning smelling with the stench of a rotting corpse. For this reason he said, ‘You emit a putrid (smell).’
2 Thereupon (tato): after emitting that foul smell and being fit to be devoured by worms. They take their knives and carve you time and again (sattanā gahervāna okantantī punappunatī): creatures driven on by kamma take sharp-edged knives and carve your mouth time and again. They sprinkle you with alkaline and then carve you time and again (khārena paripphodvā okantantī punappunatī): they sprinkle the places where they carved you with an alkaline solution and then carve you time and again.
4 I was lord of very abundant wealth and grain (issaro dhanadhāhīnassasupahūtassā): [214] I was lord of, owner of, extremely abundant, of enormous, wealth and grain, meaning I was rich and wealthy.
5 This wife and daughter and daughter-in-law of mine (tassāyam me bharīyā ca dhiṣī ca suṇīṣi ca): this wife of mine in my previous existence, this daughter, this daughter-in-law; he speaks pointing to the deva-beings that are stood in the sky. Costly (paccaggaham): fresh. I tried to obstruct ... who were taking ... to the stūpa (thūpan harantiyo vāresim): showing contempt for the relics, I opposed ... who were carrying ... to honour the stūpa. This was the wicked deed done by me (tām pāpan pakatam mayā): he speaks with remorse saying, ‘This wicked deed of showing contempt for the relics was done, was pursued, by me.
6 Eighty-six thousand (chalāstīsahāsāni): as many as eighty thousand and six thousand more besides. We (mayam): he speaks including those petas together with himself. Separately suffering (paccattavedanā): this indicates that the suffering of great misery is being experienced separately, individually by each one himself. In hell (nirayena): he says this, likening the peta-plane to hell on account of its intense misery.
7 Those who ... when a great (ceremony of) honouring the stūpa of the Ārahant is in progress (ye ca kho thūpanāya vattante arahato mahā): he clarifies his own great loss allegorically saying, ‘You should separate, you should have separated, you should consider as outsiders, therefrom, from that meritorious deed, those persons who, like me, make known the
disadvantages of, the faults with, honouring the stūpa when a great (ceremony of) honour with respect to the stūpa of the Arahant, the Perfect Buddha, is in progress.

8 Approaching (āyantiyo): coming through the sky. The result of flowers (mālavipākam): the result, the fruit, of having paid honour with flowers at the stūpa. Magnificent (samiddhā): magnificent with heavenly excellence. They are resplendent (tā yaśasśniyo): they possess a retinue.  

9 And when they have seen this (tāl ca disvāna): when they have seen the marvellous, amazing, hair-raising, extremely fine and extraordinary result of that extremely limited meritorious deed of honour. The wise will praise and salute you, great sage (namo karonti sappāñhā vandanti tamo mahāmmuni): these women, Kassapa sir, will salute, will prostrate themselves before, you, the utmost merit-field, meaning they will praise, pay homage to, you.

[215] Then that peta, his heart agitated, uttered the verse (beginning:) 'Now when I', showing what he was to do in the future consistent with that agitation. The meaning of this is quite self-evident.

Mahākassapa took as an arisen need the matter that had thus been spoken of by the peta and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there.

'The Contempt for the Relics Peta Story is concluded — thus the exposition of the meaning of the third, Small, chapter that is adorned with ten stories in these Peta Stories of the Khuddaka Nikāya is concluded.'

1 Shorea robusta.  
2 Ajātaśatru's capital.  
3 Reading tādisena rogena with Se Be for text's tādisena puṇṇakammena rogena, although it would seem nevertheless that this death of theirs were due to this meritorious deed cutting short their span of life in order that they might reap the splendour to which they are now due; cp PVA 210 above. It could be that the text originally read puṇṇakammena devaloke nibbattissu in parallel with the following sentence.

* The stūpa in which the relics were housed.  
5 Reading kim kammam ākāśi puṭhe with Se Be as part of v 1; cp 1 31.  
6 Xanthochymus piktoria.  
7 paccattavedana; cp M i 337 where one of three appellations of hell is 'The Separate Feelings', paccattavedaniyo.  
8 Reading paccāma with Se Be for text's paccāmi.  
9 Reading yaśasśniyo with Se Be for text's yaśasśiyo.  
10 It is unclear whether this kamma is their own or that of the peta.  
11 Be reads vānamukham, the openings of your sores, here, such sores perhaps being the source of the foul smell.  
12 Reading punappunam with Se Be for text's puna.  
13 Reading tā devabhūtā with Se Be for text's tāvād eva bhūtā.
Reading tam pāpaṁ pakatam avayā ti tam dhātu vivanaṇṇapāpaṁ katan with Se Be for text’s tam pāpaṁ ti dhātu vivanaṇṇapāpaṁ. Pakatam, ...

11 Reading vipākaṁ phalaṁ with Be for text’s Se vipākaphalaṁ.

12 Reading tā parivārvantiyo with Be (Se omits tā) for text’s parivārvantiyo.

17 namakkāraṁ, not listed by PED.

18 So Be.
Chapter IV

GREAT CHAPTER

[Mahāvagga]
There is a Vajjian city named Vesali. This is the Ambasakkhara Peta Story. How did it originate?

When the Lord was staying in the Jeta Grove the Licchavi king named Ambasakkhara, who was of wrong view and who held the natthika doctrine,¹ ruled at Vesali. Now there was in the city of Vesali at that time a stretch of mud near the shop of a certain trader² which inconvenienced many people passing by³ there who had to jump over it, some getting splashed with mud. When he saw this the trader thought, ‘These people should not have to walk through mud’, and had the skull of an ox⁴ that was free of unpleasant smells and similar in colour to mother-of-pearl⁵ fetched and laid down there. He was virtuous by nature, not given to anger, and of gentle speech and would praise the virtues of others for what they were.⁶ Then one day when his companion was bathing and carelessly not watching he hid his clothes in fun, giving them (back only) after causing him misery. His nephew, however, brought goods stolen from other houses and deposited them in his shop. The owners of those goods who had been tracing (their goods) presented him and his nephew, along with those goods, before the king. The king ordered, ‘Cut off this one’s head but impale his nephew!’, and the king’s men did as they were commanded. When he died he arose amongst the terrestrial devas, receiving a heavenly white thoroughbred horse, as swift as thought, for having made that bridge with the ox’s head [216] and a heavenly scent exuded from his body due to his remarks in praise of those possessing virtue but he was naked on account of having hidden the cloak. It was as a consequence of his looking back on these deeds he had done in the past that he saw his impaled nephew. His heart stirred with compassion, he would mount the horse that was swift as thought and go at midnight to the place where (his nephew) was impaled and, standing not far away, would say each day, ‘Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better.’

Now at that time king Ambasakkhara was circumambulating the city by the right mounted on the back of the most stately elephant. He saw a woman who had opened a window in a certain house and who was watching the royal glory. He fell in love with her and signalled to a man seated nearby as if to say, ‘You see that house and that woman’, and in due course entered the royal residence and despatched that man saying, ‘Go and find out, I say, whether that woman has a husband or not!’ He went and when he found that she had a husband he informed the king. The king, thinking of some means by which he could make her his wife,⁷ sent
for her husband and said, 'Come, I say, and enter my service!' Out of fear he reluctantly agreed to serve the king, thinking that if he did not do what the king said the king would punish him, and went daily to serve the king. The king had food and remuneration be given him and, when a few days had passed, he said to him as he came, for service early in the morning, 'You should go, I say, to such a place as where there is a lotus pond and fetch from there some red clay and red water lilies; if you do not return this very day you will lose your life!' When he had gone he told the gate-keeper, 'All the gates are to be closed just before the sun sets.' Now that lotus pond was at least three yojanas from Vesali but even so that man, spurred on by the fear of death, reached the lotus pond with the speed of wind that same forenoon. Because he had earlier heard\(^a\) that the lotus pond was haunted by beings other than human he went fearlessly all round it wondering, 'Is there any danger here?' [217] When he saw him the guardian spirit\(^b\) of the lotus pond felt pity for him and approached him in human form saying, 'For what purpose have you come here, my good man?' He related his story to him, 'If that be so then take whatever you need', he said and disappeared after revealing his heavenly form. He collected some red clay and red water lilies there and reached the city gate just before the sun set. The gate-keeper saw him and closed the gate just as he was calling out. Unable to gain entry at the closed gate he called upon the man who was impaled close by that gate to be his witness saying, 'When I came just before the sun set they closed the gate just as I was calling out. Be it known to you that I came just in time and that there is no fault on my part.' When he heard this he said, 'I am facing death, having been executed by impalement — how can I be your witness? There is, however, a peta of great psychic power who will be coming close by me — you should call upon him as your witness.' 'But how could I see him?' 'If you stay right here you will see him for yourself.' He stayed there and saw that peta come during the middle watch of the night and called upon him as his witness. At daybreak when the king said, 'You went against my command — as king I will therefore have to punish you', he said, 'Your majesty, I did not go against your command; I came here before the sun had set.' 'Who is your witness?' He pointed out that his witness was a naked peta that came into the presence of the impaled man and, when the king said, 'How are we to believe this?', he said, 'This same night send along with me a man whom you trust.' When he heard this the king himself went along with him and stood at that place. When the peta came and said, 'Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better', he questioned him with the five verses beginning: 'There is for him no lying or sitting.' Before this, however, the verse (beginning:) 'There is a Vajjian
city named Vesāli was inserted by those rehearsing the texts with the purpose of showing their context.

1 [218] ‘There is a Vajjian city named Vesāli; it was there that the Licchavi Ambasakkha, having seen a peta outside the city, questioned him right there, desiring to know his reason.’

2 ‘There is for him no lying or sitting nor is there stepping forwards or backwards; there is for him even the pleasure of the enjoyment of clothes and (foods that) are eaten, drunk and chewed.

3 Those in the past who were his relatives, his well-wishers possessing pity who were seen and heard with him — these are now unable even to see him, his state is that of being discarded by those people.

4 Those who have fallen have no friends — friends forsake you when they learn of your lack; whilst they surround you when they see your prosperity — those who flourish have many friends.

5 Having lost all his possessions, in distress, smeared and with his body all broken up, like a dew-drop hanging, the end of his life (will come) today or tomorrow.

6 Having come to such utter distress as to be impaled on a stake of nimba wood — by what token, then, yakkha, can you say, “Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better”? ’

1 Herein there (tattha): in that Vesāli. Outside the city (nagarassa bāhiram): who was outside the city; it occurred, happened, took place, just outside the city of Vesāli. [219] Right there (tatth’ eva): right there at the place where he saw him. Him (tam): that peta. Desiring to know his reason (karaṇathiko): desiring to know the reason for his having said, ‘Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better.’

2 There is for him no lying or sitting (seyyā nisajja dayimassa attthi): there is for the person impaled no lying, the distinguishing characteristic of which is reckoned to be being stretched out on one’s back, or sitting of which the distinguishing characteristic is sitting cross-legged and so on. Nor is there stepping forwards or backwards (abhikkamo n’ attthi patikkamovā): nor is there for him even the slightest movement of which the distinguishing characteristic is stepping forwards. Even the pleasure (paricārikā sā pi): there is for him not even the pleasure of the senses, the distinguishing characteristic of which is enjoying the use of clothes and (foods that) are eaten, drunk and chewed and so on. An alternative (reading) is even maintenance (pariharanā sā pi): there is for him not even maintenance of the faculties by way of enjoying the use of (clothes and foods that) are eaten and so on, meaning he is deprived of life. Some read ‘even attention to’ (paricāranā sā pi).
3 Those in the past who were his well-wishers possessing pity that were seen and heard with him (diṭṭhasutū ānukampakā yassa ahesaṃ pubbe): those in the past who were his friends possessing kindness, both those companions who were seen together with him and those companions who were not (so) seen. Even to see (dāṭhum pi) means that these are unable even to see (him), let alone dwell (with him). His state is that of being discarded (viraṭijatto): his condition is one of having been rejected. By those people (janena tena): by those people who were his relatives and so on.

4 Those who have fallen have no friends (na oggatatassa bhavanī mittā): those who are dead, those whose consciousness has departed, indeed have no friends on account of their having gone beyond the stage where any living could be done by their friends. Friends forsake you when they learn of your lack (jahanti mittā vikalam viditvā): friends abandon you thinking, ‘Nothing is to be gained from this one,’ when they learn that a man lacks possessions even when he is living, let alone one that is dead. Whilst they surround you when they see your prosperity (attahā ca divā parivārayanti): but they surround you with affectionate talk and watch your every look (23) when they see your property, prosperity and wealth. Those who flourish have many friends (bahū mittā uggatassā mohanti): [220] those who are endowed with wealth, whose nature is to flourish and who are successful have many and numerous friends, meaning this is the way of the world.

5 Having lost all his possessions (nīnattho sabbabhogehi): having become wanting in all possessions, large and small; In distress (kiccho): in misery. Smeared (sammakkhito): with his body smeared with blood. With his body all broken up (samparibhinnagatto): with his body torn inside by the stake. Like a dew-drop hanging (ussāvabindu va palimpamāno): similar to a dew-drop hanging on the tip of a blade of grass. Today or tomorrow (aḷḷa suve): the end, the cessation, of this man’s life (will) indeed (come) either today or tomorrow, meaning it will cease to continue thereafter.

6 To be impaled (uttāsitam): to be strung upon, to be put on. On a stake of nimba wood (picumandassa sāle): on a stake made from the stem of the nimba tree. By what token? (kena vannena): for what reason? Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better (jīva bhū jīvitaṃ eva seyyo): stay alive, my good man. Why? Being alive is for you, even though impaled here, still a hundred times, a thousand times, better, finer, than the life (that awaits you) when you have fallen from here.

When questioned thus by the king the peta spoke four verses explaining what he meant:

7 ‘He was my blood-relation, I remember, in my previous life. When I
saw him I had compassion for him thinking, “Do not let that wicked character fall into hell.”

8 When he falls from here, O Licchavi, this man, this doer of evil deeds, will arise in the terrible and crowded hell that is extremely hot, severe and frightful.

9 This stake is countless times better than that hell — do not let him fall into that exceedingly miserable, severe and frightful, that exceedingly painful, hell.

10 [221] Now if he were to hear these words of mine he would be made miserable and might give up his life’s breath. Therefore I do not speak in his presence lest the end of his life (should come) through me alone.”

7 Herein blood-relation (sālohitto): being of the same blood, connected in that he is related by birth, meaning a relative. In my previous life (purimāya jātiyā): in my previous existence. Do not let that wicked character fall into hell (mā pāpadhammo nirayam pāyam): when I saw him I had compassion for him thinking, ‘Do not let this man of wicked character fall into hell, do not let him arise in hell’ — this is how it should be construed.

8 Crowded (sattussadam): crowded with beings who were doers of wicked deeds. Or, alternatively it means crowded with, heaped up one after the other with, the seven grievous tortures beginning with the five-fold pinion, to wit, the fivefold pinion, the pouring of glowing copper into the mouth, being set upon the mountain of live embers, being hurled into the Iron Cauldron, being made to enter the Sword-leaved Forest, having to descend into the Vetaṃ, and then be hurled back into the Great Hell. Extremely hot (mahābhātāpam): tortuously heated by the great fire. Severe (kaṭukaṃ): disagreeable. Frightful (boṭāṃsuṇkam): causing fear.

9 Countless times (anekabhāgena guṇena): countless times (more) to your advantage. This stake... than that hell (ayam eva sūlo nirayena tena): this stake is better than that hell which is the place where he will afterwards arise. This is the instrumental case in an ablative (sense). Exceedingly painful (ekantaṭīppaṃ) means of exceeding and acute misery, of positively immense misery.

10 Now if he were to hear these words of mine (idaṃ ca sutvā vacanām mam’ eso): what he has said, beginning with ‘When he falls from here’; if he were to hear these words of mine this man would be made miserable, would become as though made to suffer the misery of hell by these words of mine. Might give up his life’s breath (vijāheyya pānām): might renounce.
his life. Therefore (tasnā): for that reason. Lest through me alone (mā m’ekato): I do not speak these words in his presence lest the end of this man’s life (should come) through me alone. [222] Rather I just say, ‘Stay alive, my friend, for being alive is better’ – this is the meaning.

When the peta had thus explained what he meant the king uttered this verse asking permission to question the peta once more on the issue:

11 ‘The facts about this man are known; we wish to question you also about other things. If you will give us your permission we will ask you but you are not to become angry with us.’

12 ‘Surely I gave my consent’ then – there is no discussion with one not trusted. Reluctantly assuming you to be one whose word can be believed, acting thus, you may ask me what you desire and if possible (I will answer).’

These verses are the exchange of conversation between the king and the peta.

11 Herein are known (aṇñāto): are understood. We wish: icchāmase=icchāma (alternative grammatical form). Us: no-ənākam (alternative grammatical form). But you are not to become angry (na ca kuṣṭhitabbañ): you are not to get angry thinking, ‘Whatever is it that these people are asking?’

12 Surely (addhā): certainly. I gave my consent (pattā me): I gave my consent saying you might ask for information, meaning I gave permission.41 Thēn (tadā alu): at the time that I first saw you. There is no discussion with one not trusted (nācikkhana əppasannassa hoti): there is no talking with one not trusted. The trusted will only talk about anything with those they trust. However you had no trust in me then nor I in you. For this reason, having admitted this, there was no desire to talk.42 But now, reluctantly assuming you to be one whose word can be believed, quite reluctantly assuming what you say is to be believed. Acting thus (iti kātvā): for this reason. [223] You may ask me what you desire and if possible (pucchassu maññ kāman yathā visayhāñ): you may ask me about whatever matter you wish and if possible, if I am at all able, I will, however, answer in accordance with the extent of my knowledge – this is the meaning.

Having thus been given permission by the peta to question him the king uttered this verse:

13 ‘Whatever I may see with my eyes – may I believe all that. Should I see something and yet still not believe43 it then you should help45 me, yakka.’
13 This is the meaning: whatever I may see with my eyes, may I believe, may I admit, all that just as it is. Should, however, I see something and yet still not believe what you say then you should help me, yakkha, you should rebuke⁴⁶ me. Or, alternatively whatever I may see with my eyes (yaṁ kīcchāham cakkhuṇā passissāmi): whatever I may see with my eyes due to its being out of sight to another who is without eyes. May I believe all that (sabbam pi tāham abhisaddhaheyyanti): may I believe all that I see, hear or come to know for such is the trust that I have in you – this is the meaning. The meaning of the last (two) lines, however, is exactly as stated. When he heard this the peta uttered this verse:⁴⁷

14 'Let me have your solemn promise that having heard Dhamma you will acquire proper devotion.⁴⁸ As you are anxious to know and your heart is not depraved I will proclaim all the Dhamma, exactly as discerned, whether you have heard it or not.'⁴⁹

[224] From here onwards⁵⁰ are the verses of the exchange of conversation between them both:

15 'On a white caparisoned horse you go up to the one who has been impaled; this mount is marvellous and lovely to behold – of what deed is this the result?'

16 'In the centre of the city of Vesāli there was a hole in a muddy road; with devotion in my heart I took the white⁵¹ head of an ox and laid it down in that hole.

17 By placing our feet on this both we and others could get past; this mount, marvellous and lovely to behold – of that same deed is this the result.'

18 'Now your complexion is radiant in all directions and your fragrance pervades all directions; you possess great majesty and have attained this psychic power of a yakkha yet you are naked – of what is this the result?'

19 'Free from anger and with devotion constantly in my heart, I approached people with gentle speech; my heavenly complexion is continually radiant – of that same deed is this the result.

20 When I saw the fame and celebrity of those established in the Dhamma I proclaimed (them) with devotion in my heart; my heavenly fragrance continually pervades – of that same deed is this the result.

21 Whilst my companions were bathing at the bathing place I playfully and with no depravity of mind took their garments and hid them on some raised ground – for this reason I am naked and lead a troubled life.'
22 'Of him who performs a wicked deed for fun, such is the result of that deed of his; but of him who does it not for fun, what do they say is the result of that deed of his?'

23 'Those people of depraved purpose and mind and tarnished in body and speech — their lot at the breaking up of the body is, without doubt, that they go to hell.

24 But those others who, longing for a happy state, delight in giving and are of a sympathetic nature — their lot at the breaking up of the body is, without doubt, that they go to a happy state.'

14 Herein **let me have your solemn promise (saccappaṭṭhaṁ tava me sā hetaṁ):** let this promise of yours to me be a solemn one. **That having heard Dhamma you will acquire proper devotion (suttāna dhammaṁ labha suppaśādanā):** that having heard this Dhamma of which I am speaking you will acquire true devotion. **Anxious to know (aññatthiko):** anxious of understanding. **Exactly as discerned (yatā pajānanti):** exactly as another also would discern it; or, alternatively **exactly as discerned (yatā pajānam) means just as it has been realised by me.**

15 **Of what deed is this the result? (kiṁ etam kammassā ayam vipāko):** of what is this, of what indeed is this? Of what deed is this the result? Or, alternatively **etam** (untranslated) is a mere particle; of what deed — this is how it should be construed. Some read **kissa te** (the meaning remaining unaltered).

16 **In a muddy road (cikkhaḷamagge):** in a path full of mud. **A hole (narakam):** a pit. **I (took) the:** ekāham = ekam ahām (resolution of compound). **Laid it down in that hole (narakasmiṁ nikkhipati):** set it down in that muddy pit so that the mud need not be trodden on.

17 **Of that (tassa):** of making that bridge with that head of an ox.

20 **Of those established in the Dhamma (dhamme thitānām):** of those who were Dhamma-farers, of those who were even-farers. **I proclaimed (mantemi):** I spoke about, I celebrated.

21 [226] **Playfully (khidattaṁ):** intending it as a joke. **And with no depravity of mind (no ca paduttaṁ):** with no malevolence of mind as regards the owner of the garment, meaning there was no intention of stealing nor any intention to cause loss.

22 **Not for fun (aktamāno):** not intending it playfully, with the malevolence of mind due to greed and so on. **What do they say is the result of that deed of his? (kiṁ tassa kammassā vipākam āhu):** how severe do the wise say is the resulting misery of that wicked deed of his done in that way?

23 **Of depraved purpose and mind (duṭṭhasaṅkappamanā):** with thoughts
that are malevolent due to purposes involving sense desires and so on — in this way he speaks of evil conduct of mind. And tarnished in body and speech (kāyena vācāya ca saṅkiliṭṭhā): stained in body and speech by way of the destruction of living beings and so on.

24 Longing for (āsamāna): hoping for, wishing for.

When the fraction of deeds had thus been demonstrated with this analysis in brief by the peta the king uttered this verse, disbelieving what he had heard:

25 ‘How can I know this for certain, that this is the result of lovely and wicked deeds? Or what have I seen that I should believe? Or who, even, might make me believe this?’

25 Herein how can I know this for certain (tam kīṁ te ānātāya ca āham aveccā): how, for what reason, can I believe this for certain, without having to rely on others, this result of lovely and wicked deeds spoken of and analysed by you by way of, ‘Those people of depraved purpose and mind and tarnished in body and speech’ and so on and ‘But those others who, longing for a happy state’ and so forth. Or what have I seen that I should believe? (kiṁ va ānāṁ disvā abhisaddhaṁya); or what sort of evidence have I seen with my own eyes that I should lend my consent? Or who, even, might make me believe this? (ko va pi manuṁ saṅkiliṭṭhassa etam): or what learned man, what wise man, might make me believe this matter, meaning please tell me this.

[227] When be heard this the peta spoke these verses explaining the matter to him in a reasoned fashion:

26 ‘When you have seen and heard you must believe that this is the result of lovely and wicked deeds; were both lovely and wicked deeds not to exist how could beings have happy or miserable existences?

27 And were mortals not to do deeds here, lovely and wicked deeds in the world of men, there would be no beings having happy or miserable existences, (none) low and high in the world of men.

28 But since mortals do do deeds, lovely and wicked deeds in the world of men, therefore (there are) beings having happy or miserable existences, (who are) low and high in the world of men.

29 At present they say the result of deeds is twofold — those to be experienced as happiness and those as misery; the devatas gratify themselves whilst fools who do not see the duality are boiled.’

26 Herein when you have seen (disvā): when you have also seen with your own eyes. Heard (suvā): (when you have) heard the Dhamma you
can draw your own conclusion, make your own judgement in accordance therewith. Of lovely and wicked deeds: kalyānapāpasa-kalyānassa pāpasa (resolution of compound); you must believe that this happiness and this misery is the result of skilled and unskilled deeds. Were both not to exist (ubhayē asante): were the two kinds of deeds, lovely and wicked deeds, not known. How could beings have happy or miserable existences? (sīyā nu sattā sugata dūgattā vā) means how could, how might, it be a fact that these beings have gone to a happy state or to a miserable state, or that the rich are in a happy state and the poor in a miserable state? [228] He now explains the matter in accordance with, and in addition to, what has been said already by means of the two verses (beginning:) 'And (were mortals) not (to do) deeds here' and 'But since (mortals do do) deeds.'

28. Herein low and high (hīnā paññā): low and lofty in family, appearance, health, retinue and so on.

29. At present they say the result of deeds is twofold (dvay' aja kammānaṃ vipākam āhu): at present, now, they speak of, they talk of, the result of deeds of good and bad conduct as being twofold, of two kinds. What were they? He said, those to be experienced as happiness and those as misery (sukhassa dukkha ca vedāyantar): those suitable for experiencing what is agreeable and what is disagreeable. The devatās gratify themselves (tā devatāyo parāyantar): those who by virtue of their superiority acquire a result to be experienced as happiness become devatās in the devaloka and, endowed with heavenly happiness, gratify their senses. Whilst fools who do not see the duality are boiled (paccanti bālā dvayatan apassino): whilst those fools who, not seeing and not believing the twofold (aspect of the) deed and the fruition of the deed, pursue wicked deeds and, on account of those deeds, are boiled, meet with misery, in the hells and so on experiencing results to be experienced as misery.

With reference to (the king's) question, 'But why do you, believing thus in the fruition of deeds, suffer such misery?', he then uttered this verse:

30. 'There are no deeds of mine done by myself nor is there even he who, having given, would assign to me that clothing, bed and food and drink — for this reason I am naked and lead a troubled life.'

30. Herein there are no deeds of mine done by myself (na m' atti kammāni sayam katāni): since there are no meritorious deeds of mine, since none are known, done in the past by me myself by which I might now obtain clothing and so on. Nor is there even he who, having given, would assign to me (datvā pi me n' atthi so adiseyya): nor is there he who, having given a gift to recluses and brahmins, would assign, would
Dedicate, it to me saying, 'Let this be for that particular peta.' For this reason I am naked and lead a troubled life (ten' amhi naggo kasirā ca vattā); for these two kinds of reason [229] I am now naked, unclothed, and lead a troubled and miserable life, existence.

When he heard this the king, wishing him to obtain clothing and so on, uttered this verse:

31 'Could there be some means, yakkha, by which you could obtain clothing? Tell me if there is any condition for we will listen to any statement of conditions that is credible.'

31 Herein by which (yena) means could there be, might there be, some means by which you could obtain, you might obtain, clothing? If there is: yadatthi-yadi atthi (resolution of compound).

Then that peta spoke these verses telling him of the means:

32 'There is here a monk named Kappitaka, a meditative, of good morality, an arahant, freed, with well guarded senses, restrained by the Pātimokkha rules, who has become cool and arrived at the utmost view;

33 Kindly spoken, affable, well spoken, with a kind face, well versed and one who speaks very amicably, a merit-field, one dwelling in peacefulness and one worthy of donations from devas and men;

34 Tranquil, fumeless, untroubled, free from desire, emancipated, dart-free, egoless, upright, without substrata, one who has destroyed all obstacles, one who has attained the three knowledges, brilliant;

35 Unknown and not easily recognised even when seen, amongst the Vajjians they call him "sage"; yakkhas know him as free of passion, roaming about the world with a lovely nature.

36 [230] If you were to give him a pair or two, dedicating this to me, and these were to be accepted you would see me fitted out with garments.'

32 Herein named Kappitaka (Kappitako nāma): he speaks with reference to the preceptor of the venerable elder Upāli, the (one time) leader of a thousand matted-hair ascetics.69 Here (idha): nearby this Vesālī. A meditative (jhāyī): a meditative on account of the jhāna associated with the topmost fruit.70 Who has become cool (stībhūto): who has attained the cool state by allaying the feverish distress of all the deslements. Arrived at the utmost view (uttamadiṭṭhipatto): arrived at the utmost, at the topmost fruit, at right view.71

33 Kindly spoken (sakkāko): gentle. Well spoken (suvaco): meek. Well versed (svāgamo): one to whom the tradition has been properly handed
And one who speaks very amiably (sutta jimitakoca): one who is very amiably spoken, meaning one speaking in moderation. One dwelling in peacefulness (aranāvihārā): one dwelling in loving kindness.


Without substrata (nirupadhi): one who has given up the substrata such as the defilements and accumulations and so on. One who has destroyed all obstacles (sabbapapāṇaṁkhiṇo): one who has exhausted obstacles such as craving and so on. Brilliant (jutimā): brilliant with the unsurpassed brilliance of knowledge.

Unknown (appaṇnāto): not well known due to his absolutely minimum needs and his virtues being hidden. Not easily recognised (na sujāna): due to his profound nature he is not easily ascertained to be of such virtue, of such a nature and of such wisdom, even when seen. Yakkhas know him as free of passion (jānanti tam yakkhabhūtā anejan): and yakkhas know him as free of passion, free of craving and an arahant. With a lovely nature (kalyāṇaṁdhamma): with good qualities of virtue and so on.

To him (tassa): to that senior elder Kappitaka. A pair (ekam yugam): a pair of garments. Or two (duve vā): or two pairs of garments. Dedicating this to me: mam uddisitvānamam uddisitvā (alternative grammatical form). [231] And these were to be accepted (paṭiggahitāni ca tāni c'assu): if these pairs of garments were to be, should be, accepted by him. Fitted out with garments (sannaddhadussanā): my fitting out with garments completed, meaning clothed and covered with garments, with the clothes he had received.

The king then enquired about the dwelling place of the elder:

'At what place is that recluse dwelling to which we might now go and see him who today might dispel my doubt and uncertainty, this wriggling of (wrong) view?'

Herein at what place? (kasmin padese): in which place? Who today: yo m' aja=yo aja: (the words) are euphonically connected by the syllable ma.

The peta then said:

'He is seated at Kapinaccanā surrounded by many devatās; the truly named is giving a talk on Dhamma, heedful as to (the teachings of) his own teacher.'
Herein at Kapinaccana (Kapinaccanaṇyam): at the place that commonly goes by the name Kapinaccana because of the monkeys (kapimāṇa), the forest-folk’s, dancing (naccanena). The truly named (saccanāmo): correctly named, named exactly in accordance with his named qualities — a meditative, of good morality, an arahant, freed and so on.

When the peta said this the king uttered this verse, desiring to visit that elder immediately:

39 'I will now go and do what you suggested; I will clothe that recluse with a pair and if these are accepted we will see you fitted out with garments.'


Then the peta uttered this verse showing that since the elder was teaching Dhamma to those devatās it was not therefore the time to approach him:

40 'Do not approach one gone forth when it is untimely — please, O Licchavi, this is not the custom for you. Approach him afterwards, at the proper time, and see him right seated in solitude.'

40 Herein please (sādhu) is a particle of eity. 'O Licchavi, it is not the custom for you (no Licchavi n’ esa dhamma): O Licchavi king, this is not the custom for you kings, approaching at an improper time. Right there (tath’ eva): at that same place.

When the peta said this the king agreed saying, 'Very well', and returned to his residence. When the proper time had once more arrived he approached the elder having eight pairs of clothes carried along. Seated at one side he extended him a friendly greeting and said, 'Please accept these eight pairs of clothes, sir.' When he heard this the elder, in order to begin conversation with him, asked, 'Great king, you previously lacked the virtue of giving and oppressed recluses and brahmins. How come you now desire to give these excellent clothes?' When he heard this the king told him the reason, reporting to the elder his meeting with the peta and all that they each had said, and then gave him the clothes and dedicated them to the peta. By means of this the peta appeared before the elder and the king, dressed and adorned, wearing heavenly clothes and mounted on a horse. When he saw him the king was very pleased, delighted and full of joy and happiness and said, 'I have certainly seen with my own eyes the fruition of deeds. I will not now do wicked deeds, I will do only meritorious deeds', and called upon that peta to be his witness. The peta said, 'If you, O Licchavi king, henceforward abandon unrighteous ways and conduct
yourself in accordance with the Dhamma, then only will I be your witness and come into your presence. Quickly release the impaled man from the stake. Having thus regained his life and conducting himself in accordance with the Dhamma he may yet escape the misery (awaiting him). Approach the elder from time to time and listen to Dhamma; do meritorious deeds!’, [233] and then departed. The king then saluted the elder and entered the city. He very quickly called together the Licchavi people and, with their consent, released the man from the stake and ordered his physicians to make him well again. He approached the elder and asked, ‘Is it possible that for one who has done a deed that would take one to hell, sir, there might still be escape from hell?’ ‘It is possible, great king. If he does lofty, meritorious deeds he can escape’, replied the elder and then established the king in the Refuges and the Five Precepts. Thus established therein and set firm in the elder’s exhortation he became a sotāpanna. The impaled man, however, became well again and, filled with agitation, went forth amongst the monks and not long afterwards attained arahantship. Those rehearsing the texts spoke these verses, illustrating this fact:

41  ‘Saying, “So be it”, he left that place and surrounded by a group of slaves the Licchavi approached the city and went to bed in his own residence.

42  Then in the morning, when he had attended to his household duties, he bathed and drank; when the proper time arrived he chose eight pairs from a chest and that Licchavi had them carried along by the group of slaves.

43  He approached that place and saw the recluse who had become cool, seated tranquil in heart at the foot of a tree, being got back, returned from his search for food.

44  He approached him and said this to him, enquiring about his health and well being. “I am a Licchavi from Vesāli, good sir; they know me as the Licchavi Ambasakkha.

45  [234] Please accept, sir, these eight beautiful pairs of mine; I offer them to you — it is for this purpose alone that I have come here and I would be delighted if you would do so.”

46  “From afar recluses and brahmans avoid your residence; in your residence their bowls are broken and even their robes torn up.

47  Moreover, recluses are tripped up35 and made to fall head first — such is the harassment caused by you to recluses and those gone forth.

48  You gave no oil, not even with a blade of grass, nor did you show the way to those who had gone astray; you yourself would seize the
The devata, with the añjali salute as I wish to see you again, yakshaka."

58  "And you gave partial alms on my behalf, Licchavi — this was not in vain; [236] I will be your witness, a non-human with a human."

59  "You are my destiny, kinsman, support and friend and, moreover, my devatā. I beg you with the añjali salute as I wish to see you again, yakshaka."

60  "If you become one lacking faith, appear miserly or possess an erring heart, you will not be allowed to see me at all, whilst even if I see you I will not address you."
Now quickly free this (man) from the stake on account of whom I became your witness; it is by reason of the one impaled, I think, that we have become each other’s witness.

And if this (man) is quickly freed from the stake he may yet, duly engaging in (skilled) states, escape hell and that deed become one to be experienced elsewhere.

[237] Having approached Kappitaka at the proper time and shared with him (what you have) sit down close by and ask him face to face and he will proclaim on this subject.

Just approach that monk and ask him. As you are anxious to know and your heart is not depraved he will proclaim all the Dhamma, exactly as discerned, whether you have heard it or not.

When he had secretly conversed there with that non-human and made him his witness he departed and in the presence of the Licchavis he spoke to the company seated together saying,

“Listen, good sirs, to but one word of mine — I seek from you a boon by which I will obtain benefit. That man of cruel deeds has been impaled, has had punishment applied and has had the form of one who has incurred (the king’s sentence),

For as many as twenty days now with the result that that impaled (man) is now neither quite alive nor dead. I wish now to release him — may the company permit (me to act) as I think fit.”

“Quickly free this one and others — who would speak against you acting in that way? You should do what you deem necessary — the company permits (you to act) as you think fit.”

[238] He approached that place and quickly released the one impaled; “Have no fear, my friend”, he said to him and had his physicians nurse him.

He then approached Kappitaka at the proper time and shared with him (what he had); sitting down close by the Licchavi asked him right there, face to face, anxious for some means,

“That man of cruel deeds had been impaled, had had punishment applied and appears to have incurred this for as many as twenty days with the result that that impaled (man) was neither quite dead nor alive.

But now I have gone and released him, sir, for this was the word of that yakkha. Could there be any means at all by which he might not go to hell?

Tell (me), sir, if there is any condition for we will listen to any statement of conditions that is credible. Can there be no destruction of those deeds, no making an end of them here without their being experienced?”
“If he should duly engage in (skilled) states, with diligence both day and night, he may yet escape hell and that deed become one to be experienced elsewhere.”

“The facts about this man are known. Please have pity on me too now, sir. Advise me, exhort me, Extremely Wise One, in such a way that I might not go to hell.”

“You should go for refuge this very day to the Buddha, [239] the Dhamma and the Saṅgha with devotion in your heart; likewise you should undertake the Five Precepts, unbroken and in their entirety.

You should forthwith refrain from destroying living beings and shun in this world what is not given; you should not be one to drink intoxicating drinks nor should you speak a lie, whilst you should be content with your own wife.

And you should undertake these skilled deeds leading to happiness that are ariyan and fulfilled by means of the eightfold vow.

To the upright you should give with a devout heart robes and almsfood, requisites and lodging, food and drink, solid food, clothing and lodging.

And you should satisfy with food and drink monks who are endowed with virtue, free of lust and learned — merit continually grows up.

Duly engaging thus in (skilled) states, with diligence both day and night, you may yet escape hell and that deed become one to be experienced elsewhere.”

“I will go for refuge this very day to the Buddha, the Dhamma and the Saṅgha with devotion in my heart; likewise I will undertake the Five Precepts, unbroken and in their entirety.

I will forthwith refrain from destroying living beings and shun in this world what is not given; I will not be one to drink intoxicating drinks, nor will I speak a lie, whilst I will be content with my own wife.

I will undertake skilled deeds leading to happiness that are approached by way of the ariyan eightfold vow:

[240] Robes and almsfood, requisites and lodging, food and drink, solid food, clothing and lodging will I give, without faltering and devoted to the Teaching of the Buddhas, to monks who are endowed with virtue, free of lust and learned.”

Such a one is the Licchavi Ambasakkhara — a layfollower in Vesali who possesses faith, who is gentle and helpful and who now supports the order of monks with due care.

And the one impaled became well again and of his own accord happily went into the homeless state; on account of Kappitaka, the
noblest of monks, both attained the fruits that result from the life of a recluse.\textsuperscript{108}

83 Association with good and discerning worthy men is of such great fruit that the one impaled reached the topmost fruit whilst Ambasakkhara a lesser fruit.'

41 Herein went to bed: vās' upagañchittha=vās' upagañchi (resolution of compound in alternative grammatical form).

42 His household duties (gihikiccāni): duties concerning the family property and estates that have to be attended to by one residing at home. He chose (viceyya): he chose in order to take the finest clothes.

43 Got back (paṭikkantamt): got back from his almsround. For this reason he said, 'returned from his search for food'.

44 Said (avoca): said, 'I am a Licchavi from Vesāli, good sir', and so on.

46 Torn up: vipāñayanti=vipāñayanti\textsuperscript{109} (alternative grammatical form).

47 Are tripped up (pādak' udārikāhi): with axes (kuthārthi) known as feet (pādesarikārhi).\textsuperscript{110} Made to fall (pātāyanti): caused to fall down.\textsuperscript{111}

48 [241] With a blade of grass (tiṣena): not even with the tip of a blade of grass. Nor did you show the way to those who had gone astray (mūlhassa maggam pi na pāvadasi): nor did you tell the way to those who had lost their way but thought, 'Just let that man wander about here and there'; this king is indeed unreliable. You yourself would seize (sayam ādiyasi): you yourself would snatch and take the staff from the hand of a blind man. You now share (samvibhāgam karosi): you now share, giving some of the things meant for your own use.

49 I admit to what you say, sir (paccemi bhante yam tvam vadesi): I agree with what you say such as 'in your residence' (their bowls are broken' and so on. He points out that all those things were done or caused to be done by him. Yet even this (etam pi): yet even this was done, being meant to be playful.

50 In play: khidā=khidāya (alternative grammatical form). Having pursued (pasavirā): having accumulated. Experiences (vedetii): undergoes. His enjoyment being incomplete (asamattabhogii): his enjoyment lacking fulfilment; to show this same lack of fulfilment in his enjoyment 'He has a boyish youthfulness' and so on was said. His own nakedness (nagganiyassa): his state of nakedness. Now what could be more miserable for him than that? (kim su tato dukkhatar' asa hoti): now what indeed could be more miserable for that peta than that state of nakedness?

51 May this donation reach that yakkha (yakkhass' im' āgacchantu dakkhipāyo): may this donation of clothes that I am giving be of benefit to that peta.
52. Is praised in many ways (bahudhā pasastham): is extolled in various ways by Buddhas and so on. May this be of an inexhaustible nature (akkhayadhammam atthu): let this be of an indestructible nature.
53. Performed the ablution (ācamayitvā): rinsed his mouth, having previously washed his hands and feet.
54. Anointed with the choicest sandalwood (candanasāralittam): anointed with the essence of sandalwood. With the finest complexion (ulārarāṇam): with an excellent appearance. Surrounded (parivāritam): surrounded by attendants with agreeable habits. Attained to the great psychic power of a yakkha (yakkhamahiddhipattam): standing having attained the great psychic power of a yakkha, the (great) psychic power of a deva.
55. Said this to him: tamenamavoca tam enam avoca (resolution of compound).
56. You gave partial alms (ekadesam adāsi): he speaks with reference to the gift of clothes which forms a part of the four requisites. Witness (sakkhim): of the nature of a witness.
57. [242] You are my: mamā=mē āsi (resolution of compound in alternative grammatical form). My devatā (devatā me): you are my devatā — this is how it should be construed.
58. Possess an erring heart (vippatipamīcitlo): with a heart following wrong views, meaning following a wrong path after abandoning the right path.
59. On account of whom (yato nidānām): because of whom, by reason of coming into whose presence.
60. Shared (saṁvibajitvā): shared as a gift. Sit down close by and ask him face to face (sayam mukhena upanisajja puccha): without sending other men, sit down close by and just ask him to his face.
61. Seated together (saṁnissamā): seated after coming together.
62. I will obtain benefit (labhisāma attham): I will obtain the benefit I desire. Has had punishment applied (pamhitamklo): has had physical punishment rendered. Has had the form of one who has incurred (anupattamīpā): has been in the condition of one who has incurred the king's sentence.
63. As many as twenty days (yestirattimattā) means that as many as twenty days have passed. I... him: tāham=tam aham (resolution of compound): As I think fit (yathā matim): exactly as it pleases me.
64. This one and others (etaṁ ca aṁśa ca): this impaled man and those others to whom the king's punishment has been applied. Quickly free (labhum pamunca): release forthwith. Who would speak against you? (ko tam vadetha): who in this kingdom of Vajji might say, 'Do not set him free', to one acting in such a just way as that, meaning no one would be allowed to speak like this.
And (had) his physicians: tikicchakānaṇī ca=tikicchake ca (alternative grammatical form).

This was the word of (that) yakkha (yakkhassa vaco): this was what the peta had to say. He points out, ‘I acted thus, in accordance with what that peta had to say, sir.’

(Skilled) states (dhammāni): meritorious states able to overcome previously done wicked deeds. That deed become one to be experienced elsewhere (kammaṇi sīyā aṇātra vedanīyaṃ): the wicked deed that was to be experienced on arising become an aḥosi deed, whilst that that was to be experienced in some other mode become one whose fruit is to be experienced elsewhere, in some (still) other mode, meaning (only) when samsāra continues to roll (for him).

[243] And . . . these (imaṇi ca): this is said with reference to what is near or in sight due to its being said by him himself. That are ariyan and fulfilled by means of the eightfold vow (ariyam atthangavarenu upetaṃ): the highest Upasatha precepts that are fulfilled, engaged in, by means of the eightfold (vow of) refraining from destroying living beings and so on and that are ariyan in the sense that they are pure. Skilled deeds (kusalam): blameless deeds. Leading to happiness (sukhundriyaṃ): resulting in happiness.

Merit continually grows up (sādā puṇṇam pavaḍḍhati): when one has done a meritorious deed only once one does not become wholly satisfied thinking, ‘To that extent it is enough’, and whilst one is fulfilling good conduct again and again one’s merit is increasing all the time. Alternatively the meaning is that while one is fulfilling good conduct again and again the fruits of one’s meritorious deeds, the merit so called, grow, are added to, one after the other.

When the elder had thus spoken the king was terrified by the misery of the states of woe and with an increasing devotion in the Three Jewels and in meritorious states he said, ‘I will go for refuge this very day to the Buddha’ and so on, henceforward undertaking the Refuges and the Precepts.

Herein such a one (etādiso): such as the aforesaid kind. A layfollower in Vesālī (Vesālīyaṃ arīṇatāro upāsako): he has become a layfollower amongst countless thousands in Vesālī. Who possesses faith (saddho) and so on: this is said to show the difference from his earlier nature in that he (now) sits down together with a lovely friend and so on; for previously he lacked faith, was rough and insulting to monks and did not support the Saṅgha, whereas now he possesses faith and is gentle and now supports the order of monks with due care. In this connection helpful (kārakaro): one who renders a service.

Both (ubho pi): the two, the one impaled and the king. Attained the
fruits that result from the life of a recluse (samañña-phalani ajjhagam): attained the fruits that result from the life of a recluse in accordance with their deserts.\(^{125}\) It was to show this accordance with their deserts\(^{125}\) that 'the one impaled reached the topmost fruit whilst Ambasakkha was said.

88 Herein a lesser fruit (phalam kanittham): he spoke with reference to the sotāpatti-fruit.

That which has not here been analysed as to its meaning is, however, quite easily understood.

The venerable Mahākappitaka proceeded to Sāvatthi to salute the Teacher and raised with the Lord the issue of what had thus been said between the king,\(^{126}\) the peta and himself. [244] The Teacher took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

---

\(^1\) Cp PV A 99.

\(^2\) Reading vāpṛṣassa āpānasampe with Se Be for text’s vānijassāpānasampe.

\(^3\) Reading atṭkamantā with Se Be for text’s atṭkamanto.

\(^4\) Gosīsattāṁ, not an excellent kind of sandalwood as suggested by PED.

\(^5\) sakkhavapānasampe; cp M 158 = A iii 324; J iii 477.

\(^6\) yathābhūtāṁ.

\(^7\) Cp KS i 102 n. 1 for similar royal designs on other men’s wives.

\(^8\) Reading sutattā bhayena with Se Be for text’s sutattabhāyena.

\(^9\) amanuṣso, literally non-human.

\(^10\) Reading imassa with Se Be for text’s tam assa.

\(^11\) Reading daṭṭhum pi te ‘dāni na tam labhanti with Se Be for text’s daṭṭhum pi dāni na labhanti tam pi.

\(^12\) Reading viṭṭhitatto with Be for text’s Se viṭṭhitatto.

\(^13\) vikalam; PED sv should be amended to read ‘Pv IV.1’ (=bhoga; PVa 219).

\(^14\) Reading kiccho with Se Be for text’s kicco.

\(^15\) palimapamano, so all texts but cp PED sv palipatti.

\(^16\) picumandassa (Se Be pucumandasa), the margosa, Azadirachta Indica; PED sv pico mis-spells Azadirachtha.

\(^17\) Reading nagarassa bahi bhavam... jātam pavattam sambandham with Se Be for text’s nagarassa bāhirabhagam... jātam pavattam.

\(^18\) Reading vutta-atthassa with Be for text’s vutta atthassa; Se reads vuttassa atthassa.

\(^19\) Cp A ii 244f, where this is said to be the way in which petas lie.

\(^20\) Reading appamattakam pi with Se Be for text’s appamattam pi.

\(^21\) Reading imassa nathi, Paricārika tā pi ti yā asita- with Se Be for text’s imassa naththi paricārikasāmiḥtiyā, Asita-.

\(^22\) indriyānam.

\(^23\) Reading -lakkaṇa indriyānam with Se Be for text’s -lakkaṇa-indriyānam.

\(^24\) Reading -khāyita with Se Be and verse for text’s -khāditā.

\(^25\) Be adds pātho here.

\(^26\) Text wrongly begins a new sentence with vigatajñitattā.

\(^27\) Reading pasissutam pi na labhanti kuto with Se Be for text’s pasissutam pi. Na labhanti ti kuto.
mukhulloki; cp D i 60.
Reading parihaṇṇatho. Kiccho tidukkhito with Se Be for text's parihaṇṇatho kicco.
Reading dukkhaṭakammakārī with Se (Be kaṭa-) for text's dukkhaṭakammakārī.
These tortures are to be endured one after the other in an endless cycle; cp M iii 184ff.
Cp M ii 183: they drive a red-hot iron stake through each hand and foot and a red-hot iron stake through the middle of his breast.
Reading paṅcaviṭṭhabhandhanam, mukhe tattalohasecanam with Se Be for text's paṅcaviṭṭhabhandhanamukhe tatta.
Cp Milh 303.
See PvA 280 and cp J iii 22, 43, iv 493, v 268; SnA 59, 480.
Cp J vi 250; see also Mārk. Pur. xii 24ff., MBh xii 321, Manu iv 90, xii 75.
A river of caustic water; see MLS iii 129 n. 1.
Reading paricayeva with Se Be for text's parivajeyya.
Reading paṭīdā with Se Be for text's paṭīdā.
Reading nācikkhanā with Se Be for text's nācikkhanā.
Reading paṭīdā me ti ṅāṇavasena mayham pučchassu ti paṭīdānā okāsādānan ti attho with Se Be for text's paṭīdānā ti ṅāṇavasena mayham pučchassu ti, okāsādānan ti attho.
Text wrongly reads acikkhanā here.
This episode seems wanting in the narrative above.
Reading saddahayaṃ with Se Be for text's saddahayaṃ.
Reading nissaya-kammam as recommended by PED sv nissya for all texts' nissaya-kammam; cp A i 99, Vin i 49. PED sv nissaya wrongly refers to this as v 1.
Reading niggahakammam with Se Be for text's niggahā.
Reading Tām sutvā peto gāthām āha with Be for text's Se Tām sutvā peto.
Reading labha supassaṃ with Be for text's labhasu-pasadā (Se labhasupada).
Reading c' āpi with Se Be for text's vā pī.
Reading ito param with Be; text Se omit.
Reading setam with Se Be for text's setam.
Sangāhitaṭṭabhāvā, cp v 60; see also Vv 11ś and VvA 59.
This sense has been followed in the verse.
Text wrongly reads cākkhallapame here.
See e.g. M i 285ff.
Reading dusssāmikā na dusssātikovā avaharanādhippoṇyo āpi vināsādhippoṇyo with Be (Se) for text's dusssāmikāna dūsatsātikovā avaharanādhippoṇyo nāpi vināsādhippoṇyo.
lobha which together with dosa, ill will, and moha, delusion, forms the three akusalamūlas, the roots of unskilled deeds.
Reading tassa tathā kathā paṭākamassā with Be (Se) for text's tassa yathā maññā kathā paṭākamassā.
Reading devatāyyo paricārayanti with Se Be for text's devatā parivārayanti.
paccanti; Se Be read paccanti here.
Text wrongly brings a new sentence here.
The words Idāni yathā vuttam attham at the foot of PvA 227 are to be read as the opening words of the sentence at the top of the following page.
Reading vyātirikato with Se Be for text's vyātirikato.
Reading Kin tan ti āha: with Se Be for text’s Kin tan ti āha.
Cp PvA 152 and Nett 28 (quoted PED sv anubhavana).
Se Be add devalokā ti here.
Reading paricārenti with Be (Se paricārayanti) for text’s parivārenti.
*i.e., knowledge of one’s former lives, knowledge of the kammically conditioned rebirth of others and the knowledge as to the certainty of one’s liberation; see e.g. Mi 22ff.
Jaṭilassassasa abhantare, cp P'vA 21, VA iv 937 and DPPN 1524.

i.e. arahantship; cp Asl 12.

Reading sammaśādhiṃ patto with Se Be for text's sammaśādhipattd.

suṣṭhū īgaśāgamo; cp discussion at B of Disc ii 71 n. 1.

Text reads suṣṭhū paṭīmuttaḥ pañcāco muddabhāpi ti attho; whilst Se has suṣṭhū paṭīmuttaḥ katho muddabhāpi ti attho. I take paṭīmuttaka as a variant of paṭīmankṣa (found at M 1386) and muddabhāpi/muddabhāpi as equivalent to muntabhāpi (cp Thag 2 and cty at EV i 117). I follow Be here. PED entry sv paṭīmuttaka is wrong and both Jātaka references cited mean 'put on' (of clothes, ornaments).

vigataśādhipatādhūmo.

sabbabhavehī vīmutto; cp A ii 133f. where bhava, becoming, is apparently distinguished from uppatti, arising.

kilesābhisaṅkharādi-upadhippahāyi; probably the four listed at SnA 44, 436 are intended here, that is, the kāma-, khandha-, kilesa- and abhisankhāra-upadhīs.

Reading paṭīchannagunanāyā ca na pākaṭo with Se Be for text's guṇattāyā na pākaṭo ca.

So Se Be; text mis-spells udisitvā.

Reading laddhavatthāṃ nivatthapārutadussan ti attho with Se Be for text's laddhavatthāṃ hurtā. Nivatthā-

It might therefore be better to transliterate as yo-m-aļa.

Reading acerake with Be for text's averake; not listed by PED which, sv ācera, claims this contracted form is peculiar to the Jātakas but see also Vin i 359. (Se reads accherake.)

Reading vānaṇānaṃ with Se Be for text's vā narāṇaṃ. The reading of our text may have misled Malalasekera to suppose that men also danced there; see DPPN i 513 where it is suggested that Kapinacca may have been a name for the cemetery near Vesāli where Kāpittaka lived. Cp Vin iv 308.

Cp EV i 207 on Thag 533.

Reading atha peto devatānaṃ therā dhammaṃ deseti tasmā with Se Be for text's atha peto tasmā therā dhammaṃ deseti. Tasmā.

dhamma.

kāle, which also means early in the day and the proper time according to v 42.

adhamma.

Readings are uncertain here. Text reads pādakudārikāhī whereas Se Be read kuthārikāhī, similar discrepancies recurring in the cty. In the copy of the text used by me F. L. Woodward had written a note suggesting it be taken as pādak udārikāhi, (are made to fall) by means of lifted feet, that is, tripped up. The expression pādakudārikāhī avamāra may be compared with the more common uddhampādam avamsirām - feet up, head down - at such places as Vv 521, J i 233, Nā 404 etc. If in the cty one reads with the gloss of Be, pādasaṅkhāthāhi kuthāthi, with axes known as feet, it is possible to detect a pun in which the tripping up of recluses (with the feet) is likened to the falling of trees (with axes).

Se Be read khiddāya yakko for text's khiddāya kho whereas all read khiddā ti khiddāya in the cty; perhaps we should therefore read khiddā yakko here - cp following verse.

Geheim seems to have misread sakkāhi, here and throughout, as sakhiṃ.

Reading tvam n' eva mān laccasi dassanāya disvā ca tām nā pi ca ālapissam with Be for text's (o Se) ten' eva mān laccasi dassanāya disvā ca tām nāpi ca ālapissam.

Reading bhaddante with Be (Se bhaddante) for text's bhaddante te; Se Be read this line with the following verse.

Geheim has 'formed intimate relations' and 'made mutual friendship' respectively here; cp n. 90.
Reading paññātā with Sā Be for text's paññātā.

Reading upāya with Sā Be for text's upāya.

Reading upāya with Sā Be for text's upāya.

Reading upāya with Sā Be for text's upāya.

Reading hetuvaco with Sā Be and v. 31 for text's hetuvaco.

Not, as Gehman suggests, although we do not understand it.

Reading mucceyya so nīrayā ca with Sā Be and v. 62 for text's mucceyya so nīrayā va.

Reading paññātā with Sā Be for text's paññātā.

Reading v. 76–77 recur at v. 83ff.; v. 77 also at IV 19 below except that the latter reads abhaññi for abhāññi here, whilst Sā reads abhāññi and Be abhaññi at both places.

Reading aṭṭhāgavaṃ upetā with Sā Be for text's aṭṭhāgavaṃ upetā here and at v. 84.

sāmaññaphalañi; cp the Sāmaññaphala Sutta (D i 47ff.) which is devoted to this subject and where such fruits are those connected with arahantship. Elsewhere mention may be found of four such fruits, those of becoming a sotāpanna, once-returner (cp v. 71), non-returner and arahant — D iii 227, 277; S v 25; Mn 344, 358 etc. Whilst the city below states Ambakākkhara became a sotāpanna, it is not clear that he ever went forth and thus was no recluse.

So Sā for text's vipātayanti=vipāṭayanti; Be reads vidālayanti=vipālāyanti. Cp PED s. vipāṭetil and vipālalati.

See n. 88.

Reading paripātayanti with Sā Be for text's pasāriyanti.

ṭhitañ, or perhaps stationed, since the verse claims he is on a horse.

Be alone retains the compound unresolved; Sā reads tamoñam avoca and text separates completely when giving this in the verse itself.

dhammiyam, in accordance with the Dhamma, here contrasted with the wrong path, adhammiyam.

Text wrongly begins a new sentence with ativattā.

Reading paññātā with Sā Be for text's paññātā.

Reading na pamoçchi with Sā Be for text's pamoçchi.

dhammiyakammam.

Reading puññadhāmme with Sā Be for text's puññadhāmme.

M iii 214 says of a person committing a given deed that he undergoes its fruition which arises here and now or in another mode (diṭṭhe va dhammo vipākam paññamañvedetā uppañjam (v. uppañjam) va apan vā pariyya). A iii 415, however, seems to say that such fruition is threefold: ‘Monks, I say that the fruition of deeds is threefold (tivākkhāhān bhikkhave kammānan vipākam vadāmi) but then continues: diṭṭhī eva dhammo uppañja (v. uppañjam) va apana vā pariyya, more reminiscent of the apparently twofold fruition above. Here notes (GS iii 294 n. 3) that ‘S.e. for eva reads va. But if tivikha, we must read pariyya vā (?). It is worth noting that the reading tivikha was not one supported by all MSS, and that the v. uppañjam may have been the more authentic, especially given the Majjhima passage. The later tradition came to understand such fruition as threefold and this no doubt accounts for the Sā v. for eva since such fruition was now thought to arise either (1) diṭṭhī vā dhammo, here and now, in this same life; (2) uppañja vā, upon arising in the next life; or (3) apara vā pariyya, in some other mode, usually a still later life. This was in turn combined with the theory of volitions being divisible into seven javana-moments. A deed performed during the first of these javana-moments was known as a
IV.2] SERISSAKA 253

ditthadhamma-vedanlya-kamma, a deed to be experienced in this same life; during
the last javana-moment as an upapajja-vedanlya-kamma, a deed to be experienced
upon arising in the next life; whilst during the five intervening javana-moments as an
aparaparjya-vedanlya-kamma, a deed to be experienced in still later lives (or in some
other mode). The strength of the first and last of these javana-moments is weaker
than that of the other five with the result that if a deed should for some reason or
other not find the conditions necessary for its fruition during the period stipulated,
that deed becomes ahosi, or lapsed, and no longer capable of fruition. This does not,
however, apply in the case of an aparaparjya-vedanlya-kamma which can never
become ahosi. Dhammapâla's point here is that a meritorious or skilled deed may
have the consequence of preventing the conditions necessary for the fruition of a
wicked deed of types (1) and (2) from prevailing during the period stipulated for its
fruition, thereby rendering that deed ahosi and incapable of fruition either then or in
the future. Similarly a meritorious or skilled deed may postpone, or alter the mode
of experience of, a deed of type (3) but cannot prevent its fruition entirely except
when a person attains liberation during such postponement. See Vism xix 14; Com-
pendium p. 44f., 144f.; Encyclopaedia of Buddhism sv. ahosi, aparaparjya etc.

Reading paccakkham và ti with Se Be for text's paccakkham và.

Reading aparittuṭṭho with Be for text's acchariyatutṭho (Se acchariyatutṭho),
none of these are listed by PED, CPD or Childers.

Reading apayadukkhato with Se Be for text's upayadukkhato.

Reading saddho ti ādikaly with Be Be for text's saddho ti ādikaly.

Reading yathārahā for text's yathā raham.

Reading raññā with Se Be for text's rañño.

IV.2 EXPOSITION OF THE SERISSAKA PETA STORY
[Serissakapetavatthuvaññanā]

‘Listen’ (where the meeting) between the yaktha and the traders.’ This
is the Serissaka Peta Story.

Since there is no difference between this and the Serissaka Mansion
Story,3 what was to be said herein with respect to the arisen need and to
the verses is therefore just as that already given in the Exposition of the
Mansion Stories (section) of this Clarification4 of the Intrinsic Meaning. It
should therefore be understood exactly as already given therein.

1 Be alone reads Serisaka.
2 suṇātha, so text Se; Be Vv VvA all read supatha.
3 Vv 84, Stories of the Mansions pp. 147–154.
4 Paramatthavibbānaviyam; Se Be both read dipaniyam, as does text at PVA 257,
but see the remarks at p. iv of Stories of the Departed, 1974 edition.
IV.3 EXPOSITION OF THE NANDAKA PETA STORY
[Nandakapetavatthuvaṭṭanā]

‘The king named Piṅgalaka.’ This is the Nandaka Peta Story. How did it originate?

After a lapse of two hundred years from the Teacher’s Parinibbāna there was in the realm of Suraṭṭha a king named Piṅgala. His general, named Nandaka, was of wrong view and perverted outlook and went around professing the misconception that ‘There is no such thing as alms . . . ’ and so on. His daughter, named Uttarā, was a lay follower and had been given (in marriage) to a suitable family. Now when Nandaka died he arose as a vimānapeta in a huge banyan tree in the Viñjha forest. At his death Uttarā gave to an elder in whom the āsava were destroyed a plate full of lovely scented and tasty cakes made from junket and a water-pot that was filled with clean, cool and fragrant water and dedicated them saying, ‘May this donation be of benefit to my father.’ By means of that gift there appeared to him heavenly water and an unlimited quantity of cakes. When he saw these he thought, ‘I surely did a wicked deed in making the people adopt the misconception that “There is no such thing as alms . . . ” and so on. However king Piṅgala has now gone to give advice to king Dhammasoka and will return when he has given this to him. Well then, I had better dispel that natthika view.’ Not long afterwards, as king Piṅgala was going along the road, returning after having given advice to king Dhammasoka, [245] the peta brought it about that the road led towards his dwelling place. The king went along that road about noon. As he went along the road before him could be seen but behind him it disappeared. When the man who was hindmost of all saw the road had disappeared he was frightened and, crying out in distress, ran and informed the king. When he heard this the king, frightened and his heart agitated, stood on the back of his elephant surveying the four directions. When he saw the peta’s banyan tree dwelling he went towards it accompanied by the four divisions of his army. When in due course the king reached that place the peta, all decorated and adorned, approached the king and extended him a friendly greeting and had cakes and water served to him. The king and his servants bathed, ate the cakes and drank the water and when his fatigue from the journey had subsided he asked the peta, ‘Are you a devatā, a gandhabba?’ and so on. When the peta had told him his story right from the beginning and had rid the king of his wrong outlook he established him in the Refuges and the Precepts. To illustrate this those rehearsing the texts uttered these verses:

1 ‘The king named Piṅgalaka, who was ruler of the Suraṭṭha people,
was returning once more to Suraṭṭha after having gone in attendance on the Moriyas. 10

2 In the noonday heat the king came upon a mire and saw a delightful road, that peta’s sandy path. 11

3 The king addressed his coachman saying, "This road is delightful, peaceful, safe and augurs well — coachman, let us go along this from here to the vicinity of the Suraṭṭhas." 12

4 The Suraṭṭha set out this way together with the four divisions of his army. A man who appeared hurried 13 said this to the Suraṭṭha.

5 [246] "We have taken a wrong path that is dreadful and hair-raising — in front the road can be seen but behind it is not to be seen. We have taken a wrong path into company with Yama’s men; a non-human stench blows and a frightful wailing is to be heard."

6 The Suraṭṭha king, agitated, said this to his coachman, "We have taken a wrong path that is dreadful and hair-raising — in front the road can be seen but behind it is not to be seen. We have taken a wrong path into company with Yama’s men; a non-human stench blows and a frightful wailing is to be heard."

7 He climbed onto an elephant’s back and, surveying the four directions, he saw a banyan tree, a "leg-drinker", that was full of shade, similar in appearance to a black cloud, resembling the majesty of a thunder cloud. 14

8 The king addressed his coachman saying, "What is this huge thing that is seen, similar in appearance to a black cloud, resembling the majesty of a thunder cloud?"

9 "It is a banyan, great king, a ‘leg-drinker’, that is full of shade, similar in appearance to a black cloud, resembling the majesty of a thunder cloud."

10 The Suraṭṭha set out in the direction in which that huge thing was seen, similar in appearance to a black cloud, resembling the majesty of a thunder cloud.

11 The king got down from the elephant’s back and went towards the tree and sat down at the foot of the tree together with his adviser and attendants and saw a full water-pot and some delicious cakes.

12 A man with the appearance of a deva, all decorated and adorned, approached and said this to the Suraṭṭha king.

13 "You are welcome, great king, you are truly not ill-come; 15 drink the water, your majesty, and eat the cakes, O tamer of your enemies."

14 The king together with his adviser and attendants drank the water and ate the cakes; after drinking the Suraṭṭha said this,
“Are you a devatā, a gandhabba or Sakka Purīndada? Not recognising you we ask you how we might recognise you.”

“I am no deva, nor gandhabba, nor even Sakka Purīndada — I am a peta, great king, come here from Suraṭṭha.”

“What was your behaviour, what your conduct, when formerly in Suraṭṭha — by means of what Brahma-sārūpa comes this majesty of yours?”

Hear this, great king, O tamer of your enemies and extender of the realm, and also you advisers, attendants and that brahmin, that chief priest:

I am of Suraṭṭha, your majesty, and was a man with a wicked mind, being of wrong views and badly behaved, miserly and abusive.

I had the habit of obstructing many people who were giving and performing — whilst others were giving I acted as an obstacle (saying),

‘There is no result from giving; from where would come the fruit of self-restraint? There is indeed no Teacher, so who will tame the untamed?’

All beings are exactly the same — why then honour one’s superiors? There is no power or effort, so what is the use of man’s exertion?

There is indeed no fruit from giving — one bearing hostility cannot be cleansed; the mortal gets what is his to get through the vicissitudes of fate.

There is neither mother, father nor brother; there is no world beyond this one. There is no given, there is no sacrificial offering — nothing well laid down is known.

If one should kill a man or cut off another’s head it is not a case of someone killing somebody — (a sword has only penetrated) into the interval between seven (elementary substances).

Indestructible and indivisible is the soul; it is octagonal, or spherical like a ball, and five hundred yojanas (high) — who is then capable of destroying the soul?

Just as a ball of thread when cast forth runs on unwinding itself, even so in that same way does the soul run on unwinding itself.

Just as one leaves one village and enters another village, even so in that same way does the soul enter another body.

Just as one leaves one house and enters another house, even so in that same way does the soul enter another body.

For eighty-four hundred thousand great aeons both the foolish and the wise are cast about in saṃsāra before they make an end of misery.
33 Happiness and misery are measured by the dōga and the basket; the Conqueror knows all whilst other people are bewildered.'
34 I was in the past of such a view;²¹ I was bewildered and enveloped by delusion, being of wrong views and badly behaved, miserly and abusive.
35 This side of six months will come my death and down to the exceedingly severe and terrible hell will I fall.
36 Four-cornered and with four gates, it is divided into equal portions, encircled by an iron wall, with a roof of iron above.
37 Its incandescent floor is made of glowing iron; all around a hundred yojanas it spreads; forever standing.
38 After a hundred thousand years a sound is straightway heard — this is a lakkha,²² great king, after one hundredth of a koṭi of years.
39 For a hundred thousand koṭis people who are of wrong views, who are badly behaved and who are scoffers at the ariyans are boiled in hell.
40 There for a long time I will experience painful feelings as the fruit of my wicked deeds — for this reason I am exceedingly sorrowful.
41 [249] Hear this, great king, O tamer of your enemies and extender of the realm, my blessings be to you. I have a daughter Uttarā, great king,
42 Who does auspicious deeds and who is devoted to the Precepts and Upasatha, restrained, open-handed, affable and unselfish.
43 She undertakes the Precepts unbroken and is a daughter-in-law to those of another family. She is a layfollower of the Sakyān Sage, the Buddha, the Glorious One.
44 A monk endowed with virtue, with downcast eyes, possessing mindfulness, his (sense-)doors guarded, well controlled, entered the village in search of alms on an uninterrupted almsround and came to her dwelling.
45 My blessings be to you, great king. When Uttarā saw him she gave him a full water-pot and some delicious cakes saying, 'My father has died, sir; may this be of benefit to him.'
46 Immediately she dedicated this the result came into being — I enjoy the gratification of all my desires just like king Vessavaṇa.²³
47 Hear this, great king, O tamer of your enemies and extender of the realm — you, O tamer of your enemies, and your family should go for refuge to the Buddha, the Buddha who in this world together with its devas is pronounced supreme.²⁴
48 You, O tamer of your enemies, and your family should go for refuge to the Dhamma, the eightfold path by means of which they reach the Deathless.²⁵
You desire my good, yakkha, you desire my welfare, devatā; I will do what you say — you are my teacher.  

I will go for refuge to the Buddha, to the Dhamma and I will also go for refuge to the unsurpassed Saṅgha for deva and man.  

I will forthwith refrain from destroying living beings and shun in this world what is not given; I will not be one to drink intoxicating drinks nor will I speak a lie and I will be content with my own wife.  

I will shake off, as into a strong wind or into a swiftly flowing river, I will reject that wicked view, being devoted to the Teaching of the Buddhas.  

When the Soraṭṭha had said this, he renounced his wicked outlook, paid homage to the Lord and climbed into his carriage facing east.  

Herein the king named Piṅgalaka, who was ruler of the Suraṭṭha people (rāja Piṅgalako nāma Suraṭṭhānāṃ adhipati alu); the king who was lord of the region of Suraṭṭha was commonly known by the name of Piṅgala due to the redness (piṅgala) of his eyes. On the Moriyas (Moriyānāṃ); on the Moriya kings, it is said with reference to Dhammāsoka. Was returning once more to Suraṭṭha (Suraṭṭham punar āgamā); he was returning on the road leading to Suraṭṭha, in the direction of the realm of Suraṭṭha.  

A mire (puṇikāṃ); soft ground. Sandy path (vaṇṇupathāṇām); the road the peta had created over that soft ground.  

Peaceful (khemo); free of danger. Safe (sovatthiko); providing a state of security. Augus well (sīva); free of misfortune. From here to the vicinity of the Suraṭṭhas (Suraṭṭhānāṃ sāntike ito): going along this road we (will come) quite near to the realm of Suraṭṭha.  

The Soraṭṭha (Soraṭṭho); the ruler of Suraṭṭha. Who appeared flurried (ubbiggartāpo); who was in a terrified state.  

Dreadful (bhīṃsanaṃ); [251] causes fear. Hair-raising (lomahaṃsanaṃ); causes the hair to bristle on account of its dreadful nature.  

Into company with Yama's men (Yamapurisānāṃ sāntike); we are faring amidst the petas. A non-human stench blows (amānuso vāyati gandho); the bodily stench of the petas blows. A frightful wailing is to be
heard (ghoso sūyati dānīyo): a more terrible sound is to be heard (only) from the creatures who are being punished in the separate hells.

9 A 'leg-drinker' (pādapanā): this tree has acquired the name 'leg-drinker' through drinking water through the fibres of its roots which resemble legs. That was full of shade: chāyāsampannam=ṣampannam chāyanā (resolution of compound). Similar in appearance to a black cloud (nilabhbhavanyasatāsitā): similar to a black cloud in appearance. Resembling the majesty of a thunder cloud (megharatassiri nibhānyā): seeming to have taken the shape and colour of a cloud.

13 A full water-pot (pūraṇa pāniyacakanaṁ): a water vessel filled with water. Some cakes (pūve): some hard food. Delicious (citte): he saw some delightful, sweet and pleasing cakes set out on, and filling, the plates that were everywhere.

15 You are truly not ill-come (atho te adurāgatam): 'truly' (atho) is here a mere particle or is used for the sake of emphasis. We accept that in coming, great king, you are not ill-come and that, moreover, you are quite welcome — this is the meaning. O tamer of your enemies (arindama): you whose nature is the taming of your enemies.

20 Your advisers and attendants (amaceā pārisajjā): let your advisers and attendants hear what I have to say and let your brahmin, that chief priest, hear it too — this is how it should be construed.


22 I had the habit of obstructing: vānyissam=vāremi (alternative grammatical form); I acted as an obstacle (antarayakaro aham): I acted as an obstacle to those who were giving alms and performing services and whilst others were giving alms for others I had the habit of obstructing many people in performing those meritorious deeds consisting in giving — this is how it should be construed. There is no result from giving and so on is an indication of the form his obstruction took.

23 Herein there is no result from giving (vipāko n'atthi dānassa): [252] he rejects any result saying, 'There is no result for him through giving those alms, no fruit to be gained in the future.' From where would come the fruit of self-restraint? (sanyamassā kuto phalam): now from where indeed would come the fruit of morality? There is absolutely none whatsoever — this is the meaning. There is indeed no Teacher (n'atthi ācariyo nāma): there is indeed no one who is a Teacher giving precepts as to behaviour and conduct, for beings are either tamed or untamed according
to their nature alone — this is the meaning. For this reason he said, ‘So who will tame the untamed?’

24 All beings are exactly the same (samatulyāni bhūtāni): these beings are all equal to one another. Therefore there are none who are superior — why then honour one’s superiors? There is indeed no merit from honouring one’s superiors — this is the meaning. There is no power (n’ atthi balam): he rejects the effort and power of those beings who, relying on their own power, make an effort and bring about anything from worldly prosperity and so on up to attainment of the excellence of arahantship. There is no (power) or effort so what is the use of man’s exertion? (kuto uṭṭhānaporisam): it does not result through man’s effort, through what a man does — this is said thus in repudiation of the doctrine of (causal) result.

25 There is indeed no fruit from giving (n’ atthi dānapalām nāma): there is indeed no such thing as fruit from giving, meaning giving away merit-offerings is just as fruitless as if one had thrown them into the ashes. One bearing hostility cannot be cleansed (na vaśodheta verim): here one bearing hostility: verim=veravanta (alternative grammatical form); the person who has done a wicked deed out of hostility by way of destroying living beings and so on cannot be cleansed, is never made pure, by observances such as giving and morality and so on. ‘There is no result from giving’ and so on should be regarded as an indication of the manner in which he obstructed others in giving alms and so on, whereas ‘There is indeed no fruit from giving’ and so forth as an indication of his adherence to wrong (views). What is his to get: laddeyyam=laddhabban (alternative grammatical form). But (how does he get) what is his to get? He said, through the vicissitudes of fate (nīyati pariṇāmaṇam): the creature getting either happiness or misery gets this merely through a change in his fate and not on account of his having done some deed nor on account of a Supreme Deity and so on — this is the meaning.

26 [253] There is neither mother, father nor brother (n’ atthi mātā pitā bhūtā): he speaks with reference to the absence of any fruit from either right or wrong conduct towards one’s mother and so on. There is no world beyond this one (loko n’ atthi ito param): there is indeed no such thing as a world beyond this one, beyond this world here. Beings are annihilated right then and there — this is the meaning. Given (dinnaṇam): a great alms-giving. Sacrificial offering (hutaṇ): worshipping with a gift of food: he rejects them both (saying), ‘There is no’ with reference to the absence of any fruit (from them). Well laid down: sunihitam=sūṭhāh nihitam (resolution of compound). Nothing is known (na vijñatī): those alms for recluses and brahmins which they call ‘that which will follow one as a foundation in
the next world\textsuperscript{41} is not known; it is just a mere figure of speech of theirs—this is the meaning.

27 \textit{It is not a case of someone killing somebody (na koci kiñceti hanati): if a man should kill another man, should cut off the head of another man, it is not, in the ultimate sense, a case of someone killing somebody—it only looks like killing due to the existence of gaps\textsuperscript{42} (between) the seven elementary substances. But what about being struck by a sword? He said, \textit{into the interval between the seven (sattannāṁ vivaramāṇaṁ antare): the sword enters the gap,\textsuperscript{43} that is, the interval, between the seven elementary substances such as earth and so on. For this reason it looks like beings are struck with swords and so on. Like the soul the rest of the elementary substances also cannot be destroyed on account of their permanent nature—this is the meaning.}

28 \textit{Indestructible and indivisible is the soul (acchejābhejjo jīvo): the soul of beings is not to be destroyed by swords and so on account of its permanent nature. It is octagonal, or spherical like a ball (āṭṭhanāṁ gula parimaṇḍalo): the soul is sometimes octagonal, sometimes spherical like a ball. And five hundred yojanas (yojanāṁ ni satā pañca): on attaining its fully accomplished state it is five hundred yojanas in height. Who then is capable of destroying the soul? (ko jīvetaṁ cetum agraṁ): who indeed is capable of destroying with swords and so on a permanent and immutable soul? He is saying that it could not be harmed by anyone.}

29 \textit{A ball of thread (suttagule):\textsuperscript{44} a ball of thread is made when it is wound up. When cast forth (khitte): when cast forth by way of unwinding it. Runs on unwinding itself (nibbeṭhentaṁ palāyati): a ball of thread-cast forth, unwinding itself, from a mountain or a tree top [254] just goes on unwinding itself, ceasing to go on when the thread comes to an end.\textsuperscript{45} Even so in that same way (evaṁ evaṁ):\textsuperscript{46} just as that ball of thread goes on unwinding itself, ceasing to go on when the thread comes to an end, even so in that same way does the soul run on, continue, unwinding its ball of (samsāric) existence\textsuperscript{47} for just the time stated, for eighty-four hundred thousand great aeons and ceases to continue thereafter.}

30 \textit{Even so in that same way does the soul (evaṁ eva ca so jīvo): just as some man leaves the village in which he dwells and then enters another village because of something he has to do, even so in that same way does the soul leave a body and enter another subsequent body in accordance with its fate—this is the meaning. Body: bondim=kāyan (synonyms).}

32 \textit{Eighty-four: cūlāsthi=caturāsthi (alternative grammatical form). Great aeons: mahākappīnā=maḥākappāṇāṁ (alternative grammatical form); in this connection if once every hundred years a drop of water were to be removed with the tip of a blade of kusa grass from a great lake}
such as Anotatta and so on and that by acting in this manner that lake
were to be emptied of its water seven times over then that (period) would
be called one great aeon. Having said this he says that the extent of (a
soul's running on in) saṃsāra is eighty-four hundred thousand such great
aeons. *Both the foolish and the wise (ye bāḷā ye ca paṇḍita): both those
who are blinded by folly and those who possess wisdom — all of these
even.* Are cast about in saṃsāra (saṃsāram khepayīvāna): are cast about
in saṃsāra, arising again and again for the aforesaid length of time. *Before
they make an end of misery (dukkhas' antam karissare): before they bring
to a conclusion, bring to full cycle, the misery of the round* of exist-
ences. Even the wise cannot become accomplished during this period and
even the fool ceases to continue thereafter — this is his heresy.

33 Happiness and misery are measured by the doṇa or 'the basket
(mitiṇī sukhadukkhati doṇehi piṭakehi ca): the vicissitudes of fate are
apportioned to this and that being, they are meted out separately, during
the aforesaid length of time as though the happiness and misery of beings
were indeed measured by the doṇa, the basket and the māna-vessel.* The
Conqueror knows all this, the one who stands on the plane of the
Conqueror knows it in its entirety since he has crossed over saṃsāra,
[255] whilst other people are bewildered and roam about in saṃsāra.*

34 I was in the past of such a view (evamditthi pure āśirvā): I was
formerly of the aforesaid natthika view. *I was bewildered and enveloped
by delusion (saṃūjho mohapāruto): I was bewildered with the delusion
that was caused by the aforesaid view and enveloped by the delusion that
arose at the same time; the seed of skillfulness was covered up — this is
the meaning. When he had thus indicated the wicked deed done by him,
because of the wicked view that had occurred to him in the past he then
uttered (the verses) beginning: 'This side of six months’ indicating its fruit
that he would have to undergo in the future.

38 Herein after a hundred thousand years: vassasatasahassāni=vassānāni
satatasahassāni (resolution of compound); 'have passed' are the rest of the
words. Or, alternatively this is the accusative case* with the force of the
locative, meaning when a hundred thousand years have gone by. *A sound
is straightway heard (ghoso sūyati āvade): after such a long time has
passed a proclamation is straightway, at that time, heard in that hell
saying. 'The extent of time that has elapsed whilst you have been being
boiled here, good sirs, is one hundred thousand years.' *This is a lakkha,
great king, after one hundredth of a koṭi of years (lakkho eso mahāraja
satabhāgavassakotiyo): this is a lakkha, that is, the circumscription of the
span of time during which beings have been boiled in hell, great king, after
one hundredth, a hundredth part, of a koṭi of years (have passed). This
is what is said: ten times ten is one hundred, ten hundreds are one thousand, ten times ten thousand is one hundred thousand and a hundred times a hundred thousand is one koṭi. By way of these koṭis, one hundred thousand koṭis of years (have passed) after one hundredth of a koṭi of years, but these are to be understood as the means of counting the years of those in hell only, not (those) of men or devas. The life-span of those in hell is countless such hundreds of thousands of koṭis of years. For this reason it was said, ‘For a hundred thousand koṭis people are boiled in hell.’ To show by means of an illustration the sorts of wicked deeds for which beings are thus boiled in the hells, ‘Who are of wrong views, who are badly behaved and who are scoffers at the ariyans’ was said.

40 I will experience (vedissam): I will undergo. Having thus indicated the fruit of his wicked deeds that he would have to undergo in the future and having explained the matter that the king had enquired about, namely, ‘By means of what Brahmāfaring comes this majesty of yours?’, he then uttered (the verses) beginning: ‘Hear this, great king’, desiring to establish him in the Refuges and the Precepts.

42 Who is devoted to the Precepts and Uposatha (sthesupasathe ratā): who delights in those Precepts that are permanently binding and those (additional) precepts observed on the Uposatha.

45 Gave him: adā-adāsi (alternative grammatical form).

48 The Dhamma (tam dhamman): the eightfold path and the Deathless.

Roused thus by the peta into taking the Refuges and the Precepts the king, with devotion in his heart, praised him on account of the service he had rendered him and, on being established in the Refuges and so on, said the three verses beginning: ‘You desire my good’, after which he uttered the verse beginning: ‘I will shake off’, declaring his renunciation of the wicked view that he had previously held.

54 Herein I will shake off as into a strong wind (odhunāmi mahāvete): I will shake off, will cast off, that wicked view into the wind of your teaching on Dhamma, yakkha, as is chaff when a strong wind is blowing. Or into a swiftly flowing river (nadiyā vā stigham gāmiyā): or I will cause that wicked view to be swept away as are grass, twigs and fallen leaves in the swift current of a great river — this is the meaning. I will reject that wicked view (vamāmi pāpakam diṭṭhim): I will cast up that wicked view that has been foremost in my mind. He gave his reason for this: Being devoted to the Teaching of the Buddhas (Buddhanāṁ sāsame rato): since I am devoted to the Teaching of the Buddhas, the Lords, that brings one for certain to the Deathless, I will therefore reject this poison known as (wrong) view — this is how it should be construed. Those rehearsing the
texts then inserted\(^5\) the concluding verse (beginning:) ‘When (the Soraṭṭha) had said this’.  
55: Herein facing east (pāmokkhā): heading towards the eastern quarter. Climbed into his carriage (rathaṁ ānyyhi): the king mounted his carriage which was ready to leave. He climbed into it and through the majesty of that yakkha reached his city that very same day and entered the royal dwelling. In due course he raised the issue with the monks \(^{257}\) who in turn raised it with the elders. The elders included it in the rehearsal at the Third Council.

\(^1\) Reading pārīṇāṁbānto with Se Be for text’s pārīṇāṁbānto.

\(^2\) Literally the good, or happy, kingdom and identified with modern Kathiawad; cp DPPN ii 1253.

\(^3\) This is the opening phrase of the stock passage summarising wrong view, such a view being attributed at D i 55 to Ajīta Kesakambali where the passage is to be found in full; cp PVA 99 above.

\(^4\) Viśīdhāvī, the forest, aṭṭavī, of the Vindhya hills; cp PVA 43, 192. DPPN ii 874, following Mhv xix 6 and Dpv xiv 2, states that through these hills lay the road on which Asoka travelled on his way from Pāṭaliputta (modern Patna) to the port of Tāmalitti (modern Tāmhuk on the west bank of the Hooghly near Calcutta) from where the Bodhi tree was to be sent to Lankā. However it is usual to understand by the Vindhyas the range of hills in the Indore-Ujjain-Bhopal area of Madhya Pradesh which separated the Āryan north from the Dravidian plateau to the south (and a Dravidian origin is suspected for aṭṭavī, cp PED sv). There is nothing in the passages of this text in which these hills appear to suggest that they are any other than these latter Vindhyas; indeed it would be expected that Pīṅgalā would have had to cross these on his return from Pāṭaliputta to Suraṭṭha, identified with Surāśṭra which denoted the modern Kathiāwār. In its widest denotation the term included the whole of Kāṭhāwār, in its narrowest only the southern part of Kāṭhāwār, known as Soraṭṭhā.

Hasmukh D. Sankalia, The Archeology of Gujarat, Bombay 1941, p. 5; cp A. S. Altekar, ‘A History of Important Ancient Towns and Cities in Gujarat and Kathiawārd’, Indian Antiquary, Supplement to Vol. 54, 1925. Moreover since it is probable that the whole of Gujarāt came under Mauryan sway, as the presence of many Asokan edicts suggests (Sankalia, p. 7), it would have been quite possible that Pīṅgalā might have had to visit the Mauryan capital as recorded in this story. This raises the problem as to how the Sinhalese chroniclers came to believe that Asoka, having despatched the Bodhi tree down the Ganges to Tāmalitti, crossed the Vindhyas on his overland journey to that port, surely a somewhat circuitous route. It is possible that the chroniclers have conflated what were originally two separate legends, one of which implying that the Bodhi tree was despatched by the more probable route from a port on the west coast.

The famous Asoka (268–231 BC) of Indian history who in his later life came to be called Dhammāsoka on account of his pious deeds (Mhv v 189; cp DPPN i 216–219).

\(^6\) Reading vissāmaṁ with Se Be for text’s vissāmaṁ.

\(^7\) Elephants, cavalry, chariots and infantry – see Vin iv 104f.; cp M i 69.

\(^8\) Reading paṭipassaddhamaggañhamatho with Se Be for text’s paṭipassaddham.

\(^9\) v 17 below.

\(^10\) Skt Mauryas.

\(^11\) Reading vaṇṇupathāṁ with Be for text’s vaṇṇapathāṁ; cp PED sv vaṇṇu and
Stories of the Mansions, p. 148 n. 2. The city on J 1109 similarly states vappu vuccati vālukā, vālukāmagesi ti attho, Se reada vaṇpanāpam.
11 Text should be amended to read, with Se Be, so that v 3 ends with ito, v 4 beginning with Tena and ending with abavī.
12 ubbiggarīpo; PED sv ubbigga refers to Th 1, 408, apparently an error for Th 2, 408.
13 Reading meghavnassathī nibhām with Se Be for text’s meghavannassathinnibhām both here and in the verses that follow.
14 adurāgataṃ; Gehman has mistakenly analysed this as adura + agatam which is in keeping with neither the context nor the city; it is to be understood rather as a + dur + agatam.
15 An epithet of Sakka (Indra), usually taken as 'Breaker of the Fortress' (cp Vedic Purandara applied to Indra). The verse recurs at Vv 627 and is rendered in Stories of the Mansions as ‘bounteous giver’. At VvA 171 Dhammapāla takes it as being derived from pure dānam dādayati, who gave gifts in the past. See also the interesting discussion at MLS ii 52 n. 5 and cp PvA 118f.
16 cp Vv 627.
17 Reading niyati with Se Be for text’s niyati.
18 In detail at D i 56.
19 Reading dakkhas’ antam karissare with v 32; v 33 should then begin with Mitāni, whilst v 34 with Evaṃ咄ṭṭhi, in accordance with Se Be.
20 Though Mrs Rhys Davids felt unable to assign the views depicted in these verses (Stories of the Departed, p. 95 n. 1), a comparison with the details given at D i 52–59 may suggest that the views expressed in vv 24, 32 and 29 are those of Makkhali Gosala (D i 53f.), in vv 26–27 those of Ajita Kesakambali (D i 56f.) and in v 23 that of Pūraṇa Kassapa (D i 52f). The rest is more difficult. That some wanderers held views similar to those of v 28 may be seen from the Jainā Sūtrakṛtaṅga II 1 15 (SBE x 340). The views found in v 25 remind one of the extreme formalism attributed to Makkhali Gosala — see A. L. Basham, History and Doctrines of the Ajivikas, London 1951, especially Chapter 2. There is also a note of formalism about v 33 though reference to an omniscient Conqueror (Jina) suggests the Jainas. It must be the reference to the soul (jiva) that renders the views of vv 30–31 unacceptable since it is precisely these similes (but without any mention of a soul) that are elsewhere used by the Buddha to describe the rebirth process (D i 81, 83).
21 The lokha (lac) is usually reckoned at 100,000 and the koṭi (score) at 10,000,000.
22 Another name for Kubera, one of the Four Great Kings and sovereign of the yakhkas; cp I 33 where this was said to be characteristic of yakhkas.
23 Cp A ii 17.
24 amatam padam; cp S i 212, ii 280; A ii 51.
25 The paths and fruits of the four classes of sāvaka: the sotāpanna, sakadāgāmin (once-returner), anāgāmin (non-returner) and arahant; this is an abridged form of the stock paragraph describing the sāvakasamgha — see e.g. D iii 227; M i 37, S ii 69f.; A i 222. The sāvakasamgha was not identical with the bhikkhusamgha, or order of monks, for the former included many laymen and devas and only those monks who belonged to one or other of the four classes. Of saṅghas the Tathāgata’s sāvakasamgha is reckoned the best, āggaṃ, just as it is this saṅgha that is alone the world’s unsurpassed merit-field (It 88).
26 pāmokkho, mis-spelt pāmokho at Stories of the Departed, p. 97 n. 1. See city below; it must be assumed he was merely looking in this direction since he was travelling more or less due west.
27 So verse, Se Be; text mis-spells punam here.
28 Reading anuppaddavo with Se Be for text’s anupaddavo.
29 Reading bhimsanabhāvena lomānaṁ hamsāpanam with Se Be for text’s bhimsanabhāvena lomānaṁ hamsanam.
Reading vittijanane with Se Be for text’s cittijanane.

Text wrongly punctuates here, beginning a new sentence with dānamayapuññato. manassa-, literally human but here opposed to the spiritual.

Be reads this as part of the lemma that follows but this does not strictly accord with the verse. So and text read it as part of the preceding comment. It would seem to make the most sense if it introduces, but is not actually part of, the lemma that follows, as adopted here.

pavattavāda-.

Reading vatato with Se Be for text’s vātato.

Reading niyataviparīñānakaveṇa with Be for text’s niyatā pariñānakaveṇa (Se niyatā pariñānakaveṇa).

Reading kathā with Se Be for text’s kathā.

See A i 173ff. where there is a discussion of these three alternatives; at M ii 214ff. the second of these is attributed to the Jaina.

Reading pahana- with Se Be for text’s pahana-; see Childers and BHSD sv pahana.

 Cp Pa 132.

Reading chiddabhāvato with Se Be for text’s chinda-.

Reading chiddē with Se Be for text’s chinde; cp DA 167 on D i 56.

Text omits ti after suttagele.

Sutta khippe na gacchati, so Se Be; text omits.

So all texts though this does not accord with the verse. Se reads evam evam pi in vv 29, 30 and 31 whilst Be evam eva ca in all three. Text, however, reads evam eva ca in vv 29-30 but evam eva pi in v 31.

attabhāvagañjāṃ.

Text is poorly punctuated here and should follow Se Be by beginning a new sentence with Samāra-khepayitvāna.

Reading vajjadhikkhassa with Se Be for text’s vaddha-. In her forward to the 1974 edition of Stories of the Departed (p. iv) Miss Horner remarks that “cycle of transmigration” would hardly be accepted now for samāra’. Whilst this may be so in a Buddhist context, it ought still be thought to apply here since we are dealing, in both the verse and its city, with what was clearly regarded as the heretical view of a contemporary rival – indeed it was no doubt partly its viewing samāra as a cycle that rendered it unacceptable.

The dona, basket and māna were all measures of rice and other grains whose exact values are uncertain.

Reading samāra ... pājā with this sentence.

Text wrongly inserts a full stop after vacanam.

It seems Dhammapāla misunderstood vv 38-39 and inferred that the lakkha (100,000 years = one hundredth of the koṭi, 10,000,000), whose passage is marked by a proclamation to this effect, was numerically equivalent to the 100,000 koṭis (or 10,000,000,000,000) of years during which beings are boiled in hell. He therefore felt the need, unnecessarily, to explain how koṭi in hell differ from those on earth. The verses, however, say no more than that after each hundredth part of a koṭi, that is, after one lakkha, a proclamation is made to the effect that one lakkha has passed and that beings in hell are boiled for in all 100,000 koṭis. They would thus hear such a proclamation one hundred times during each of these 100,000 koṭis, that is, 10,000,000 times.

Reading vassa-ganānāsasena with Se Be for text’s-ganana-.

That is, the usual five, plus not eating after midday, abstaining from dancing, singing and music shows and the use of garlands and scent and so on and the use of luxurious beds; see A iv 248ff.

Reading panna-kasalam with Se Be for text’s panna-kasalam.

Reading sīgha-sotāya with Se Be for text’s sīgha-sotāya.
IV.4 EXPOSITION OF THE REVATĪ PETA STORY
[Revatīpetavatthuvaññanā]

‘Rise up, Revatī of very evil character.’ This is the Revatī Peta Story.

Since there is no difference between this and the Revatī Mansion Story, what was to be said here with respect to the arisen need and to the verses is therefore to be understood exactly as has already been given in the Exposition of the Mansion Stories (section) of this Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning. It is to be regarded as being included in the text of the Mansion Stories on account of the devaputta Nandiya and as being included also in this text as the Revatī Peta Story on account of the verses which are connected with Revatī.

1 Vv 52; Stories of the Mansions pp. 103-107.

IV.5 EXPOSITION OF THE SUGAR-CANE PETA STORY
[Ucchupetavatthuvaññanā]

‘This great grove of sugar-cane of mine.’ This is the Sugar-cane Peta Story. How did it originate?

When the Lord was staying in the Bamboo Grove a certain man put a bundle of sugar-cane on his shoulder and went along chewing one sugar-cane. Now a certain layfollower who was virtuous and of a lovely character was going along close behind him with his young child. The child saw the sugar-cane and cried out, ‘Give me some!’ The layfollower saw the child crying and, catching that man up, tried to make conversation with him. But the man would not converse with him at all, nor would he give the child even a piece of his sugar-cane on account of his ill will.1 The
layfollower pointed to his child and said, 'This child is weeping excessively. Please give him a piece of sugar-cane.' When he heard this the man, unable to bear this, became contemptuous and disrespectfully tossed a stick of sugar-cane behind him. He died in due course and arose amongst the petas on account of his having long been permeated with greed. The fruit [258] of this was indeed in accordance with that deed for there arose for him a great grove of sugar-cane that was thickly covered with jet-black sugar-cane the size of a pestle and that (extended over) an area of as much as eight karis. But as soon as he approached it desiring to chew some thinking, 'I will take some sugar-cane', that sugar-cane would strike him on account of which he would fall down fainting. Then one day as the venerable Mahāmoggallāna was going to Rājagaha in search of alms he saw on his way that peta. When he saw the elder he asked him about the deed he had done and there followed an exchange of conversation in verse between the peta and the elder.

1 'This great grove of sugar-cane of mine arose as the fruit of no small amount of meritorious deeds but it is of no use to me now — tell me, sir, of what is this the result?

2 I come to grief and am devoured when I attempt, when I endeaour, to consume any of it. My strength gone and suffering great hardship I wail — of what deed is this the result?

3 In distress I collapse on the ground and writhe in the heat like one that lives in water; my tears trickle down as I cry — tell me, sir, of what is this the result?

4 I am famished, tired and thirsty; I am parched and I do not find either comfort or ease. I ask you of this matter, good sir, how might I get to make use of this sugar-cane?'

5 [259] 'In the past you yourself did a deed — in a former birth whilst in the world of men. Now I will tell you of this matter — if you listen you will understand this matter.

6 You had set out, chewing a sugar-cane, when a man came up behind you. He spoke to you in expectation but you would not converse with him at all.

7 And you who would not speak he begged; "Please give some sugar-cane, good sir", he said to you. You gave him some sugar-cane from behind your back — it is of that deed that this is the result.

8 Look here, you may take some sugar-cane from behind; when you have taken some you can chew it as much as you like — in this way you will become pleased, joyful, elated and satisfied.'

9 He went and took some from behind; when he had taken some he
chewed it as much as he liked — in this way he became pleased, joyful, elated and satisfied.

1. Herein of what (kissa): of what sort of deed — this is the meaning.

2. I come to grief (vihānāmi): I meet with distress; or, alternatively I come to grief (vihānāmi): I am oppressed, meaning I am particularly crushed. Am devoured: khajāmi-khādiyāmi (alternative grammatical form), meaning I am cut by the leaves of the sugar-cane as though I were being devoured with sharp sword-leaves. When I try (vāyamāmi): when I make an attempt to eat the sugar-cane. When I endeavour (parisakkāmi): when I make an effort. To consume (paribhunijitum): to consume the juice of the sugar-cane, meaning to chew. My strength gone (chinnathāmo): my endurance gone, my strength curtailed, meaning my strength totally exhausted. [260] And suffering great hardship (kapano): in a wretched state. I wail (lālapāmi): I lament extremely afflicted with misery.

3. In distress (vighāto): full of distress or with his strength impaired. I collapse on the ground (paripatāmi chamāyām): being unable to stand I fall to the ground. Writhe (parivattāmi): reel. Like one that lives in water (vāričārō vā): like a fish. In the heat (ghamme): on dry ground that is scorched by the heat.

4. I am parched (santassito): very thirsty with the lips, palate and throat gone dry. Either comfort or ease (sātasukhām): a state of comfort or ease. I do not find (na vinde): I do not obtain. You: taṇi=tvana (alternative grammatical form).

5. You will understand: viñāna=vijānāhi (alternative grammatical form).


7. It is of that deed (tass’ etam kammassa): here etam (untranslated) is a mere particle; it means it is of that deed.

8. May take some from behind (piṭhito gapheyyāsi): may take some sugar-cane only from behind your back. Satisfied: pamoḍito=pamudito (alternative grammatical form).

9. When he had taken some he chewed it as much as he liked (gahetvāna taṇ kḥādi yāvād-aṭtham): when he had taken some sugar-cane in the way suggested by the elder and had chewed it as he pleased he took a large bundle of sugar-cane and presented it to the elder. Helping him the elder had him bring it along and went to the Bamboo Grove and (the elder) gave it to the Lord. The Lord together with the order of monks then ate it and showed their appreciation. The peta, with devotion in his heart, saluted (the Lord) and left. From that time henceforward he ate sugar-cane
with ease. He died in due course and arose amongst the Thirty-three.

The incident concerning this peta, however, became well known in the world of men. The people approached the Teacher and asked him about the incident. The Teacher explained the matter in detail and then taught Dhamma. When they heard this those people shrank from the stain of selfishness.

1dosa nāma; Se Be omit.
2Reading karśa-with Se Be and PED for text’s karśa—although PED erroneously includes this reference under karśa, meaning excrement. It is rather an instance of karśa, the square measure of land, the space over which one karśa of seed could be sown. For further details see PED sv and Childers sv; also Childers sv ammanā. Buddhadasa’s English-Pali Dictionary gives the meaning of karśamattattāṭṭhaṇam as acre.
3Reading pucchi with Be for text’s Se puchanto.
4Gehman’s ‘broad and bearing a plentiful good crop’ obscures the point somewhat.
5Reading chinnatṭhamo with Se Be for text’s chinnātomo; vīl abound here and in the city below.
6Reading rudato with Se Be for text’s dūrato.
7Santassito; not listed by PED.
8Se Be read haṃsāmi, I am thrashed, both here and in the verse but add that this means vihaṃsāmi here.
9Reading asippattasādissi with Be for text’s Se asippattasaṃsādissi; this is an allusion to the Sword-leaved Forest – cp PvA 221.
10Reading chinnaśaho with Se Be for text’s chinnaśāhāvo.
11Reading vighāṭavā with Se Be for text’s vighāṭavā.
12Reading sosappattiyā with Se Be for text’s so sappattiyā.
13So Se Be and verse; text reads sanyāga-cchi here.
14Literally, when he had done his (kammic) time; petas would appear not to die as such but rather fall, perhaps after the manner of devas mentioned at It 76f., and re-appear elsewhere.

IV.6 EXPOSITION OF THE BOYS PETA STORY
[Kumārapetavatthuvagāna]

[261] ‘The city named Sāvatthī.’ The Teacher who was staying in the Jeta Grove told this concerning two petas.

It is said that in Sāvatthī the two sons of the king of Kosala were handsome and in the prime of life but that drunk with the pride of youth they went with other men’s wives. When they died they arose as petas in a moat and at night they would wail with a terrific noise. When the people heard this they were frightened. They gave a great almsgiving to the order of
monks with the Buddha at its head thinking, 'Having acted thus, this bad omen may be assuaged', and raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord said, 'Layfollowers, there is no danger whatsoever (that can come) to you from hearing that noise', and then uttered these verses explaining its cause and to teach them Dhamma:

1 “The city named Sāvatthi is flanked by the Himālaya. I have heard that there were there two boys who were sons of the king.

2 Intoxicated with the enticing and finding pleasure in the satisfaction of their sensual desires they hankered after their present happiness and paid no regard to the future.

3 And, fallen from the human state and gone from here to the world beyond, they now unseen bewail the evil they did in the past (saying),

4 “Though many were present and the merit-offerings already prepared we were unable to do even to a limited extent that which would provide us with happiness;”

5 What greater evil could there be than this — that we should fall from the royal family and arise on the peta-plane afflicted with hunger and thirst?”

6 After having been rulers here they are no longer rulers there — they roam about in hunger and thirst; of lofty status whilst men they are now of the lowest.

7 When the disadvantage stemming from an intoxication with power is realised [262] and this intoxication with power is abandoned, a man is bound for heaven; at the breaking up of the body this wise person arises in heaven.”

1 Herein I have heard that (iti me sutam) means not only have I seen this with my own insight for I have also heard that it is so through its being common knowledge in the world.

2 Finding pleasure in the satisfaction of their sensual desires (kāmasādābhinandino): of a nature to find pleasure by way of satisfaction in the pleasures of the senses. They hankered after their present happiness (pacchappassitu sīkhe giddāḥ): they hankered after, they were greedy for, merely the happiness of the moment.10 Paid no regard to the future (na te passimsu nāgatam): they did not think of the happiness to be obtained amongst devas and men in the future, in time to come, by abandoning bad conduct and practising good conduct.

3 They now unseen bewail (te ‘da ghosentya dissantā): those petas who formerly were sons of the king now invisibly bewail, weep, close to Sāvatthi. What were they weeping about? He said, ‘The evil they did in
the past'. Then to show by means of an analysis in terms of cause and effect the reason for this weeping of theirs (the verse) beginning: ‘Though many were present’, was said.

4 Herein *though many were present* (*bahūsu vata santesu*): though many worthy of donations were to be found. And the merit-offerings *already prepared* (*deyyadharmme upaffhitte*): and their own property that was suitable to be given as merit-offerings was to hand, meaning it was available. *Even to a limited extent that which would provide us with happiness* (*parittāṃ sukhāvahāṃ*): we were unable to act, alas, towards our own safety, our own security, having done not even the slightest meritorious deed which would provide us with happiness in the future — this is how it should be construed.

5 *What greater evil could there be than this?* (*kim tato pāpakam asa*): what else could be, could possibly be, more evil, more despicable, than this? *That we should fall from the royal family* (*yan nā rājakulā cutā*): means that we should fall on account of those wicked deeds from the royal family and now arise on the peta-plane, arise amongst the petas, and wander about afflicted with hunger and thirst.

6 *After having been rulers here* (*sāmino idha kuttāna*): they roam about here in this world, in the very same place in which they were formerly rulers, (but) they are no longer rulers there, in that very same place. *Of lofty status whilst men, they are now of the lowest fmanussa unnatoṇata* (*bhuva saggagato naro*): (though) they were rulers at the time they were men they are now, after death, of the lowest and roam about in hunger and thirst on account of their deeds — behold the nature of saṃsāra that is indicated.

7 *When the disadvantage stemming from an intoxication with power is realised* (*etāṃ ādīnavam nātvā issaramadasambhavan*): when the disadvantage, the fault, that stems from an intoxication with authority — namely arising in a state of woe — is realised and this intoxication with power is abandoned, meritorious deeds will be pursued. *A man is bound for heaven* (*bhave saggagato naro*): he should be bound solely for heaven, for the devaloka.

When the Teacher had thus explained the issue of those petas and had had the almsgiving that those people had performed dedicated to those petas he taught Dhamma suiting the dispositions of the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

---

1 Reading *yobbanamadamaṭṭa* with Se Be for text's *yobha*.
2 *bheravena; see PvA 152.*
4 Not 'you will not have any end of hearing that noise' as Gehman suggests, whilst his rendering of the verses that follow is also at fault.
5 Reading sampattā rajaniyesu with Be for text's pamattā rajaniyesu (Se pamattā rajaniyesu); cp cty on III 7.
6 Reading ghoṣenti adissanto with Se Be for text's ghoṣenti na disanto.
7 Reading parittāṃ kāṭum sukhaḥvayam with Se Be for text's sotthi kāṭum parittāṃ sukhaḥvayam.
8 Text erroneously gives this verse the number 9.
9 Reading na kevalam ... atha kho with Se Be for text's na kevalam ... ettha kho.
10 Reading suttam with Se Be for text's suttam.
11 Reading vattamānasukhamattte with Se Be for text's vādghā.
12 phalato, literally, fruition.
13 Reading assāmiko with Se Be for text's assamiko.
14 Reading taḥim tasmāṃ with Se Be for text's Taḥin ti tasmāṃ.
15 Not 'as was his will' as Gehman suggests.

IV.7 EXPOSITION OF THE KING'S SON PETA STORY
[Rājaputtapetabhavānā]

'Of deeds done in the past.' The Teacher who was staying in the Jeta Grove told this concerning a peta who had been the son of a king. In this connection he who had long ago been the son of a king named Kitaya and who had long ago offended a Paccekabuddha arose amongst the petas as a residual effect of that same deed for which he had already been boiled in hell for many thousands of years and it is he who is here meant by 'the peta who had been the son of a king'. His story is exactly as that already given in detail above in the Sānūvaśin Peta Story⁴ and should therefore be taken in the same way that it was given there. As the elder was explaining the issue to his peta-relatives the Teacher said, 'This is not only the case with your relations for you too were a peta in your immediately preceding existence and suffered great misery', and at his request related this King's Son Peta Story:

1 The result of deeds done in the past would disturb the mind as regards sight, sound, taste, smell and touch, (all) pleasing to the mind.
2 When he had enjoyed dancing, singing, pleasure and merriment to no small extent, he amused himself in the park. As he entered Giribba, [264] He saw the rishi Sunettha, tamed of self and concentrated, with few needs, possessing modesty and delighting in whatever came into his almsbowl.
He got down from the elephant’s back and said, “Did you get anything, sir?” That kṣatriya then snatched his bowl and held it above him.

And broke the bowl on the hard ground and then went away laughing saying, “I am the son of king Kitava — what can you do to me, you beggar?”

The result of that cruel deed which the king’s son experienced whilst confined to hell was severe:

For six times eighty-four nahuvas of years that wrong-doer underwent intense misery in hell;

He was boiled⁵ lying face upwards and face downwards, on his left and right (sides); feet uppermost and just standing, that fool was boiled⁵ for a long time.

For many nahuvas and for many thousands of years besides that wrong-doer underwent intense misery in hell.

Such is the severity for those who harm the faultless ones — those doing wicked deeds (such as) insulting a devout rishi are boiled.

He experienced much misery there for many years and when he fell from there he was a peta truly smitten by hunger and thirst.⁶

When the disadvantage stemming from an intoxication with power is realised and this intoxication with power is abandoned one should act with humility.

He who is full of respect for the Buddhas is in this very life to be praised and at the breaking up of the body this wise person arises in heaven.

Herein the result of deeds done in the past would disturb the mind (pubbe katānam kammānam vipāko mathhaye manam): when the fruit of unskilled deeds done in former lives arises and is physically actualised it would disturb, it would overwhelm, the mind of those blinded by folly; they would promote their own good fortune by way of causing misfortune to others — this is the meaning. Now it was to illustrate the range of this disturbance of mind, that ‘as regards sight, sound’ and so on was said. Herein as regards sight (rūpe): in the matter of sight, meaning with respect to the acquisition,⁸ as desired,⁹ of objects of sight that are charming.¹⁰ As regards sound (sadde) and so on: the same is also to be applied to these. He then explained in particular (terms) the matter on which he had (so far only) spoken in general (terms) and uttered (the verse) beginning: ‘When he had enjoyed) dancing, singing’ illustrating this.

3 Rishi (isiṁ): he is a rishi (isiṁ) by reason of his striving after (esanā) the khandhas of morality and so on of the adepts. Suṇetra (Suṇettam): the Paccekabuddha of the same name. Tamed of self (attaṁantarā): with the mind tamed with the utmost of taming. Concentrated (samāhitam): concentrated with the concentration of the arahant-fruit. Delighting in whatever came into his almsbowl (unīche pattiṟe ratam): delighting in, content with, whatever food that came into his almsbowl, that was put into his almsbowl, that was received when going about after alms for his sustenance.

4 And said, 'Did you get anything, sir?' (laddhā bhante ti c'abravi): he spoke with the purpose of gaining his confidence saying, 'Haven't you got any alms, sir?' Held it above him (uccaṁ paggayha): lifted it up high, held up the bowl.

5 And broke the bowl on the hard ground (thaṅdile pattam bhindivā): and broke the bowl by casting it down on a stony part of the ground. Went away (apakkami): went a short distance away and as he was going the king's son spoke to the Paccekabuddha—who (stood) looking on with compassion thinking how, blinded by folly, he had wrought great misfortune upon himself for no reason—saying, 'I am the son of king Kitava—what can you do to me, you beggar?'


7 For six times eighty-four nahutas of years (chaḷ eva caturāṣṭi vassāni nahutāni ca): lying face upwards for eighty-four thousand years; (similarly) face downwards, on his left side, on his right side, hanging feet uppermost and just standing—there are thus six (periods each of) eighty-four thousand years. For this reason he said:

'He was boiled lying face upwards and face downwards, on his left and right (sides); feet uppermost and just standing, that fool was boiled for a long time.'

9 [266] Those years, however, are 'nahutas' since they are many in number; therefore he said 'nahutas'. Underwent intense misery (bhūsam dukkham nīgacchiṭṭho): met with extreme misery. Many (pūgāṇi): a collection of years. (Both this phrase) here and that in the earlier verse are to be regarded as accusative cases in the sense of a continuous period of time.

10 Such (etādisam): of such a form. The severity (kaṭukam): the extreme misery—this description is in the neuter gender just like those of 'he sat down at one side' (ekamantam nistṭi) and so on. Of such a form is the severity, the extreme misery, for those persons who harm the
faultless ones; those doing wicked deeds (such as) insulting, offending, a devout rishi are boiled – this is how it should be construed.

11 **He (so):** the peta who was the king’s son. **There (tattha):** in hell. **Experienced (vedayitva):** suffered. **Truly (nāma):** through being clear and obvious. **When he fell from there (tato cuto):** when he fell from hell. The rest is just as already given.

Thus by means of this talk concerning a peta who had been the son of a king the Lord agitated the people gathered there and afterwards explained the (Four Noble) Truths at the end of which many arrived at the sotāpatti-fruit and so on.

1 III 2 above which states, however, that he arose in a fisherman village directly after falling from hell, with no intervening birth.

2 Gethman’s ‘in your next existence’ is clearly wrong since Sānuvāsin was an arahant and thus one for whom no further rebirth could be expected.

3 Reading poṭṭhabbe with Se Be for text’s poṭṭhabbe.

4 bhikkhu presumably here in its more literal sense since given the traditional view that Paccekabuddhas exist at times when there is no Buddhism as such in the world (cp PvA 75) it is unlikely that we were meant to understand this as ‘monk’ here.

5 Se Be read paccittha ... apaccittha for text’s paccittha ... apaccittha; I assume these are all 3rd sing aorist forms of paccittha since they are not listed by PED, Childers or CPD.

6 Khuppipāsa nāma peto āsi; Dhammapāla understands nāma as an emphatic particle here but at Miln 294 the khuppiṇāsa peta seems to be the name of a special class of petas not able to enjoy gifts assigned to them by their relatives. Compare how at PvA 21 Bimbisāra’s peta-relatives could receive nothing from him for many aeons. See also Av 269-271, quoted at PvA 271f. above, upon which the Miln passage is based, which similarly distinguishes those petas that subsist on food appropriate to creatures on the peta-plane from those who enjoy gifts offered by their relatives and cp cty on IV 111.

7 This sense of ulāram is not listed by PED; see however PED sv oḷāraka and BHSD sv audāra and audārika.

8 Reading paṭulōrhanimittam with Be (Se ca lābha-) for text’s palobhanimittam.

9 Reading yathūcchitassa with Se Be for text’s yathūcchitassa.

10 Cpt cty on II 9” (PvA 136).

11 Text mis-spells kiddam here.

12 Āsekkhānāṃ, that is, of arahants; since Sunetta is a Paccekabuddha it may be assumed that he has already accomplished this. Cp PvA 98, 163.

13 Reading santuṭṭham with Se Be for text’s santappam.

14 Reading evaṃ cha with Be for text’s evaṃ (Se evaṃ ca).

15 ṣvī 7.
'After getting up out of the latrine.' The Teacher who was staying in the Jeta Grove told this concerning a peta who ate excrement.

It is said that in a certain village not far from Sāvatthī a man of property had a vihāra built for a monk who was dependent upon his family for alms. Monks from various districts would come and stay there. When they saw them the people, with devotion in their hearts, waited upon them with the choicest requisites. Now the monk who was dependent upon that family for alms could not bear this and, overcome by envy, irritated that man of property by telling him of the faults of those monks and the man of property, despising both those monks and the one dependent upon his family for alms, abused them. Then the one dependent upon that family for alms died and arose as a peta in the latrine of that very same vihāra whilst when the man of property died he arose as a peta just above him. When the venerable Mahāmoggallāna saw him he questioned him with this verse:

1 [267] 'Who is that standing in that wretched state after getting up out of the latrine? You are without doubt an evil-doer — why do you make that noise?'

When he heard this the peta disclosed his identity with this verse:

2 'I, sir, am a peta gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

The elder then asked him about the deed he had done with this verse:

3 'Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed do you now undergo this misery?'

The peta then told him about the deed he had done by means of these two verses:

4 'I had one in residence who was envious and selfish about my family; he was attached to my house, miseries and abusive.

5 When I had heard what he had to say I abused the monks — it is as a result of that deed that I have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

4 Herein I had one in residence (ahu āvāsiko mayham): I had one monk in residence, dwelling continually in the vihāra I built at my residence. He
was attached to my house (ajjhoso to mayham ghare): due to his being dependent on my family for alms he clung to my home with a craving adherence.

5  He (tassa): that monk who was dependent upon my family for alms. The monks: bhikkhavo-bhikkhu (alternative grammatical form). I abused (paribhasissan): I insulted. I went from here to the world of the petas (petalokam ito gato): in this way I reached the peta-womb, I became a peta.

When he heard this the elder uttered this verse asking about the destiny of the other:

6  "The one who was dependent upon your family for alms was an enemy in the guise of a friend. To what destiny has that foolish person gone at the breaking up of the body after death?"  

6  [268] Herein in the guise of a friend (mittavannena): with the appearance of a friend, disguised as a friend.

The peta once more uttered two verses explaining the matter to the elder:

7  'I am standing on the head, on the top, of that same one who did that wicked deed. He has reached the other plane and is an attendant to me alone.

8  What others defecate, sir, that becomes my food; whilst what I myself defecate - he has to live on that.'

7  Herein of that same one (tass' eva): of that peta who used formerly to be that monk who was dependent upon my family for alms. Who did that wicked deed (papakammassa): who was of wicked conduct. I am standing on the head, on the top (sise titthami mattake): I am standing on the head and in so standing I am standing right on the very top, meaning not inside his head. Has reached the other plane (paravissayam patto): has reached the peta-plane which is the other realm compared with the world of men. To me alone: mam eva=mayham eva (alternative grammatical form); the rest of the words are 'he is in attendance'.

8  What others defecate, sir (yam bhadante hanant' añña): what others discharge in the latrine, the excrement they evacuate, sir, my worthy Mahāmoggallāna. That becomes my food (etam me hotti bhojanam): that excrement becomes my food day in and day out. What I myself defecate (yam hanami): that excrement which I also pass after eating that (former) excrement. He has to live on that (etam so upayati): the peta who used to be dependent upon my family for alms has to live day in, day out, by way of eating that excrement of mine, meaning he sustains his existence
(in this way). Of these,⁷ the man of property insulted the monks who were well behaved saying, 'I hope that you have to eat excrement for enjoying that food', but, as the one dependent upon his family for alms had incited that man of property into speaking in that way,⁸ he himself (should also be regarded as having) insulted (the monks) in that way — for this reason his life is more wretched than his.

[269] The venerable Mahāmoggallāna raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and, after pointing out the disadvantages of insulting speech, taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

⁴ Reading sādāyase as recommended by PED sv sādahatī and sādāyatī; all texts read sādahase as they do also at IV 16¹ below but where the city, however, repeats as sādāyase (Se Be at least; text mis-spells sādāyase).

⁵ Reading bhaddante with Se Be for text's bhaddante here and in v 8.

⁶ ajhāsito; Se Be read ajjhāsito.

⁷ pecca.

⁸ na sādappamāne ākāse, literally not in the space that is the size of his head.

⁹ Reading paricārako with Se Be for text's paricārako.

⁰ Reading tesu with Se Be for text's tesum.

¹ Reading tathā vacane with Be for text's Se tathā vacanena.

IV.9 EXPOSITION OF THE EXCREMENT EATING PĀTA STORY
[Gūthakhādakapetavatthuvaṭṭanā]

'After getting up out of the latrine.' This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning a pāta who ate excrement.

Her story is similar to the preceding story. There, since the vihāra was built by a (male) layfollower, it has been handed down concerning that (male) layfollower. Here, however, it was a female layfollower — this is the only difference. In the rest of the story and verses there is nothing that was not in the foregoing.
IV.10 EXPOSITION OF THE TROOP PETA STORY
[Gaṇapetavatthuvaṇṇani]

‘Naked and of hideous appearance are you.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Seta Grove concerning a large number of petas.

It is said that in Sāvatthi there was a large number of people who as a group had neither faith nor devotion, their hearts being possessed of the stain of selfishness and averse to good conduct such as giving and so on.\(^1\) They lived for a long time and at the breaking up of the body (after dying) they arose in the peta-womb close to that city. Now as the venerable Mahāmoggallāna was going to Sāvatthi one day in search of alms he saw those petas on his way and questioned them with this verse:

1. 'Naked and of hideous appearance are you, emaciated and with prominent veins. You thin ones, with your ribs standing out, now who are you, good sirs?'

Herein of hideous appearance are you (dubbaṇṇarūpā 'tha): you have hideous bodies. Now who are you? (ke nu tumhe 'tha): now who indeed might you be? Good sirs (mārisā): he addresses them as his equals.

When they heard this those petas [270] made it known that they were petas, with this verse:

2. 'We, sir,\(^2\) are petas gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed, we have gone from here to the world of the petas.'

Questioned once more about the deed they had done by the elder with this verse:

3. ‘Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?’,

they then explained that deed that they had done:

4. ‘At public bathing places we searched for small coins; though merit-offerings were at hand we made no refuge for ourselves.

5. We approach the river parched but it becomes empty; amidst the heat we approach the shade but it becomes scorched by the sun.

6. And a wind like fire blows on us, burning us, but we deserve this, sir, and other (misery) more terrible than this.

7. Moreover we travel yojanas, famished and desirous of food, but turn back without having obtained anything — indeed our merit is trifling.
8 Famished, fainting and staggering and sinking to the ground, we lie sprawling on our backs or we fall face downwards.
9 As we fall at that very spot, sinking to the ground, we bump our heads and chests — indeed our merit is trifling.
10 But we deserve this, sir, and other (misery) more terrible than this for though merit offerings were at hand we made no refuge for ourselves.
11 When we have gone, then, from here and gained the human womb we will be affable and endowed with virtue and are determined to do many skilled deeds.

7 Herein moreover we travel yojanas (api yojanāni gacchāma): we travel many yojanas even. How? Famished and desirous of food (chātā āhāragiddhino): [271] for a long time starved with hunger, we become desirous of food, craving after it, yet though we thus travel we turn back without having obtained any food whatsoever. (Our) merit is trifling (appapuññatā): (we are) lacking in merit, (we have) not done any lovely deeds.
8 We lie sprawling on our backs (uttāna paṭikirāma): we sometimes end up lying on our backs appearing as though all our limbs had been scattered. We fall face downwards (avakujjā pātāmyase), we sometimes fall ending up face downwards.
9 We (te ca): those of us. We bump our heads and chests (uraṃ sīsail ca ghattema): having fallen, ending up face downwards and unable to get up, we just knock against one another's heads and chests as we quiver in pain.

The rest is just as already explained above.

The elder raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. When they heard this the people abandoned the stain of selfishness and became given to good conduct, performing meritorious deeds such as giving and so on.\(^{12}\)

---

1 Reading maccherasamaṇgaṇiyuttācittha dānādissucaritavimukhā with Se Be for text's maccherasamaṇgaṇiyuttā cittādissucaritavimukhā.
2 Reading bhādante with Se Be for text’s bhaddante.
3 te, literally they.
4 naṇa; cp Pa 282.
5 Reading abhijjhantā with Se Be for text’s abhijjayanti.
6 Reading aputā akatakalyāṇatā with Se Be for text’s apuṇṭāya akatakalyāṇatā.
7 Reading -angapaccāṭā with Se Be for text’s -anga.
You have seen the hells and the animal womb.’ This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Jeta Grove concerning a certain vimānapeta.

It is said that many traders who were residents of Sāvatthī and Pāṭaliputta they were going by ship to Suvannabhūmi when a lay follower who was attached to a woman fell sick and died. Though he had done skilled deeds he did not arise in the devaloka but instead arose as a vimānapeta in the middle of the ocean on account of his attachment to that woman.¹ The woman to whom he had been attached set out, embarking on a ship that was heading for Suvannabhūmi. Now that peta, desiring to seize the woman, stopped the ship from moving. Then those traders, wondering what the reason might be for the ship not moving [272] passed round the stick of bad omen which, due to non-human psychic power, came to rest no less than three times with that woman alone to whom he was attached. When they saw this the traders lowered a bundle of bamboo into the ocean and then lowered the woman onto it and as soon as the woman had been lowered the ship quickly proceeded towards Suvannabhūmi. The non-human led the woman up to his mansion and enjoyed the pleasures of love with her. When she had spent a year (there) she became dissatisfied and begged the peta saying, ‘As long as I dwell here I am unable to act towards my welfare in the next world. Please take me to Pāṭaliputta, good sir.’ Begged thus by her he uttered this verse:

1 ‘You have seen the hells and the animal womb, the petas, the asuras as well as men and devas; you have seen for yourself the results of one’s deeds. I will take you unharmed to Pāṭaliputta – when you have gone there you must perform skilled deeds.’

Herein you have seen the hells (dīṭṭhā tayā nīrayā): you have even
seen some of the separate hells. The animal womb (tiracchānayonī): you have also seen animals of great majesty such as nāgas and supaṇṇas⁶ and so on — this is how it should be construed. The petas (petā): the sort of petas (that are overcome by) hunger and thirst and so on. The asuras (asurā): the Kājakaṅjakā⁷ sort of asura. Devas (devā): some of the devas of the Four Great Kings⁸ (devaloka). It is said he would take her with him from time to time by means of his majesty and go around showing her the separate hells and so on. For this reason he said, you have seen for yourself the results of one’s deeds (sayam addasa kammavipākam attaṁ): you went to a particular hell and so on and looking around you saw, you did see, for yourself, with your own eyes, the results of deeds done by oneself. I will take you unharmed to Pāṭaliputta (nissāmi taṁ Pāṭaliputtaṁ akkhataṁ): I will now take you unharmed, unhurt by anyone, to Pāṭaliputta in human form⁶ but when you have gone there you must perform skilled deeds, meaning since you have seen with your own eyes the results of deeds you should be intent on and delight in (performing) meritorious deeds.

[273] When the woman heard what he had to say she was delighted and uttered this verse:

2 'You desire my good, yakkha, you desire my welfare, devatā; I will do what you say — you are my teacher. I have seen the hells and the animal womb, the petas, the asuras as well as men and devas; I have seen for myself the results of one’s deeds. Not trifling are the meritorious deeds I am determined to do.'

The peta then took the woman and travelled through the air and set her in the middle of the city of Pāṭaliputta and then departed. When her friends and relatives and so on saw her they rejoiced thinking that though they had earlier heard that she had been put into the ocean and was dead yet now she was seen and, thankfully, had returned safely. And they assembled and asked her about the incident and she told them of everything that she had seen and experienced, right from the very beginning. Moreover those traders who were residents of Sāvatthi in due course reached Sāvatthi. They approached the Teacher at the proper time, saluted him and, seated at one side, raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the four assemblies. The people, filled with agitation, became given to skilled states such as giving and so on.

¹ Modern Patma; in the days of the Buddha it was a mere village and known as Pāṭaligāma and became important only after his death when in time it became the Mauryan capital of Aśoka. Cp DPPN ii 178f. This makes Dhammapāla's suggestion
(PvA 2) that these stories originated with the Buddha himself somewhat suspect.

1 Cp PvA 47.

2 Cp PvA 5, 145 where attachment to a woman had similar consequences.

*kālakāṇṇisālākam, literally a stick (to determine) the black-cared one, this being considered an inauspicious attribute. It is not known what the process involved. Compare the similar fate of Jonah (Jonah 1 7ff.).

4 In many places in the Nākyas only four possible realms of rebirth are mentioned — in the hells, as an animal, as a man and as a deva — e.g. M iii 163ff.; cp D i 83 where a simile describing the rebirth process has men walking along four roads. In time a fifth realm, that of the petas, was added and these five, the pañcagati, became the norm for the Theravāda whilst the Mahāyāna further increased the number to six by establishing a separate realm for the asuras. As this verse shows, these six also find mention on occasion in the Pali sources; cp D iii 264 and L i 92f.

*supāpanna, Skt suparna, literally beautiful-winged, and an epithet of Garuḍa, the bird of prey that is Viṣṇu’s steed and traditional enemy of the nāga, or snake. They often appear paired in this way — see e.g. D ii 259; S iii 240–249; Mahāvastu ii 15, 163ff., iii 324.

5 See the article on the asuras in E. Washburn Hopkins, Epic Mythology, Delhi 1974, pp. 46ff., where these are said to be Kāleyas; also R. Spence Hardy, Manual of Buddhism, Varanasi 1967, p. 59 where they are said to be a class of peta.

*Reading aparikkhataṁ manussarūpen’ eva with Se Be for text’s aparikkhata-manssarūpen’ eva.

IV.12 EXPOSITION OF THE MANGO¹ PETA STORY
[Ambapetavathuvaṇṇanā]

'This lotus pond of yours is extremely delightful.' This was said when the Teacher was staying at Sāvatthī concerning a 'mango' peta.

It is said that in Sāvatthī there was a certain householder whose wealth had become exhausted. His wife had died and he had an only daughter whom he left at the house of a friend and then, taking goods (he had bought) with a loan of a hundred kāhāpanas, he set out with a caravan in order to trade and not long afterwards turned back (for home) with the caravan, having gained an interest of five hundred kāhāpanas on top of his original capital. [274] On the way robbers came upon the caravan and surrounded it and the caravan people ran off in all directions. The householder, however, deposited his kāhāpanas in a bush and hid nearby but the robbers caught him and took his life. On account of his greed for wealth he arose as a peta in that very spot.

When the traders got back to Sāvatthī they reported the incident to his daughter who was filled with extreme unhappiness and who lamented excessively both at the death of her father and due to her anxiety for her
own means of livelihood. A man of property who had been a friend of her father then consoled her saying, 'Just as a potter's vessels all have destruction as their end, even so does the life of living beings have destruction as its end.' Death is common to all and has no antidote so you should not grieve and lament too excessively for your father. I will be a father to you and you will be a daughter to me. I will do what has to be done for your father. You can live happily in this house, untroubled just like it were your father's house.' Her grief subsided at these words of his and she became full of respect and esteem for him as though he were her own father and due to her poor circumstances she became his housekeeper. As time went on she desired to perform the rites for the dead on behalf of her father. She cooked some rice-gruel and in a bronze bowl she placed some sweet mango fruits that were fully ripe and the colour of red arsenic. She had her slave-girl carry the rice-gruel and mango fruits and went to the vihāra, saluted the Teacher and then spoke thus, 'May the Lord be kind enough to accept this donation of mine.' The Teacher, his heart stirred with great compassion, fulfilling her wish indicated that he was about to sit down. Overjoyed she spread out a fresh, clean cloth she had brought with her and prepared a seat for the noble Buddha and offered this seat to the Lord. She then sat down on the seat prepared. Then she presented the rice-gruel to the Lord and the Lord accepted the rice-gruel. She then gave rice-gruel to the monks as well, on behalf of the Sangha. After she had given the rice-gruel she once more with clean hands presented the Lord with the mango fruits which the Lord then ate. She saluted the Lord [275] and spoke thus, 'This donation I have made by way of this gift of the spread out cloth, the rice-gruel and the mango fruits, Lord, may that please reach my father.' The Lord said, 'So be it,' and showed his appreciation. She saluted the Lord, circumambulated him by the right, and then left. As soon as she dedicated that donation the peta obtained a mango grove, a park, a mansion, a wish-granting tree and a lotus pond as well as great heavenly excellence. Then on a future occasion when those traders were going along in order to trade, they came upon that same road and made their camp for the night at the place they had stayed at before. When he saw them the vimānapeta revealed himself to them together with his park and mansion and so on. On seeing him those traders uttered these two verses enquiring about the excellence he had received:

1. "This lotus pond of yours is extremely delightful. Its beautiful banks are level and it has abundant water. It is in full blossom and is dotted all over with swarms of bees — how did you come by this lovely (pond)?
And this mango grove of yours is extremely delightful and bears fruit in all seasons. It is in full blossom and is dotted all over with swarms of bees—how did you come by this mansion?

Herein extremely delightful: surammā=suṇāthu ramanīyā (resolution of compound). Are level (sama): have level surfaces. Beautiful banks (supatitthā): beautiful bathing places on account of their stairways made of jewels. It has abundant water (mahodakā): it has plenty of water.

In all seasons (sabbonukam): it causes happiness on account of its trees and so on that come into blossom and bear fruit in all seasons. For this reason it was said, 'and bears fruit'. It is in full blossom (supupphitam): it is permanently in blossom.

When he heard this the peta uttered this verse explaining what had been the cause of his obtaining that lotus pond and so on:

'A gift of ripe mangoes, water and rice-gruel was given by my daughter—it is because of this that this cool and delightful shade is received by me here.'

[276] Herein it is because of this...is received by me here (tena me idha labbhati): since that gift of ripe mangoes, water and rice-gruel given by my daughter to the Lord and the monks was given by her on my behalf, it is because of this gift given by my daughter that ripe mangoes (are received by me) here in this heavenly mango grove in all seasons and heavenly water in this lovely heavenly lotus pond; whilst it is because of that gift of the rice-gruel and the spread out (cloth) that this cool and delightful shade (found) in this park, this mansion and this wish-granting tree and so on is received here, that is, is accomplished.

When he had spoken thus the peta took the traders and showed them the five hundred kahāpanas saying, 'You may take half of this and give the (other) half to my daughter telling her to clear my debt and to live in comfort.' In due course the traders reached Sāvatthī and told his daughter and gave her (everything including) the portion he had given to them. She gave a hundred kahāpanas to his creditors and gave the rest to the man of property who had been a friend of her father and, as for herself, stayed on acting as his housekeeper. But he gave it back to her saying, 'All this is yours alone', and made her mistress of the household of his eldest son. As time went on she had a son and she would utter this verse as she nursed him:

'Behold the result, in this life even, of giving, of restraint and self control. I was a slave-girl in my master's family and am now his daughter-in-law and mistress of the house.'
Then one day the Teacher, having perused the maturity of her perception, diffused his radiance and revealed himself as though he were standing face to face with her and then uttered this verse:

S

‘He who is not diligent is conquered by the agreeable appearance of the disagreeable, by the lovely appearance of the unlovely and by the pleasant appearance of that which is misery.’

At the end of this verse she was established in the sotāpatti-fruit. On the following day she gave alms to the order of monks with the Buddha at its head [277] and then raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.

1 Be reads Ambavana, Mango Grove, here.
2 Cp Sn 577.
3 Reading paṭippassaddhasokā with Se Be for text’s paṭippasaddhasokā.
4 Cp PvA 81.
5 samudditthā, pp of samuddisati; not listed by PED.
6 Reading supatīthā with Se for text’s Be sutīthā; cp II 128, PvA 77.
7 Reading supupphitā with Se Be for text’s sampupphitā in 1; similarly supupphitām for sampupphitām in 2.
8 Reading sukhāvaham with Se Be for text’s sukhāvaham.
9 Reading attano pitu sahāyassa tassa kuṭumbikassā datvā sayamp veyyāvaccan karoṇī nivasati with Se Be for text’s attano pitu sahāyassa tassvā sayam veyyāvaccan karoṇī tassvā kuṭumbikassā niyādesi.
10 Reading upālāpenti with Se Be for text’s upālāpenti and not upālāpenti as recommended by PED or upālāpeti.
11 This verse recurs at Ud 18 and J i 410, the city on the latter stating that those who are not diligent and in whom mindfulness is not present are conquered, overcome and smothered by the illusory appearance of these three (tattha asātāṃ sātārūpenā tī madhuram eva madhurapatirūpakeṇa, pammattam ativattati ti, asātāṃ appiyam dukkhan ti evam tivāhān pi etena sātārūpadānā kārīnā sati vippayāvasavasa pammattapuggalam ativattati, abhibhavati ajjhothtarati ti attho). Cp the similar sentiments at S iv 127. Gethman’s interpretation is quite wrong; moreover the reading of pammattam is common to all texts, including Ud and J, and is clearly preferable to his suggested samattam.

IV.13 EXPOSITION OF THE TREE-AXLE PETA STORY

[Akkharukkhapetavattthuvaggana]

‘When one gives it is not (just) there.’ This is the Donor of an Axle Peta Story.¹ How did it originate?
When the Lord was staying at Sāvatthi a certain layfollower who was a resident of Sāvatthi filled some carts with goods and went to Videha in order to trade. He sold his goods there and loaded his carts with goods (he had bought) in return and then took the road leading towards Sāvatthi. As he was going along that road in the forest the axle of one of his carts broke. Now a certain man who had left his village and who was having his hatchet and axe carried along for the purpose of fetching a tree was wandering about in the forest and came upon that place. He saw the layfollower’s dejection on account of that broken axle and thought, ‘This trader is in distress in the forest on account of that broken axle’, and taking pity on him he cut down a tree, made a sturdy axle and presented it (to the trader) and fixed it to the cart. He died in due course and arose as a terrestrial devatā at that same spot in the forest. Having reflected upon his deeds he went by night to the house of that layfollower and uttered this verse as he stood at the door of the house:

1. “When one gives it is not (just) there – you should just give gifts; when one has given one crosses over both, one goes to both by this means. Be alert! Do not be negligent!”

Herein when one gives it is not (just) there (yam dadāti na tam hoti): when a donor gives a merit-offering it is not just there in the world beyond that the fruit of that gift comes into existence for there is much other agreeable and enjoyable fruit besides. Therefore you should just give gifts (detha eva dānāṃ): you should just give gifts as are appropriate. Then he stated the reason: when one has given one crosses over both (datvā ubhayam tarati): [278] when one has given gifts one passes beyond misery and misfortune both in this life and in the next world. One goes to both by this means (ubhayam tena gacchati): one reaches, one attains to, both happiness in this life and in the next world by means of these gifts. The meaning is to be construed, moreover, as the well being and happiness both for oneself and for others. Be alert! Do not be negligent! (jāgaratha mā pamaj-jatha) means be alert to procure gifts that yield both (types of) well being and that ward off both (types of) misfortune in this way. Prepare the materials for the gifts and be diligent therein. This is said, in a repetitive manner here in order to show respect.

When the trader had accomplished what he had to do he turned back and in due course reached Sāvatthi. He approached the Teacher on the following day, saluted him and, seated at one side, raised the issue with the Lord. The Teacher took the matter as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there. That teaching was of benefit to those people.
IV.14 EXPOSITION OF THE ACCUMULATION OF WEALTH
PETA STORY
[Bhogasampharanapetavatvhananā]¹

"We accumulated wealth," This is the Accumulation of Wealth Peta Story.² How did it originate?

It is said that when the Lord was staying in the Bamboo Grove there were four women in Rājagaha who engaged in trading in ghee, honey, oil and grain and so on, making their living by the improper accumulation of wealth by way of giving false measures and so forth. At the breaking up of the body after dying they arose³ as petīs in a moat outside that city. At night they⁴ were overwhelmed with misery and wandered about making a great and terrific sound howling:

1. "We accumulated wealth properly and improperly. This is now enjoyed by others whilst our share is misery."

The people were frightened when they heard this and at daybreak they prepared a great almsgiving for the order of monks with the Buddha at its head and having invited the Teacher and the order of monks they served them with the choicest hard and soft foods. When the Lord had finished his meal and had withdrawn his hand from the bowl they sat down nearby and related the incident. The Lord said, 'Layfollowers, [279] there is no danger whatsoever to you in that sound. It is only four petīs who, overwhelmed with misery, lamenting and crying aloud in their distress after talking of the evil deed they had done, uttered this verse:
2. "We accumulated wealth properly and improperly. This is now enjoyed by others whilst our share is misery."

2. Herein wealth (bhoge): particular possessions and means such as clothes and ornaments and so on that are known as 'wealth' (bhoga) because they can be enjoyed (paribhunjitabbathena). We accumulated (samharimha): with our hearts overcome by the stain of selfishness we heaped up, not giving anything to anyone. Properly and improperly (samena visamena ca): rightly and wrongly, or wrongly but with the appearance of being right. That wealth accumulated by us is now enjoyed by others. Whilst our share is misery (mayam dukkhassa bhāgīt): through our lack of good conduct towards anyone and our bad conduct we must now share this great misery that belongs to the peta-womb, meaning we are suffering great misery.

When the Lord had thus spoken the verse uttered by the petīs and related the incident he took it as an arisen need and taught Dhamma to the company assembled there, afterwards explaining the (Four Noble) Truths at the end of which many arrived at the sotāpatti-fruit and so on.

1 Sāq Se Be for text's Bhogasamharapetavatthuvaṭṭpanā.  
2 Here spelt correctly.  
3 Reading nibbattiṁsu with Se Be for text's nibbattiṁsu.  
4 Reading tā with Se Be for text's ta.  
5 Reading antarāyo with Se Be for text's antārayo.

IV.15 EXPOSITION OF THE WEALTHY MERCHANT'S SONS
PETA STORY
[Setṭhiputtapetavatthuvaṭṭpanā]

'For sixty thousand years.' This is the Wealthy Merchant's Sons Peta Story. How did it originate?

The Lord was staying in the Jeta Grove at Sāvatthi. Now at that time the Kosalan king Pasenadi was going about the city in great royal power, in great royal splendour, dressed and adorned and mounted on the back of the most stately elephant. He saw a woman who was endowed with a beauty resembling that of a deva-nymph1 who had opened a window on the upper terrace of a certain house and who was looking down at that royal glory.2 With his heart possessed by the assailing of the defilements
that quickly arose upon (sight of) this visual object (the like of which) he had not seen before and although\(^3\) he had [280] a harem whose members were endowed with distinctive qualities such as good family, beauty and good conduct and so on, he nevertheless fell in love with that woman on account of his heart being of a frivolous nature and difficult to tame. He signalled to a man seated nearby as if to say, ‘You see that terraced dwelling and that woman’, and then entered the royal residence. Everything else\(^4\) is to be understood as already stated earlier in the Ambasakkhara Peta Story\(^5\) but with this difference. Here the man arrived just before sunset when the city gate was closed and hung\(^6\) the red clay and water lilies he had brought on the gate post and then went\(^7\) to the Jeta Grove in order to sleep whilst the king, who had gone to sleep in the royal bed chamber, heard in the middle watch of the night the four syllables sa, na, du, so as if uttered in distress from a huge throat. It is said that these are the initial syllables of the verses uttered by the four sons of a wealthy merchant who were long ago residents of Sāvatthī and who in their youth\(^8\) were drunk with the pride of wealth and went with the wives of others thereby producing much demerit. Later on they died and arose close to that very city in the Iron Cauldron.\(^9\) As they were being boiled they would rise up to the rim of the Iron Cauldron, each desiring to utter a verse,\(^10\) but as soon as they had uttered the first syllable they were afflicted with (painful) feelings and sank back into the Iron Cauldron. When the king heard that noise he became frightened and agitated and his hair stood on end. He spent the rest of the night in misery and at dawn had his chief priest sent for and told him of the incident. When the chief priest came to know of the king’s fright he, greedy for gain, thought, ‘A means of gain for me and the brahmans has indeed arisen’,\(^11\) and said, ‘Great king, a great calamity has arisen for sure — you must perform the fourfold sacrifice of everything.’\(^12\) On hearing this reply the king commanded his special advisers saying, ‘Have prepared whatever is necessary for the fourfold sacrifice of everything!’ When she heard this queen Mallikā said to the king, ‘Why is it, great king, that you listen to the words of that brahmin and now wish to perform rites in which countless living beings will be harmed and slaughtered? Surely it is the Lord who exercises unobstructed knowledge in all things who should be asked [281] and one should then act in accordance with the Lord’s reply.’ When the king heard what she had to say he went into the Teacher’s presence and raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord said, ‘Great king, there is no danger to you whatsoever from that source’, and then explained the issue, right from the very beginning, of those creatures who had arisen in the Iron Cauldron hell. He then completed the verses that they had each separately begun to utter saying:
'In all we have been boiled in hell for a full sixty thousand years — when will there be an end of this?'

'There will be no end — why should there be an end? No end is in sight, for such is the way in which those wicked deeds were done by you and me, good sirs.'

'We led a wicked life; though at hand we did not give (therefrom) — though merit-offerings were at hand we made no refuge for ourselves.'

'When I have gone, then, from here and gained the human womb I will be affable and endowed with virtue and am determined to do many skilled deeds.'

Herein for sixty thousand years: sātthivassasahassāni=vasānam sātthisahassāni (resolution of compound). It is said that the creature that arises in the Iron Cauldron hell travels downwards for thirty thousand years until he reaches the lowest level whereupon he travels upwards again for a similar thirty thousand years until he reaches a spot at its rim. In order to make us aware of this he desired to utter the verse (beginning:) 'In all (we have been boiled in hell) for a full sixty thousand years' but after saying so he was afflicted with extremely (painful) feelings and sank back face downwards. The Lord, however, completed it and related it to the king. This is to be applied in the remaining verses too. Herein when will there be an end of this? (kādā anto bhavissati): when will there be an end, a conclusion, of this misery of our being boiled in the Iron Cauldron hell?

For such is the way in which (tathā hi): just as there will be no end, no end is in sight, of this misery of yours and mine, such is the way, such is the mode, in which those wicked deeds were done by you and me — it is to be taken thus with this alteration of inflection.

A wicked life (dujjvitam): a life to be reproached by the wise. Though at hand (ye sante): though those merit-offerings were at hand, in existence for us. [282] We did not give: na dadamhase=na adamha (alternative grammatical form). To make the meaning of what he had said more clear he then said, 'though merit-offerings were at hand we made no refuge for ourselves'.

I: so haṃ=so aham (resolution of compound). Then (nuna) is a particle of reflection on what is said. From here (ito): from this Iron Cauldron hell. Have gone (gantvā): have departed. Gained the human womb (yonīṃ laḍḍhāna mānusim): gained the human womb, existence in the human state. Affable (vadariṇī): of a generous nature, or affable to beggars. Endowed with virtue (śīlasampanno): endowed with virtuous
conduct. Am determined to do many skilled deeds (kāhāni kusalaṁ bahun): without falling into negligence as I did before I am determined to do many, abundant, skilled deeds, meritorious deeds, meaning I will heap them up.

When the Teacher had spoken these verses he taught Dhamma in detail. At the end of that teaching the man who had fetched the clay and red water lilies was established in the sotāpatti-fruits. The king, full of agitation, abandoned coveting the wives of others and was satisfied with his own wife.

1 Cp PVA 46.
3 Reading rājavibhūtim with Se Be for text's rājavibhūtim.
4 Reading sati pi with Se Be for text's sati.
4 Reading purasaṁ imaṁ pāśadām imaṁ ca itthiṁ upadhārehi ti saṁhaṁ datvā rājageham pavilītho. Aññaṁ sabbāṁ with Se Be (2 PVA 216) for text's purasaṁ saṁhaṁ datvā sabbāṁ.
1 IV 1.
6 Reading laggitvā with Se Be for text's laggitvā.
7 Reading agamāś with Se Be for text's āgamāśi.
8 Reading yobbanakāle with Se Be for text's yobbanakāle.
8 Cp PVA 221.
8 Reading ekakā gāthāṁ vattukāmehi uccāritāññāṁ tāsīṁ with Se Be for text's ekakā gāthāṁ vattukāmehi uccāritāññā. Tāsīṁ.
11 Text mispunctuates, the brahmin's opening words being uppanno kho and not just kho.
11 sabbacatukkaṁ yanāṁ; this expression occurs at J i 335, where it is rendered 'wherever four roads meet' which cannot be correct given the sequel in which a pit is dug outside the town for the sacrifice, and also in the Iron Cauldron Jātaka (No. 314) which records the same episode as this story and from which it is clear that four of every living creature, including men, were sacrificed and apparently later eaten by the brahmans. The 'dream' also occurs in the city on S i 142 – see Gehman 109 n. 1 and KS i 102 n. 1.
13 Reading mārisā with Be for text's Se mārīsa.
14 Reading so 'ham with Be for text's So so hi.
15 So Se Be for text's vassānam sattivassāṇi sahasāṇi.
14 Initial syllable of sattivassāṇa sahasāṇi, first word of the verse; the other three are similarly the initial syllables of the opening words of the other verses: na(tthi), du(jjīvatam) and so('ham).
17 The dative/genitive forms tuyham mayham of the verse should be altered to their instrumental forms tayā mayā; they were rendered above with this instrumental sense.
18 Cp BvA 69 and PVA 123.
19 Reading manussayonīṁ manussattabhāvam with Be for text's yoniṁ manussattabhāvam; Se reads yoniṁ manussattabhāvam.
20 Reading pariccāgasilō yaćakānaṁ with Be for text's Se pariccāgasilō vā yaćaka-kānaṁ.
'Why do you, like a madman?' This was said when the Teacher was staying in the Bamboo Grove concerning a certain peta.

It is said that long ago in the city of Benares a certain cripple was skilled in the practice of slinging stones. When he had thus reached perfection in the art of throwing gravel he would sit at the foot of a banyan tree at the city gate and by striking banyan leaves with gravel he would cause patterns of elephants, horses, chariots, men, pinnacled houses with flags, full water pots and so on to appear on them. The boys of the city would give him the small change they had been given as pocket-money and had him exercise his arts at their pleasure. Then one day when the king of Benares left the city he came to the foot of that banyan tree. He saw the various forms and patterns such as that of the elephant and so on applied to those banyan leaves and asked the people, 'Who has made these various forms and patterns in this way on these banyan leaves?' The people pointed to the cripple, saying, 'They were done by him, your majesty.' [283] The king summoned him and spoke thus, 'Look here, would it be possible for you to fill the belly of a man with pellets of goat dung while he is talking and without his knowing it if I point him out?' 'It should be possible, your majesty' (he replied). The king took him to the royal dwelling and, tired at the constant chatter of his chief priest, had that chief priest sent for. He sat down with him in a secluded space surrounded by a screen wall and, whilst taking counsel (with him) had the cripple sent for. The cripple came bringing a hollow stalk filled with pellets of goat dung and, having noted the king's position, sat down facing the chief priest and when the latter's mouth was open sent the pellets of goat dung through an opening in the screen, one by one, to the bottom of his throat. Being unable, out of shame, to retch (in front of the king) he had to swallow them all. When his stomach was filled with pellets of goat dung the king dismissed him saying, 'Go, brahmin, you have received the fruit of your constant chatter. When you have drunk the drink that is prepared from the crushed fruit and the leaves and so on of the piyaṅgu you will throw up.' In this way you will be all right', and, delighted with what the cripple had done, gave him fourteen villages. After obtaining these villages he was himself happy and pleased and he made his attendants happy and pleased too. He lived in comfort but he did not ignore his interests in both this same life and in the next world and would give whatever was appropriate to those in need such as recluses and brahmans and so on, whilst he would give food
and remuneration to those who had approached him whilst they trained in his art. Then a man approached him and spoke thus, ‘Please be my teacher and train me in this art but I have no use for your food as wages.’ He trained that man in the art. As one trained in the art he left desiring to test his art and, by striking him with gravel, he split the head of the Pacceka-buddha Sunettha who was sitting on the bank of the Ganges and the Pacceka-buddha attained Parinibbāna right there on the bank of the Ganges. [284] When the people heard of this incident they struck him there and then with cloths of earth and sticks and so on and took his life. When he died he arose in the great hell of Avīci and was boiled for many thousands of years in that hell. During this Buddha-period he arose, as a residual effect of that same deed, as a peta not far from the city of Rājagaha. As the result must be in accordance with the deed, sixty thousand iron hammers were lifted up morning, noon and night by the impulse of that deed and then fell down upon his head at which, with his head cut and split and afflicted with extremely (painful) feelings, he would fall to the ground — but as soon as the iron hammers had gone away he would stand with his head restored to its original state. Then one day the venerable Mahāmoggallāna, descending from the Vulture Peak, saw him and questioned him with this verse:

1  ‘Why do you, like a madman, dart about like a startled deer? You are without doubt an evil-doer — why do you make that noise?’

1 Herein like a madman (ummattarūpo va): like one who is by nature mad, like one driven to distraction. Dart about like a startled deer (migo bhanto va dhāvati): dart about here and there like a startled deer. Not seeing any shelter as the iron hammers are falling he flees this way and that (hoping), ‘Maybe it will not strike me here.’ But lifted up by the impulse of that deed they fell right on the top of his head wherever he is standing. Why do you make that noise? (kiṃ tu saddāyase tuvām): why do you make that sound, why do you roam about making that cry of utter distress?

When he heard this the peta gave reply with these two verses:

2  ‘I, sir, am a peta gone to a miserable existence in the world of Yama. Having done a wicked deed I have gone from here to the world of the petas.

3  [285] In all a full sixty thousand hammers fall down on my head and these split my head.’

3 Herein sixty thousand hammers (satṭhikūpasahassāni): as many as sixty thousand iron hammers. A full (paripunna): nothing short of. In all (sabbasa): in total. It is said that his head became the size of a mountain
peak, sufficiently large for sixty thousand iron hammers to fall upon. Those falling hammers split his head to the extent that not even a spot through which the tip of a hair could pierce was left. For this reason he makes his agonised cry; for this reason he said, ‘in all (a full sixty thousand hammers) fall down on my head and these split my head’.

The elder then spoke two verses enquiring about the deed he had done:

4 ‘Now what evil deed was done by you by body, speech or mind? As a result of which deed have you gone from here to the world of the petas?

5 (Why do) in all a full sixty thousand hammers fall down on your head and (why do) these split your head?’

The peta spoke three verses explaining the deed that he had done:

6 ‘I saw the Buddha Sunettha, one in whom the faculties were developed, seated at the foot of a tree, meditating and having nothing to fear from any quarter.

7 By means of a blow through slinging stones I split his head — it is as a result of that deed that I undergo this misery:

8 In all a full sixty thousand hammers fall down on my head and these split my head.’

6 Herein the Buddha (sambuddham): the Pacceka-Buddha. Sunettha (Sunettam): the one of that name. One in whom the faculties were developed (bhāvitindriyam): one in whom the faculties of faith and so on were developed by cultivation of the ariyan path.

7 By means of a blow through slinging stones (sālittakappahāraṇena): by striking through slinging stones in the following way: that practice of throwing gravel with the fingers alone or with a small bow called a sling. An alternative reading is ‘by striking through slinging stones’ (sālittakappahāranena). I split: bhindissam=bhindim (alternative grammatical form).

[286] When he heard this the elder uttered the concluding verse showing that the fruit of that earlier deed that he was now receiving was quite in accordance with the deed he had done:

9 ‘It serves you right, you wretched man, that in all a full sixty thousand hammers fall down on your head and these split your head.’

9 Herein it serves you right (dhammena): it is with accordant cause. You: te=tava (alternative grammatical form). This fruit that has come to you is quite appropriate to that wicked deed that you did in offending that Pacceka-Buddha. He points out therefore that this cannot be evaded
by anyone whether deva or Māra or Brahmā or, moreover, even a Perfect Buddha.

Now when he had spoken thus he went from there to the city in search of alms and when he had finished his meal he approached the Teacher in the evening and raised the issue with the Lord. The Lord took the matter as an arisen need and, whilst teaching Dhamma to the four assemblies, made known the magnificent qualities of the Paccekabuddhas and how deeds are not barren. The people, filled with agitation, were also filled with faith; they abandoned wicked deeds and became given to meritorious deeds such as giving and so on.

The exposition of the Sixty Thousand Hammers Peta Story is concluded — thus the exposition of the meaning of the fourth, Great, chapter, that is adorned with sixteen stories in these Peta Stories of the Khuddaka Nikāya is concluded.

1 This part of the story should be compared with the Sālittaka Jātaka (No. 107) in which it is stated that he cut the leaves into these shapes by hurling the gravel at them.

2 Reading appitā with Be for text’s anappā; Se reads anappaso.

3 Be reads maddanaphalapiyānguttādiṇhi for text’s maddanaphalam piyānguppattādiṇhi with which Se agrees except for making it one compound. I propose reading maddanaphalapiyānguppattādiṇhi on the grounds that the fruit is surely crushed, madana, rather than intoxicating, madana, and that since such crushing might well include its skin, taca, it is more likely that it was its leaves, patta, that were also added to the concoction. The piyāngu is panic seed, Panicum Italicum, and was used as an emetic.

4 uchadhijhi, not listed by Childers or PED, whilst CPD, although noticing the occurrence of this verb in the Be of PvA 256, fails to notice this occurrence upon which all texts are unanimous.

5 Reading ahāpentō with Se Be for text’s gāhāpentō.

6 astikāṇaṃ; Se Be omit.

7 mayham pana alam bhattavetanena; this use of alam with the instrumental is not listed by PED but cp CPD sv.

8 parinībbāyi.

9 Cp PvA 206.

10 Reading pāpakammando with Be and IV 84 for text’s Se pāpakammaṃ.

11 Cp IV 84.

12 Reading ummattakasabhāvo with Be for text’s Se ummattasabhāvo; cp PvA 39.

13 Reading na siya with Se Be for text’s siya.

14 The word for ‘peak’ and ‘hammer’ is the same here (kūṭa) and some pun is no doubt intended.

15 Reading vālakkajāññittudanamabbitam with Se (Be -mitudana-) for text’s bālakojāññittumabbitam.

16 Reading addasāsin with Se Be for text’s addusāsin.

17 That is, the five (spiritual) faculties of faith, energy, mindfulness, concentration and wisdom. See e.g. E. Conze, The Way of Wisdom, Kandy 1964, Buddhist Publication Society Wheel Series Nos. 65/66.

18 Reading -payogo tathā sakkharāya paharanena. Sālittakappaharanena ti vā pāṭho
with Se for text’s payogo. Tatha sakkhara ya pahara pana sa littakappahare ti va pa the. Be differs considerably.
Reading bhindi saan ti bhindi m with Se Be for text’s te bhindi saan ti te bhindi m.
Cp PVA 125.
Reading ava bhatam with Se Be for text’s avatthanam (listed by PED as avatthanam).
So Be.

CONCLUDING REMARKS

Thus:

1 Those who arise amongst the petas have all been doers of evil deeds; on account of those deeds the fruit for them is evil and severe.
2 Demonstrating and explaining this by means of questions and answers [287] is the teaching that by necessity stimulates beings with agitation,
3 That forms a topic of conversation that is skilled and that is well founded on a thorough understanding (of the subject), namely, the Peta Stories that were rehearsed by the Great Masters.
4 Depending thereon, after the manner of their ancient commentary, to clarify their meaning, I have undertaken this exposition of their meaning,
5 Namely, this Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning that appropriately clarifies the intrinsic meanings at various places herein,
6 This unconfused resolution (of the subtle meanings) which comprises of as many as fifteen textual recitation sections has now reached conclusion.
7-8 May all creatures plunge into the Teaching of the Saviour of the World by means of the majesty of whatever merit that has been attained by me through its composition in this way and may they partake in the flavour of release through behaviour that is pure and virtuous and so on.
9 May the Teaching of the Perfect Buddha long remain in the world and may all living beings constantly have reverence for it.
10 May the (rain-)deva also rain properly and at the right time and may the Lord of the Earth be devoted to the true Dhamma and rule the world in accordance with that Dhamma alone.
Thus the exposition of the meaning of the Peta Stories performed by the venerable Ācariya Dhammapāla, monk and noble sage and resident of the Badarātittha Vihāra, is concluded.

The Commentary on the Peta Stories is accomplished.

1 nigamanakathā, Be only.
2 ettāvatā ca; so Se Be, text omits.
3 Reading vibhāventi with Se Be for text’s vibhāventi.
4 Reading vaddhānī with Se Be for text’s vaddhānī.
5 Be reads satam for text’s Se satta in which case the meaning would be ‘stimulates a hundredfold with agitation’.
6 Reading kathāvatthuṣalu with Se Be for text’s gāthāvatthuṣalu; such skilled or profitable topics are enumerated at M iii 113; Miln 344 etc.
7 Reading tassa with Se Be for text’s tathā.
8 Cp Pā 42.
9 Reading tassānubhāvena with Be for text’s kammasānubhāvena; Se reads assānubhāvena.
10 See GS i 32 n. 5, iv 139 n. 5.
11 Reading jagatipati with Se Be for text’s jagati sādā; it is an honorific title for a king.
12 Dhammena; it may mean merely justly.
14 Dhammapāla was a native of Kāñcipuram and thus in all probability a Tamil and spent most of his time at the Badarātittha Vihāra on the south-east coast of India, a little to the south of Madras. See G. P. Malalasekera, The Pali Literature of Ceylon, Colombo 1958, pp. 112 ff.; also DPPN i 114 ff.
I. INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

Numbers refer to page irrespective of whether prose or verse; superscript numbers denote the footnote on the page specified; asterisk (*) denotes a (usually fanciful) etymology.

Abhidharmma 4 139 142
Abhññā 168
Abuse 14 48 97 149 277 278, -ive 60 61
          108 109 256 257 259 277
Adept 275
Adulterous 158 161 163 164, -tery 158
          164, -tress 158
Actual(s) 24 33 33 175 256 276*,
          great 261 262, simile of the length
          of a great 261f. - long 106?
Agitation 3 33 37 43 48 58 61 63 80
          82 96 111 112 151 165 172 186 195
          205 224 242 243 254 255 276 283
          291 293 297 298 299
Ājīvika 82
Alkaline 222 223
Alms vii 20 21 24 25 27 28 29 30 31 32
          34* 35* 39 46 49 58 60 62 63 80
          98 99 110 112 114 115 116 117 119
          124 125 126 127 128 129 130 131
          132 133 134 135 136 146 156
          157* 189 212 213 254 259 260 275
          287, dependent upon a family for 218
          277 278 279, going about for/after
          - 154 275, in search of 39 46
          51 54 101 138 151 189 190 192 193
          217 257 268 280 297
Almsbowl 273 275
Almsfood 16 17 147 151 189 245
Almsgiving 20 22 23 24 25 27 39 56 62
          69 85 99 112 112* 119 127 129 131
          132 134 136 137 138 139 140 142
          145* 146* 156 174 181 195 200
          205 211 260 270 272 289
Almsman 136
Almsman 136
Alms materials 113 135 211, materials
          for the gifts 288
Almsround 42 193 246, uninterrupted -
          257
Almserworthy vii 146* 11
Analysis of the elements 49
Ancestors 21
Anger 59 90 222 229 235, gry 38 89 90
          92 123 150 202 234
Animal 113* 172 175 23 283 284*,
          womb of -s 172, -womb 30 282
          283
Anjali 54 82 101 149 164 189 190 243
Anoint 53 79 243 247
Antarāparinibbāyan 147 133
Antelope, kadāt 161 163
Appreciation 10 20 22 26 28 29 49 51
          87 95 149 211 269 285, - ted 81
Arhant(s) ix 3 5 8 9* 10 11 13 13 13
          19 62 63 80 88 104 113 113
          148 174 176 174 187 191 213
          239 240 241 252 265 265 276 276
          276*, the - ix 3 222 223 224, fruit
          275, -ship 18 57 63 190 242 251 275
          252* 260
Ariyan (adj) 220 245 248, (individual)
          28 63 143 154 157 257 263,
          - path(s) 141 148 191 296
Ariyasaṅgha 3 49 64* 113* 117
Army 254, 255
Arsenic, rod 285
Arūpāvacara 147 133
Āsava 9 11 51 2 27 254
Āsava-free 104
Austerity 105
Axle 287 288
Bamboo 185 282
Bandhuṣṭiṣṭa 11
Banyan 3 119 120 125 147 133 254 255
          294
Barber 131 145 180 185
Barren 36 89 203 297
Basket (a measure) 257 262, makers 182
          184 185
INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

39 49 86 87 116 117 192 194 239
240 241 257 272 285
Deceit 60 179 214 215 216 217 295
-hunter 214 215 217 218
-stalker 217
Defecate 278
Defilements 9 54 (monk*) 154 (monk*)
239 240 290
Delusion 6 257 262
Demeanor 291, 207 (act of), -torious deed 51
Desert region 128, - wilderness 107 119
125 131
Desire(s) 8 12 19 77 86 153 182 185
199 237 239 240 257 271, hand that
grants - 119 120 124 125 127 128
Destiny 66 67 68 82 127 174 182 185
186 278
Destitute 6 68
Devadatta vii 8 9 10 19 20 21 30 33 103
104 113 116 117 123 124 125 128
132 133 138 139 140 142 143
143 153 156 186 187 192 195
199 206 208 209 216 239 247 255
256 257 258 263 265 270 271
282 283 284 297
Deva, beings 223, -daughters 216, -form
100, - nymph 49 290, - sons 216, -rain
298, sky 141
Devas, Deva of 142, terrestrial 7 12
12 47 58 147 229, world of the
vii
Devadatta 214
Devaloka 7 11 12 22 24 69 87 95
111 133 142 143 155 185 187
195 222 238 272 282 283
Devajñata 208
Devaputta 8 11 20 47 48 49 59 100
119 120 121 124 127 138 141 160
179 214 216 267
Devas, vii 12 20 47 54 55 76 87
88 92 98 117 140 142 198 207
210 216 222 237 238 240 241
243 247 254 256 258 283, guardian
85, household 20 21, "terrestrial"
119 288, tree 8 47
Devī 76 87 92 98 198
Dhamma 3 6 13 57 152 245 257
258, became given to the - 200,
devotion for - 172, established in
the - 235 236, expounded - 149,
heard - 58 149 172 235 236 237,
hearing - 140, in accordance with
the - 28 83 92 95 99 242 252 298
King of the - 181, listen to
242, proclaim the - 244, respect for
- 243, skilled in the - 62, talk on
- 32 43 54 69 151 189 240, taught
- 15 19 22 39 44 49 56 57 58 63 82
88 96 99 104 112 117 156 165 195
200 204 213 216 224 249 270 279
281 283 287 288 290 293, taught
- sutting the dispositions of 186 205
272, teach - 4 217 271, teaching -
8 103 241 297, teaching on - 43 45
49 106 173 181 205 263, took delight
in the - 165, Treasurer of the - 4
5th, true - 298, units of the - 4,
Wheel of the (Noble) - 4 24 51 73
83 107 153 163 200
Dhamma-farers 236, - followers 204, -hall
206, - of the worthy man 121 123,
-talk 106
Dhammacakkhu 13 19 113 30
Disposition 92 207
- Doe 60
Dog 158 159 161 163 164 206 216
Dona 257 262 266
Donation 21 22 26 28 32 49 52 53 56
75 77 86 87 92 95 98 116 117 138
180 181 212 213 243 246 254 272
285
Drum(s) 79 218, execution - 7, kettle
- 97 198 199
Dust 90 91 92 122, gold 198, heap 149
194
Efforts, four right 105
Egg-born 187 21
Eightfold path 107 257 263, - vow 245
248
Elder(s) 4 7 8 14 15 16 17 39 40 41 42
73 74 75 77 80 84 84 85 86 87
101 138 149 150 158 189 190 191
192 193 194 195 196 200 204 215
216 217 219 240 241 242 243 248
264 268 269 273 277 278 280 281
296
Elementary Substances 256 261
Elephant(s) 54 57 58 59 60 79 159 179
189 229 254 255 256 274 290 294
Embryo 38 40 41
Enemy(ies) 9 66 161 278, tamer of your
- 255 256 257 258 259
Evil 271 272 298, - character 267, -
conduct 237, - deed 38 41 74 90 97
108 151 162 211 218 220 222 233
243 277 280 289 296 298, - doe 277
295, - nature 215
Envy 27 36 39 40 90 94 185 277, -ed 94,
INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

-ous 90 92 183 277
Excellence 24 25 29 31 39 55 73 77 79
80 81 104 117 126 136 139 153 154
173 176 185 197 205 206 213 216
260 285, heavenly – x 19 32 78 81
95 99 138 139 151 159 160 197 200
206 208 216 219 224 248 285
Excrement 35** 46 47 48 49 85 91 93
202 203 277 278 279
Excreted 207, -tion 203 204
Execrated 230, -tion 7 11* 159
Exhausted 114 115 120 128 131 132
133 153 269 284, -tion 6 66 104 115
155 200
Existence(s) 3 31 55 66 94 109 110 158
171 172 173 176** 184 191 195 209
223 233 261 262 273 278 292, happy – vi 237 238, miserable – vi 237 238
37 41 74 77 91 108 108 190 191
211 212 213 215 216 218 237 238
239 277 280 295
Eye, Buddha 65 205, heavenly 7, – of knowledge 172

Fatallion 263**
Fat 256 260 261 262
Fatigue 6 120 121 131 254
Field 3 4 5 9 10 11 13* 144 207, gone to the – 138 200,
merit – (see s.v. Merit)
Fire 39 41 44 45 64** 65 105 172 182
183 211 212 280, great – 233, hell – 189
First Sermon 63*
Fish 189 269
Fisherman(men) 189 276*
Fleeces, woollen 161 163 182 217
Files 36 37 39 40
Former birth(s) 268, knowledge of – 175* 250**
Former lives 274, remembering – 189
Four assemblies 15 297
Four truths 13 13 19 45 69 105 106
113* 142 173 276 290
Friend(s) vi 26 30 31 32 67 68 93 121
122 185 202 214 219 230 231 232
243 274 278 283 284 285 286, lovely – 197
Friendliness, mind of (mettacittam) (see also Loving kindness) 173 176**
Fruit 3 9 10 13** 15 20 21 22 26 27 28
29 30 31 49 53 54 55 62 67 68 74
75 76 77 78 87 92 93 98 109 110
111 112 112* 114 115 125 126 127
139 140 141 142 153 154 156 159
160 161 162 202 203 204 216 224
248 256 257 259 260 262 263 268
274 286 288 294 296 297** 298
Fruit(s) of the life of a recluse 246 249
252***, (of the paths) 263 34, arahant – 275, lesser – 249, topmost – 239
246
Fruitfulness 156
Fruition 141 258 273**, – of deeds 3 4
10 28 40 51 52 54 75 109 126 136
146** 237 238 241 252***
Funeral pile 43 65 86, – pyre 100 167
168 169 170, – rites 78 80 168
Gandhabba 124 125 148 144 254 256
Garland(s) 11* 54 65 91 98 179 180
182 220 223, –ed 219 220
Gate-keeper 230
Generosity 9 10 48 62 114 115 126
127 174*, -ous 21 32
Gift(s) 10 22 27 28 53 74 78 85 86 88***
92 95 99 109 116 117 127 129 130
131 134 135 136 139 140 141 142
144*** 149 154 205 209 243 247 254
260 265** 276* 285 286 288, materials for the – 288
Giving 74 75 78 96 108 109 110 112
114 115 118, 123 126 130 132 133
134 135 136 137 141 151 165 185
206 236 241 243 256 259 260 280
281 283 286 297
Giving, master in the practice of 60 124
126 128 130 132
Glorious One, the 257
Goat(s) 86, – dung, pellets of 294
Go(ne) forth 8 36 57 58 80 113 114
153 168 172 173 182 184 189 242
Going astray, ways of 168 174* 174*
Goose, ruddy 161
Grass in 43 44 45 65 120 163 232 242 246
263, kusa- 193 195 261
Grassy 161 163
Gravel 193 195 294 295 296 297*
Great Lakes 158 165* 261
Great Masters 3 298
Great Renunciation 23
Greed 9 21 95 110 112 126 127 159
204** 212 268 284
Greedy 271 291
Green 163 167**
Grief 8 17 42 43 44 45 46*** 65 100 101
102 105 106 156 165 167 168 170
127 173 268 269 285
Grieve 45 102 103 105 172 285
Group of Five 24
INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

Lent 221
Lines (see also Precepts) 18 19 38 39 40
41 163 164 203 203 (lying) 220
220 (lying) 245 258
Life-span 11 78 139 146 146 147 147 219 221 224 263 (in hell)
Lightening 59 159
Loathsome objects 49, -ness of food 49
Lord of Devas 25 128 132
Lotus 25 77 79 81 161 162 192 193 195 198
222
Lotus ponds viii 25 77 81 108 159 161
162 163 193 197 198 199 230 284
285 286
Lovely friend 197 200 248
Loving kindness (see also Friendliness) 240
Lust 8 98 105 214 240 245
Madman 42 43 101 102 294 295
Mahāyāna 216 284
Makjens 219 220
Man of property 36 39 42 78 89 94 96
205 206 222 277 279 285 286
Māna-veṣa 262 266
Māndira 144
Mangoes 147 215 159 160 166 178
234 245, -fruit(s) 159 160 197 285,
-grown 160 166 285 286 287
-tree(s) 147 215 159
Mansion vii 47 50 51 54 56 153 154 159
161 197 198 199 200 219 282 285
286
Mantra(s) 103 104 123
Matted-hair ascetics 24 25 239
Matter 38 39 41 206 207
Mean 47 48 90 92 97 108 109 113 114
115 183 259
Meanness 129
Means, failure of the 123 139
Meat 179 202 203 204
Medicine(s) 76 82 82 93 103 195
206 207, -nal herbs 91 93 103
Meditation 256
Meditation 104 105, - of the great compassion 65 205,
-subject (kammā-pratthā) 46 63 69 105
Meditative 239 241
Merit vii 9 10 34 75 78 88 110 126
127 144 168 206 207 212 245
248 260 280 281 298, -field 3 8 12
22 135 142 146 201 224 239
265, -offering 8 9 10 11 13 13
24 28 75 78 94 99 109 110 117
129 130 132 133 136 138 139 182
184 211 212 260 271 272 280 281
288 292
Merritorious action 140, - deeds(s) lx 7 8
10 11 12 26 32 33 51 52 53 58 61
62 66 69 75 76 78 80 82 87 92 93
98 104 110 111 112 113 118 119
123 124 125 126 127 128 136 137
138 141 153 154 155 156 157 158
159 160 165 182 183 185 186 195
197 200 201 205 206 222 223 224
224 238 241 242 248 252 252 259
268 272 281 283 293 297
Merritorious ones 216, - service 141, - states 207 248
Merritorously 214
Middle path 134
Mindfulness 88 174 257 287
297, - of death 65 69
Miserly 47 48 108 109 113 243 256 257
259 277, -liness 48
Miserable (see also Existence) 52 233
243 246, - state 238
Miserly 17 39 41 47 61 62 66 68 73 74
82 90 100 109 111 115 121 126
156 159 167 182 183 184 185 189
195 202 203 211 212 214 215 216
217 218 222 223 229 233 236 237
238 240 242 243 248 256 257 260
262 269 273 274 275 280 281
287 288 289 290 291 292 296,
state of - 36 37 74 75 77 94 191
215 216 218
Moat 211 270 289
Moisture-borne 187
Monkeys 241
Moon 68 82 100 101 102 103 106
140 141 198, full 198 213
Moriyan (Maurian) 258 264 283
Mother-of-pearl 229
Mourn 21 44 66 67 68 167 170 171, -ing
ix 21 66 68 101 167
Mud 198 229 236, -dy 235 236
Mule 58 59 60
Music 79 165, fivefold instrumental - 217 218
Mustard fumigation 206 207, -oil 208
Nāga 60 283 284
Nahuta 274 275
Naked 36 40 47 52 57 73 74 75 77 84
85 89 90 91 94 107 108 113 114
179 181 190 191 192 194 196
INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

210 211 230 235 238 239 280, -ness
114 243 246
Natthika heresy 107 112 229 254 259 262
Needle 114 115 191, afflicted 190 191,
gone 191, throated 191, worker 126, eyes of – 191
Nikāya(s) 4
Nimba wood 231 232
Non-returner (anāgāmin) 8 134 194
113 148 149 252 265 268
Novice 57 58 59 61 63 84 189
Nymphs 56

Oath 36 38 40 41 158 159 163 164 202
Objection vii 104
Ocean 51 56 147 152 282 283, mighty – 51 56 147 152
Offering vii 11 87 88 89, sacrificial – 256 260
Oil 51 54 242 289, cake 51 54, mustard – 208
Omen, bad 271, stick of – 282
Omniscience 207
Onça-returner (sakadāgāmin) 8 13 14
194 113 148 149 252 265 268
Oppāṇika 187
Open-handed 257
Order 58 92 95, – of monks 23 25 87
88 95 101 113 151 181 194 197
205 213 245 248 265 269 289,
with the Buddha at its head 22 23 32
56 87 112 181 205 208 270f. 287
289
Ordination 11 57 190
Ox(en) 42 43 44 47 108 131, head of an – 235 236, skull of an – 229
Pacekkabuddha 78 80 84 152 153 157
189 273 275 276 276 295 296
297
Paddy 9 202 203 208
Palace 7 80 114 117 161 165 182 185
187 217
Pali viii x
Pali Text Society x xi
Palm tree 59
Palmra 107 108 112
Parched 107 131 150 211 212 268 269
280
Pāriccattaka 147 148
Pārijata 144
Parinibbāna 24 80 149 221 254 295
Path(s) 19 113 258 265 265 33, ariyan
141 148 191 296, fruits of the – 3
Pāṭimokkha 239
Pavāraṇā ceremony 24 33 142 (mahā-)
148 184
Peacock fans 182, – tail feathers 150
185
Perfections, ten 141 148
Perfectly Enlightened One 24
Peta-plane 27 28 30 31 33 35 62 85
86 108 223 271 272 276, – state
112 116 117, – womb 11 39 40 58 61
74 75 85 89 97 110 112 150 179
184 278 280 290, former – 20 21,
world of the – 37 41 49 56 74 86 90
92 97 98 108 115 190 194 211 212
213 277 278 280 295 296
Pigeon 51
Pilgrimage 147 216
Pinda 146
Pinnacled house 182 185 188 192 194
217 294
Pīsāca-demons 207
Piṭakas 4
Piṭa 35 146
Piṭihīl 185
Piṭūlīs 275
Pity 17 19 26 27 28 39 45 51 63 66 74
75 105 106 111 117 149 154 170
180 181 190 191 192 206 215
218 230 232 233 245 248 254 257 259 263, –
conducted with the – 29 38 111
258
Preta 35
Previous birth(s) 3 97 183 205, – existence
110 223 233, – life 48 66 183
214 232 233
Pride 93 189 270 291
Prostitutes 211
Psychic power 8 49 56 59 116 123 125
138 143 153 181 199 208 222 230
235 243 247 282
Pukkusas (refuse-clearers) 104 185
Pun in 50 291
Punishment 230, –ment 244 247
Pus 35 46 47 48 59 62 85 86
Puthujjana(s) 17 19
Putrid 16 18 19 36 40 41 191 222 223
Queen-consort 168 171

Rainy season 23 46 148 148, residence of the - 23 33 40 46 47

Rebirth vii 10 39 86 138 140 173 175 265 276 284

Recluse(s) 6 18 48 58 60 74 80 84 109 111 114 119 126 127 150 155 156 172 190 191 211 212 238 240 241 242 243 246 249 251 252 259 260 294

Recollecting the Buddha’s virtues 222

Recollections, the 49

Reed(s) 60 61 185

Refuge 32 52 62 63 79 86 91 93 109 182 183 211 212 245 246 257 258 280 281 292

Refuges, the 54 57 112 149 242 254 263

Related 233

Relations 28 29 273, blood - 29 30 232 233

Relative(s) vii 20 21 22 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31 32 36 38 41 58 66 67 68 74 82 83 91 92 93 99 102 103 106 114 115 149 153 155 156 168 179 186 189 190 192 193 231 232 233 276 283, peta - 24 26 28 29 188 273 276

Relics 80 221 222 223 224

Reptiles 207 210

Requisites 9 80 87 151 245 277, four - 17 47 88 195 247

Residual effect 14 273 295, -result 184 188

Retinue 19 139 160 165 185 186 219 224 238

Rice gravel 16 25 205 208 209 285 286

Right view 30 113 187 211 (mundane) 239

Rishi 80 104 105 108 168 169 170 175 273 274 275 276

Rites for the dead 285, funeral - 78 80 168

Robber(s) 6 7 57 159 284

Robe(s) 47 78 83 151 153 172 242 245

Royal regalia 79

Rubbish 89 92, -heap 192 194 205

Rūpavacara 12 147 148

Sacrifice vii 134 135 136 137 138 293, brahmānic - 146, fourfold - of everything 291, Great - 137 138, horse - 146, human - 146

Sacrificial act 137, - fire vii, - offering 256 260, - ritual 105 145

Sage 63 169 170 170 239 299, compassionate - x 77 193, great - 170 171 172 223 224, Sakyamuni - 257

Sāla Grove 222, -trees 221

Samsāra 9 66 67 171 172 175 248 256 262 266 272, -mokka 73 82 84, -sūddhi 82, -ric existence 261

Sandal 219 220, -wood 80 100 220 243 247 249

Sāṅgha 21 22 23 26 57 88 95 115 116 117 152 192 193 194 196 197 245 248 258 265 285, - of the four quaters 87 192 193 194

Sāṅghika 88 196

Sāntāna (Sāntānaka) 127 144

Śāvaka 19 52 57 58 64 80 (mahā), 112 113 143 218 263, -sāṅgha vii 146 205 265

Saviour of Great Compassion 3, - of the World 45 298

Sayān gātā 93

Scent 53 65 91 98 131 143 149 161 162 168 169 170 181 205 222 229, -sellers 131

Scoffers at the ariyans 257 263

Seed 9 10 13 99 139 140 141 142 147 262

Self, developed 104 105 140 141, tamed of - 273 275

Selfish 60 74 182 185 277, -ness 21 27 48 92 94 95 96 99 112 118 149 151 157 185 190 205 211 212 270 280 281 290

Senseless, feasting the 61, gratification of the 19 81 238, guarding the doors of the 14 169 239 257, losing one’s 106, pleasures of the 6 185 186 214 215 271

Sense sphere 140 147 148 148

Sensual desires 271, - pleasure(s) 61 164 165 274, what is - 214

Serpent 66

Sesame 211

Sesamum 51 52 54

Shame 51 174 294, -ful 92 94 96 181 183 191

Shaveling 189 205 211

Silence 157* 190, consent with/by - 20 23 25 149 181

Sinhalese x 11 264

Sixfold lore 104

Skeleton 159 163 216
INDEX OF WORDS AND SUBJECTS

Venison 66
Vihāra 16 23 25 43 58 59 73 85 88* 149 150 158 206 277 279 285 299
Vimāna vii 35**
Vimāna-devatā i 100 199
Vimānapeta 153 155 214 219 254 282 285
Vimānapetī 51 54 56 158 165 166* 197 200 201**
Vīra 138
Virtue 3 18 40 42* 48 55 62 66 74 96 98 105 106* 114 115 126 140 151 156 158 168 169 195 222 229 240 241 245 257 258 281 292
Virtuous 73 80 116 122 132 133 135 147** 158 184 209 229 267 292 298
Visible, making 25 168 181 192 194
Vision, deva-like 168
Vulture 207

Wail 25 62 165 268 270, -ing 100 168 169 170 255 258
Water lily(ies) 25 77 81 161 162 193 195 198 230 291 293
Water-pot 59 68 190 195 196* 197** 254 257 259 294
Wealthy merchant 3 6 8 20 22 24 107 108 109 119 126 127 130 143* 290 291
Weave(s) 46 47
Weep 21 44 45 66 67 68 105 165 167 169 170 172 271, -ing 8 20 21 22 26 32 44 66 68 100 168 268 271 272
Wheel-turning (monarch) (see also Cakka-vattā) 123 143**
Wicked character 233, -conduct 278, -deed(s) 7 8 9 15 16 17 37 38 39 41 54 55 59 61 62 74 84** 90 91 92 94 97 98 104 108 109 111 112 115 122 125 126 129 151 158 159 164 165 174* 181 189 190 197 203 205 211 212 213 214 215 218 221* 222 223 233 236 237 238 241 243 248 252** 254 257 260 262 263 274 276 277 278 280 292 295 297, -life 292, -mind 256, -states 105 190, -thought 209, -view 258 262 263
Wickedness 111 156 191 215 218
Widow 68 168
Wish 51 107** 132 135 150 151 155 157** 186 218 285, -granting hand 128, -granting tree (see also Kalpa-vīkṣa) 79 127 144** 185 285 286
Witness 230 241 242 243 244 247
Wives, of others 291 293, other men’s 270
Woe, a state of 272, states of 248
Woeful state 62
Womb-born 187**
World beyond vii 69** 170 256 260 271 288, -of men 37 59 63 69** 110 153 154 155 162 166** 170 203 209 237 268 270 278, -systems 139 140 148**
Worms 18 48 50* 202 203 204 222 223
Worthy of donations 28 29 99 115 116 130 132 133 136 139 140 141 142 180 239
Worthy man 121 122 127 135 246, Dhamma of the 121 123
Wrong-doer 274
Wrong view 29 30 47 58 73 119 187*** 229 240 247 254 256 257 259 260 263 264* 283
Yakkha 19 35*** 59 116 117 120 123 125 128 131 140 141 144** 152 206 207 234 235 239 240 243 244 246 247 248 253 258 263 264 265*** 283
Yojana(s) (leagues) 54 55 78 109 120 139 140 141 148*** 160 183 230 256 257 261 280 281
Zodiac 207
II. INDEX OF NAMES

Numbers refer to page irrespective of whether prose or verse; superscript numbers denote the footnote on the page specified; asterisk (*) denotes a (usually fanciful) etymology:

Abhidhamma 139 142
Abhidhamma Pitaka 4
Adam’s Peak 147**
Adinnapubbaka 100 100*
Aggideva 101 119
Agni vii
Agrawala, V. S. 142*
Ajñatassatru 114 116 117 222 224*
Ajita Kesakambalin 112* 264* 265*
Ajjuna 101 119
Aitken, A. S. 264*
Ambasakkhara 229 231 242 245 246
249 252**
Ambasakkhara Peta Story 291
Ambattha 104 106*'
Ambattha Sutta 106*'
Amogha, R. 146***
Āṇāna 5* 45* 101 147* 189
Ānathapindika 20
Andhakavinda 113 114 115 116
Ānā 34* 142*
Ānā-Magadha 24 34* 14
Ānāgalī 82*
Ānārasa 124 127* 129
Āṅguttara Nikāya 4
Ājīvānadevi 119
Ākura 101 118 119 120 121 123 124
125 128 130 131 132 133 134 136
137 138 139 140 141 145**
Ākura Peta Story 142
Anotatta 165* 262
Anulā 113
Anurādhapura 5* 12**
Anuruddha 84 87 138
Araniya Devas 220
Aruṇa 221*
Aruṇavati Viñhāra 73
Āsāṅha (Āsāṅha) 139 277***
Asayha 124 126 127 128 143**
mahā-
settithi 119, settithi 119 126 127 129
145**
Asia 142*
Asitañjana 118 119
Asoka 83* 264* 264' 283*
Avici 17 55 189 295

Badaratiīthta Viñhāra 229 229***
Bāhilika 142*
Baladeva 101 119
Bald-Headed Peta Story 75 111
Bamboo Grove 6 8 13 16 73 84 113 179
188 214 216' 217 219 267 269 289
294
Banyan 142*
Basham, A. L. 265**
Bennet 43 50 57 58 63* 65 78 84 113
114 159 160 179 180 181 188 197
294
Bhadda Kāpiṇī 80
Bhaggava 175***
Bhairava, 165*
Bheruna 119 124 125
Bhupal 264*
Bhūta 89 91 92 94
Binbisaṃ 24 26 27 86 88** 179 219
276*
Brahmā 104 105 139 147* 148**
166* 175** 297*, Great – 148**.
Sanamkumāra 201**
Brahmadatta 167 169 170 171 175***
Brahmākunda 33*'
Brahmāyoni 33**
Budun 174*'
Buddhadatta 152* 270*
Buddhaghoṣa 145* 187** 210**
Buddhavamsa 33*'
Burmab 56*'

Cakkavatī-Sīhanāda Suttanta 83**
143***
Calcutta 264*
Campā 142'
Candadeva 101 119
Cariyāpītaka 148***
Ceylon 5* 11* 147***
Chaddanta 165*
Chambal 174*
Chandajōtī Thera, Māpalegama x
Chaudhury, B. N. 142* 146*** 174'
Childers, R. 40* 50* 82* 86* 166**
204** 233** 266** 270* 276* 297*
INDEX OF NAMES

Citta (Citta) 138 146
Clarification of the Intrinsic Meaning (Pannatathavibhavaniya) 253
Colombo x
Conte, E. 297
Coomaraswamy, A. K. 112 143 165
Coral Text 139 140 147
Coumou, Lance xl
Culana 170 171, Brahmadatta 168
Culasepthi 113
Cūrañāsa Sakkayasutta 187
Congaphai 179 180

Dakkhina-Pañcāla 174
Dakkshinapatha 136
Dandaka 175
Darbhanga 289
Dasanana 107 108 109
Deathless 215 216 218 257 263
Deccan 146
Deer Park 63
Dehi 174
Devadatta 114
Devagabdhī 118
Dhammapāla 24

Dhammapāla vii ix ix 5 34 46 50 56 89 100 106 143 148 157 186 188 209 252 265 266 276 283 299
Dhammapāla (brahmī family) 65
Dhammaśoka 254 258 264
Dhammaśika 107 108 109 112, ka 107
Dhathasetha 20 21 143 181
Digambarī 4
Dighagāt 73 82
Dutt, S. 88
Dvāraka 102 120 124 128 130 131
Dvāraśaṅkh 101 102 119 120 128 131

Elucidation of the Intrinsic Meaning 177
100 267 298
Encyclopedia of Buddhism 252
Erakamdo 107 108 109

Feudalabad 174
Four Great Kings 20 21 123 143 144 147 265 283

Ganda 147 148, ūumba 139 147
Gandhara 142
Garages 50 146 150 151 159 160 179 181 197 264 289 295
Garuda 284
Gayā 33
Gayāśīla 24

Gehman, H. 5 39 42 45 46 56 63 69 106
157 166 168 187 187 196 196 209 214 221 251 251 252 265 270 273 273 276 287 293
Ghaṣa 105, Jātaka 142, pandita 101
102 103 104 105 106 119
Giribhaya 215 216 218 222 273 274
Godāvara 146
Gombrich, Richard xi
Gonda, J. 146
Gotama 15 24 29 30 46 83 218
Grand Trunk Road 142
Great Hell (Avīci) 55 189 233
Great Lakes 158f.
Great Sacrifice 137 138
Gujerat 264

Hardy, E. xi 83 89
Hardy, R. Spence 284
Hare, E. M. 252
Hastinapur 213
Hastināpurā 142
Hatthinipura 210 211 213
Healing Star 76 87 92 98
Hewavitarā, Simon x
Himālaya (Himālayas) 63 80 142
150 151 159 160 168 174 197
271
Hooghly 264
Hopkins, E. Washburn 221 284
Horner, I. B. xi 148 266

Indaka 138 139 140
India 56 84 142 146 147 165 188 299
Indian Antiquary 264
Indore 264
Indra 64 144 185 265
Iron Cauldron 231 291 292
Iron Cauldron Jātaka 293
Ispatana 57 59
Itakākāvati 73 82

Jainas 216 265
Jambudīpa 80 83 119 147
Janakapura 289
Jātaka Stories 11 65 82
Jayasena 23
Jayawickrama, Professor xi
Jeta Grove 20 42 49 56 57 65 89 97 99
100 107 142 200 208 210 229 270
273 277 279 280 282 290 291
INDEX OF NAMES

Jonah 284
Kakusandha 33
Kalakāñjaka 283
Kāleya 284
cKālinga 175
Kāmboja 120 142
Kamsabhoga 118
Kāśipuram 299
Kana 100 101 103
Kānkhāreva 150
Kānṇamunḍa 158 160 166
Kānṇamunḍa Peta Story 197
Kāṇyakubja 142
Kapila 174
Kapinaccean 240 241 251
Kāpiṣṭī 142
Kappina 84 87
Kappitaka 239 240 244 245 251
Kashmir 142
Kasi 53 65 75 87 92 98
Kāśipuru 23
Kāmṣa-Gandhāra 142
Kassapa (Buddha) 14 16 24 33 158 197
Kassapa (Mahā) 24
Kathāwa (Kathāwār) 264
Kaurava 213
Kausambi 142
Kern, H. 119
Kesa 101 102
Khanīpatīlo Bhikku 11
Kuddaka Nikīya 3 4 69 173 224 297
Kimbilā 158 163 164
Kittava 188 189 273 274 275
Kolita 87
Koliya 179 180 181 186
Konāgama 33
Konala(n) 22 113 174 270 290
Kosambi 149
Kṛṣṇa 142
Kūpala 165
Kūpili 188 189 190
Kuru(s) 174 210
Kusinārā 222
Kuvera (Kubera) 20 21 144 146 283 265

Lakkhana Suttanta 83
Lancaster xi, University of - 12 113
Lankā 264
Liccavīs(s) 229 231 233 241 242 243 244 245 246 289
Like a Field Peta Story 4

Madhurā (Mathura) 142
Madhya Pradesh 264
Madras 299
Madurai 142
Magadha 24 31 84 73 145
Mahābhārata 213
Mahadhanassājī 6
Mahā-Kaccayana 149
Mahākāma 118
Mahākappaṭita 249
Mahākassapa 80 222 224
Mahāmandhātu 104
Mahāmoggallāna 7 8 84 86 87 88 89 22 195 200 202 268 277 278 279 290
Mahāsāgara 118
Mahāvaiḍanovān 104
Mahā Unmaga Jāiaka 1 13
Mahāvastu 234
Mahāvihāra (Amrādhapura) 3 12 14 (Bamboo Grove) 8
Majjhima Nikīya 4
Makkhali-Gosāla 82 265
Malalaekera, G. P. 33 151 299 299
Mallas 222
Mallikā 291
Māna vadharmasūtra 106
Mandāki 165
Mandhātā 106
Mansion Stories vii 100 253 267, Commentary on the - 77
Māra 12 175 297
Mātañca 175
Mathurā 142 142
Matā 89 90 92 95 96
Mattakundalin 99 100 100 100
Mattakundalin Mansion Story 100
Māvarā 283
Māvratā 264
Mazzâfarpur 289
Mejhā 175
Meru 56 147
Metteyya 33
Milinda’s Questions 145
Minor Readings and Illustrator viii 5 33 34
Mithilā 289
Moggallāna 7 12 87 187
Moriya(s) 255 258

Nālandā 175
Nānamoli viii 201
Nanda 77 78 79 80 81 192
Nandā 97 98
Nandaka 254
Nandana 144 182 185 186 187 187 197 199 201
Nandasena 9798 99
Nandiya 267
Nandisara Tha, Mahagoda S. r x
Nirada 4 14 15 18 19 214 217 219 220
Nepal 165¹
Norman, K. R.xi
North Road 142⁷
North-West Frontier 142³
Paduma 80
Padumavat 88
Pajuna 101 129
Pañcāla 167 20 170 171 174¹
Pandukambaka Rock 139 140
Pāricchatkha 147¹⁸
Pasenadi 22 260
Pāṭaligāma 263⁹
Pāṭaliputta (Pāṭaliputra) 142³ 264* 282 283
Path of Purification 19* 49¹ 69³ 148*⁶ 201²
Pata 264* 283³
Perera, L. P. M.xi
Peta Stories 3 4 69 100 173 224 297 298 299
Pethavatthu 140²⁳
Phussa 23 33²
Pītāgalaka 258 264⁴
Piyakṣara 113⁹
Pothapāda 260 191
Putta 264* 283³
Purana 264* 264* 283³
Puraṇa Kāśyapa 265⁴
Purī Abode 268¹⁶
Purinatadha 170 215 256
Puṣkalavatī 382³
Rāhā-Azam 102³
Rahula, Wadutha 5⁴
Rājagaha 4 6 13 14 15 19 23 24 25 33¹¹ 73 84 86 114 115 214 215 216² 217 218 222 268 274 289³ 289 295
Rajgir 33¹¹
Rangoon x
Rathaθara 148¹ 197
Revata 151
Revath 267
Rewi Mansion Story 267
Rhys Davids, Mrs. 265¹¹
Rohinīyeva 102
Rudra 150 152³ 165⁸
Sākala 142³
Sakka 25 45 66 67 69* 106¹ 119 123 124 125 128 132 133 147¹³ 175* 180¹ 187² 201¹ 206 209 256 265²²
Sakya 47 58
Sālittaka Jātaka 297¹
Sāmaññaphala Sutta 25²²²
Samkiccha 57 58 59 63 63¹
Somuṇṭa Nikāya 4
Sāṇamkumāra, Brahmi 201¹⁸
Sankālia, Hasmukh D. 264⁶
Sankhassa 142
Sānu 195²⁴
Śānunāśin 188 190 191 276³, Mount – 189 190
Śānuvāsin Petra Story 273
Śāriputta 5¹¹ 35² 73 75 81 84 85 86 87 88 89³ 89³ 89² 107¹⁸
Sarnath 63³
Sasapandita Jātaka 106³
Saturn 195²⁴
Śāvatthi 20 36 40 42 4649 50 51 55 65 89 97 101 107 112 118 139 142 147¹² 152 153 158 165 167 197 200 202 204 249 270 271 277 280⁶ 282 283 284 286 288 289³ 290 291
Scotland 8³⁶
Separate Feelings, The 224⁷
ScriBio 210
Serissaka 253
Serissaka Mansion Story 253
Śīhapiṭha 165³
Śīhi 33³
Śīṅhā 79
Śīndhaka 132 133
Śīracu 140 147¹² 147¹³
Śīrcar, D. C. 142³
Śīrimi 23
Śīripāda 147¹²
Śīva 152¹ 165³
Śnake Jātaka 65
Sora 264⁴
Soraṭṭha, The 255 258 264
Squirrels’ Feeding Ground 6 13 16
Sonaka 133
Srughna 142³
Stories of the Departed 253⁴ 265¹² 265³ 266⁴
Stories of the Mansions 100³ 145⁷ 253⁴ 264¹¹ 265¹ 267¹
Sujāta (Buddha) 46¹⁴
Sujāta (householder’s son) 43 44 45 46¹⁴
Sujāta Jātaka 46¹⁴
Sulasā 7 8 11 12¹
Sunetta 189 273 275 276¹³ 295 296
Suraṭṭha (Surāṣṭra) 254 255 256 258 259 264⁴
Suryadeva 101 119
INDEX OF NAMES

Sūtrakṛtāṅga 265
Sutta Pāṭhaka 4
Suvaṃśabhūmi 51 282
Suyāma 123 148
Swon-leafed Forest 233 270

Takṣasīlā 142
Tāmālittī 264
Tamil 136 146 299
Tamil Nadu 142
Tāmāluk 264
Tāmālīpītī 142
Tapodā Park 33
Thirty 182 186
Thirty-three 56 78 119 128 132 136 137 138 139 140 142 147 147 147 156 186 187 187 206 270

Thread Peta Story 195
Thūpavamsa 33
Tissa Nāyaka Thēra, Sīri Dhammārāma
Tissā 89 90 92 93 94 95 96

Ubbari 167 168 169 170 171 172 173
Udana 149
Ujāna 264
Umbrella Tree 147
Upasāgara 118
Upatissa 87
Upavattana Sāla Grove 222
Unuveli 173
Uttara 149 151
Uttarā 254 257
Uttarādhyaṇa 174 175
Uttarakuru 80
Uttaramadhurā 118 142
Uttara-Pañcāla 174

Uttarāpatha 108 118 146
Vajjī 247
Vajjīl(s) 229 230 231 239 289
Vārānasi 142
Varunādeva 101 119
Vāsābha 179 180
Vāsava 209 210
Vasavattis 92 95 99
Vāsū 210
Vāsudeva 101 106 119 142
Vedas 146
Vejāyanta 182 187
Venus 82
Vesāli 229 230 231 235 239 242 246
Vessavaṇa 21 124 128 144 257
Vetaranī 233
Videha 288 289
Vimāṇavaththu vil
Vinaya Pīṭaka 4
Vindhya 142 264
Vījyā 47 202 254, -ṭavī 264
Vippatti 33 33
Virūhaka 20
Virūpakkha 20
Vissāka 24
Vīśnu 147 284
Vulture Peak 14 18 216 219 295

Walker, B. 144
Warder, A. K. 188
Woodward, F. L. 251

Yama 37 41 62 74 114 115 190 211 212 213 255 258 277 280 295
Yugandhara 139 147 147


agatigamanam 174
astikamitvā 186
anuggaho 209
antepure 88
andhakāram māpetvā 12
abhisamayā 13
asaśbhima 210
upadeva 146
ujāre devaloke 12
otadhī 82
kaṇṇavra 11
kamantakasāṅkhāte 50
lammattānam 49
kārīsa 270
koti 266
khāf 113
khuppipāsaḥato 276
cumīlika 152
doniyam 201
dhammakkhaṇḍha 5
naṭṭhika 112
niraye 15
nīla 167
paralokato 69
punḍarīka 166
bhāra 113
bhikkhu 276
manussesu manussabhūta 204
lakkha 266
saṃsāramocaka 82
sabbacatukkam-yānām 293
sārīsapa 210
sāvaka 113
sāvakaṇga 265
sīnehena 12
sotāpanna 12
### IV. LIST OF QUOTATIONS AND ALLUSIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Page 1</th>
<th>Page 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>D iii 58</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D iii 188</td>
<td>134</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M i 17</td>
<td>28</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S i 108</td>
<td>63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S ii 94</td>
<td>63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S ii 178 = iii 149 = 151 = v 226</td>
<td>172</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A v 269-271</td>
<td>29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dhp 125</td>
<td>122</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dhp 127 = Miln 150</td>
<td>111</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sn 98</td>
<td>27</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sn 577</td>
<td>285</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J i 155</td>
<td>101</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jåt 354</td>
<td>65</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanskrit Term</td>
<td>Page</td>
<td>Sanskrit Term</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td>----------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>accharitutoṣṭho</td>
<td>253²</td>
<td>namakkāraṁ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>acchariyatutoṣṭho</td>
<td>253²</td>
<td>paccittha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>anubalappadāyika</td>
<td>82²⁹</td>
<td>pājāpati</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>apaccchatta</td>
<td>276⁵</td>
<td>pātīghamsāma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>apaccchita</td>
<td>276⁴</td>
<td>pānaka</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aparāa</td>
<td>186¹</td>
<td>pāṇi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aparitutoṣṭho</td>
<td>253¹¹¹</td>
<td>bhāra</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alām</td>
<td>297⁷</td>
<td>santassito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ācchakī</td>
<td>251⁴⁸</td>
<td>sandassesi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ucchaddayāmi</td>
<td>267¹⁸</td>
<td>samuddittha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ucchadddehi</td>
<td>297⁶</td>
<td>sammānetvā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uḷāraṁ</td>
<td>276⁰</td>
<td>sallāratajagganam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kirti</td>
<td>221¹</td>
<td>surabhī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kopiṇām</td>
<td>96¹⁸</td>
<td>suhajjānam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>khala</td>
<td>204¹¹</td>
<td>sogandhiyā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tahim</td>
<td>201¹⁰</td>
<td>hīyo</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
VI. AMENDMENTS TO PED SUGGESTED IN THE NOTES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>13'</th>
<th>70'</th>
<th>82'</th>
<th>83'</th>
<th>166'</th>
<th>166'</th>
<th>186'</th>
<th>196'</th>
<th>201'</th>
<th>201'</th>
<th>204'</th>
<th>214'</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>249'</td>
<td>249'</td>
<td>249'</td>
<td>250'</td>
<td>251'</td>
<td>251'</td>
<td>265'</td>
<td>270'</td>
<td>287'</td>
<td>289'</td>
<td>298'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>